CS71/D26
(1996) Vol 3

Mass. + Maine Families in the Ancestry of
Walter Goodwin Davis

is not certain. Possibly the selectmen had questioned Pearce's title and the court, being appealed to, took this means of securing the property to his heirs. At any rate, on August 4, 1697, Micum McIntire and John Bracy, Pearce's sons-in-law, agreed to divide his personal and real property equally. As McIntire had paid bills beyond his half of the personalty Bracy was to make it up to him.* One-half of the Bass cove land "that I had of father Pierce" was left by Micum McIntire to his son Micum in his will, and the other half was in the hands of John Bracy's son William in 1701.† Possibly the joint grant to McIntire and William Bracy, made by the town in September, 1701, finally quieted the title.

Children: —

i. **Anne**; m. John Carmichael, a Scot, to whom her father deeded land in 1660;‡ Carmichael d. before 1677, when administration of his estate was granted to Micum McIntire who "was married to the widow's sister"; m. (2) John Bracy about 1677. (*See Bracy.*)

ii. **Dorothy**; m. (1) Alexander Mackaneer, probably before 1667 when her father was Mackaneer's bondsman after an encounter with another Scot, Alexander Maxwell; m. (2) Micum McIntire, who, in 1671 was living in a house at York "built by his Predecessor Alexander Machanere whose relict & widow he since married;* Dorothy Mackeyntire was presented for not frequenting public worship in 1673; McIntire made his will on April 17, 1700, and it was probated in October, 1705; among other property, he leaves to each of his three sons twenty acres on the other side of the river "of that land that I had from Micannire and my father Pierce," and to his son Micum "all the land at Bass Cove that I had of father Pierce."§

Children: —

1. *John McIntire.*
2. *Daniel McIntire.*
3. *Micum McIntire.*

---

* York Probate, I : 39.

† York Deeds, X : 81.

‡ York Deeds, II : 104.

§ The McIntire garrison house, still standing at Scotland in York, is probably the oldest building in Maine. It has been reverently preserved by Micum McIntire's descendants, to whom great credit is due.

This is the most accurate of the short Perkins
Genealogies The regular long Perkins Genealogy
is very full of errors.

This is the most accurate genealogy. Earlier ones
contain many errors!

PERKINS

It has been stated in print that "there is no reason to doubt" that the Perkins family descended from Pierre de Morlaix who flourished in the reign of Richard II and had a son called Henry Pierrekins, and a grandson John Perkins. As a matter of fact there is every reason to doubt it and surely nothing is offered that even remotely approaches proof. Perkins is of course a patronymic from Pierre or Pier with the addition of the diminutive *kin*, but there were doubtless many little Piers or Peters scattered about England, and of no kinship to each other, when surnames became common. The New England family is fortunate to be able to establish its origin in a substantial yeoman family of Hillmorton in the county of Warwick.

1. Thomas[1] Perkyns, of Hylmoreton, possibly born about 1475, made his will on April 3 and it was proved on April 21, 1528. He directed that he be buried in the church of St. John the Baptist before the Rood, and that his mortuary be as the custom and manner was. To the high altar, 8d. To the mother churches of Coventry and Lichfield, 4d. each. To the parish church of Hillmorton, 6s. 8d. To his wife Alice, all his lands and tenements in the towns of Fylds, Hillmorton and Lylborne (co. Northampton) as long as she continueth in widowhood. If she marry, Henry, his son, shall have the said lands and tenements, but if he die without lawful issue, they shall remain to Jone and Jelyan, his daughters, and their heirs. If they die without issue, the tail lands and tenements shall remain to the next heirs and the fee simple lands and tenements to the inhabitants of the town of Hillmorton for ever, to the best use that can be provided for the pleasure of God and for the health of his soul and all Christian souls. Residue to his wife Alice and Thomas Clerke, executors. Supervisors: George Sale and Richard Smith, to whom 40s. between them for their labors. Witnesses: Sir John Grendon, vicar of Hillmorton, Sir John Stookes, Sir Thomas Bolland, William Bayle, Richard Horne, John Cumpton, Roger Jones and others.*

The will of Alice Perkyns of Hillmorton, widow, was dated July 31 and proved October 15, 1538. She asked that she be buried in the church of St. John the Baptist. To Jeyn Sleyter, her daughter. To Juliana Cumpton, her daughter. To Henry Perkyns, her son and executor. Supervisors: John Stokys, clerk,

---

* Lichfield Registry.

Thomas Clerke, Richard Smyth. Witnesses: John Brendon, clerk, George Dobbe, William Freman, Thomas Dunkele, Richard Bassett.[*]

Children:

2. i. Henry.
ii. Joan; m. ——— Sleyter before 1538.
iii. Julian; m. (Thomas?) Cumpton before 1538.

2. Henry^2 Perkins (*Thomas*^{1}) was presumably born in Hillmorton about 1500. He made a will which is missing, but on June 16, 1546, it was proved by Simon Clare, Thomas Cumpton and Richard Balye, the executors, he being named as Henry Perkyns late of the parish of Hilmorton, deceased. It is stated in an abstract made in or before 1894 that "Thomas Perkyns, the son, is mentioned," but in a recent abstract this does not appear.[†]

Child:

3\.?i. Thomas.
?ii. William; mentioned in the will of his brother Thomas in 1588. A William Perkins was buried in Hillmorton on April 1, 1590.
?iii. Joan; administration on the estate of Joan Perkins, of Hillmorton, was granted to Thomas Perkins, her brother, on June 17, 1578.[‡]

3. Thomas^3 (*? Henry*^{2}, *Thomas*^{1}) was presumably born in Hillmorton about 1525. As he leaves a legacy in his will to his "brother Kebble's wife," his wife Alice may have been Alice Kebble, but there are, of course, other possibilities. Four Kebble wills of the period and locality have been abstracted without identifying her. Thomas Perkyns was buried at Hillmorton on March 23, 1591/2, and an Alice Perkyns, probably his widow, on August 20, 1613.[§]

The will of Thomas Perkyns the elder, of Hilmorton, was made September 15, 1588, and proved May 11, 1592. He asked to be buried in the parish church or churchyard, and gave for the relief of the poor of Hillmorton 10s. To every godchild, 6d. To his son John and his heirs male, his house, messuage or tenement in Hillmorton late in the tenure of Thomas Bassett, with an orchard, a close, one back-side of the tenement and one half-yard of arable land with meadows, pastures and commons thereto belonging, with successive remainders to his sons Edward and his heirs male, his son Luke and his heirs male and a final remainder to his own right heirs. To his eldest son Henry Perkyns, all the residue of his houses, lands, tenements and hereditaments. To Alice "now my wife," all his household stuff, furniture in the parlor or chamber where we used to lie (one coffer with his evidences excepted), and the use of the said chamber during widowhood. To his son William Perkyns, 10s. To his son Thomas Perkyns, 10s. To his son Edward Perkyns, £40 four years after his death. To his son Luke Perkyns, £40 six years after his death. To his son Isacke Perkyns, £40 ten years after his death. To every one of his sons' children, a ewe and a lamb. To his brother Kebble's wife, a ewe and a lamb. To Thomas Kebble, a lamb. To his brother William Perkyns, a ewe and a lamb. Residue to son Henry Perkyns, sole executor. Witnesses: Edward Tomson, Edward Heres, Thomas Bottre, Nicholas Duell, William Kebbell, Thomas Heres. The inventory was in the sum of £192 : 10 : 0, and was taken March 29, 1592, by Edward Compton, Richard Smyth and Thomas Garfield.[*]

Children:

4. i. Henry.
ii. John; m. Elizabeth Shaw, who was buried July 4, 1603. John Perkins, of Hillmorton, husbandman, made his will Dec. 17, 1601, and it was proved June 6, 1601/2 (*sic*). He leaves legacies to his wife Elizabeth, his executrix, to his son Edward, not of age; to his brother Harry Perkins; to his brother Thomas Perkins's daughter; to Joan Stormant, his servant; to Richard Bassett; to "my mother"; to Isaac Perkins son of his brother Thomas; to his brother Lewis [Luke] Perkins. Overseers; his brothers Thomas Perkins and Edward Shaw. The inventory amounted to £154: 14: 0.[†]

Elizabeth Perkins of Hillmorton, late wife of John Perkins, husbandman, made her will on June 29, 1603, and it was proved on Aug. 13, 1603, by Edward Shaw "the lawful uncle of Edward Perkins, the executor." She mentions her brother Edward Shaw, her mother Shawe, her brothers Henry and Thomas Shawe, her sisters Elnor Shawe, Mary Masters and Agnes Shawe, her goddaughter Elizabeth Shawe, her brother Henry Perkins and his three daughters, her sister Elizabeth Perkins, her servant Joan Sturman, her brother Isaac Perkins and his three daughters, her brother Thomas Perkins and his two daughters. Executor: her son Edward Perkins. Overseers: her brothers Edward Shawe and Henry Perkins.[‡]

On Nov. 24, 1603, Thomas Perkins was appointed administrator *c.t.a.* of the estate of John Perkins, late of Hillmorton, and tuition was provided for Edward Perkins, the son, a minor.[§]

---

[*] *Ibid.*
[†] *Ibid.*, Act Book 4. p. 44.
[‡] *Ibid.*, Act Book 7, p. 103.
[§] The Hillmorton parish register begins in 1564.

---

[*] Lichfield Registry.
[†] *Ibid.*
[‡] *Ibid.*
[§] *Ibid.*, Act Book 10, p. 124.

Children, baptized in Hillmorton:

1. *Thomas,* bapt. May 19, 1590; buried May 26, 1590.
2. *Edward,* bapt. Aug. 19, 1598; m. Oct. 6, 1616, Mary Watkin, her sister Marjorie and Henry Shawe being married the same day. The will of Edward Perkins the elder, of Hillmorton, was made June 12, 1657, and proved Dec. 1, 1658. His legatees were his wife Mary, his sons John and Edward (executor), and his daughters Mary, Susanna and Elizabeth. Overseer "cozon Thomas Perkins gent."[*]

iii. **William**; m. Elizabeth ———; he may be the William Perkins who was buried in Hillmorton on April 1, 1590, instead of his uncle William. Letters of administration on the estate of William Perkins of Hillmorton were granted to his widow Elizabeth on April 10, 1590. The inventory, in a total of £159, contains "wares at Rugby" where he seems to have been in business as a mercer.[†]

Children, baptized in Hillmorton:

1. *Margaret,* bapt. Oct. 30, 1586.
2. *John,* bapt. Nov. 4, 1587.

iv. **Thomas**; m. Mary Bate on Oct. 16, 1586; buried Dec. 7, 1629. In his will dated Dec. 1, 1629, proved June 17, 1630, he is called Thomas Perkins, senior, of Hillmorton, yeoman. He left to his eldest son, Isaac, his messuage and lands in Hillmorton and an inn there called The Bell, in the tenure of Henry Watts. To his wife Mary. To his second son Francis, but he must not take to wife Sara Tant of Hillmorton. To his third son, Edward. To his daughters Mary and Alice. To his cousins Thomas and John Perkins. To his brothers Luke and Isaac Perkins. Executors: his wife and his son Isaac. Witnesses: Thomas Perkins, Isaac Perkins.[‡]

Children, baptized in Hillmorton:

1. *Elizabeth,* bapt. Aug. 11, 1589; living in 1603.
2. *Agnes,* bapt. Feb. 13, 1591/2; buried July 14, 1619.
3. *Thomas,* bapt. June 7, 1594; buried May 19, 1597.
4. *Isaac,* bapt. March 18, 1597/8; living in 1629.
5. *William,* bapt. Dec. 19, 1600; buried March 15, 1619/20.
6. *Francis,* bapt. April 15, 1604; living in 1629.
7. *Edward,* bapt. April 5, 1607; living in 1629; possibly the Edward who married Alice Harding Sept. 14, 1637.
8. *Mary,* bapt. Nov. 18, 1610; living in 1629.
9. *Alice,* bapt. June 8, 1613; living in 1629.

v. **Edward**; m. Sara Smyth on July 22, 1605; buried at Hillmorton on August 18, 1619, intestate. Administration was granted to the widow Sarah Perkins of Hillmorton on Oct. 8, 1619, Richard Smith of Hillmorton, yeoman, being her bondsman. Tuition was provided for his children Judith, Francis, Alice, Edward and Isaac.[§]

---

[*] Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 643 Woolton.

[†] Lichfield Registry, Act Book 8, p. 29.

[‡] *Ibid.*

[§] *Ibid.*, Act Book 13, p. 26.

Children, baptized in Hillmorton:

1. *Elizabeth* (twin), bapt. July 6, 1606; buried July 22, 1606.
2. *Alice* (twin), bapt. July 6, 1606; d. young.
3. *Judith,* bapt. June 12, 1608; living in 1619.
4. *Francis,* bapt. Oct. 14, 1610; living in 1619, called *son* at baptism, but my *sister* in brother Edward's will.
5. *Alice,* bapt. Sept. 26, 1613; living in 1619.
6. *Edward,* bapt. Jan. 14, 1615/6; m. Sarah ———; d. before June 5, 1643, when the inventory of his estate was taken. His will, made May 31, 1643, was proved May 30, 1648. He left his house and land in Hillmorton to his wife Sarah until September 29 next, but, if she then be with child, to the child. Legacies to his sister Alice Perkins, his sister Judith, his sister Francess, his brother Francis Sarge. Executrix: wife Sarah. Overseers: Mr. Thomas Perkins, brother William Bromwich.[*]
7. *Isaac,* bapt. May 8, 1618; living in 1619.

vi. **Francis**, bapt. April 20, 1565; not living in 1588.

vii. **Luke**, bapt. Sept. 20, 1568. There seems to be no record means of deciding whether the Luke Perkins who was buried June 4, 1638, testate, was this Luke, son of Thomas, who would have been 70 years old, or Luke, son of Henry, the first Luke's nephew, who would have been 38 years old. Luke Perkins of Hillmorton, yeoman, signed this document on June 1 and it was proved June 28. He named his wife Margaret residuary legatee and executrix, and there are legacies to the poor and to his servants. Apparently he had no children. "My cozen Thomas Perkins" was overseer, and the inventory was taken by Thomas, John and Edward Perkins, all yeomen of Hillmorton.

viii. **Isaac**, bapt. Dec. 20, 1571; m. (1) about 1596 Alice ——— who was buried June 17, 1603; m. (2) an unknown wife; no burial record.

Children, baptized in Hillmorton:

1. *Sara,* bapt. Aug. 25, 1594.
2. *Marie,* bapt. Nov. 17, 1598; d. young.
3. *Elizabeth,* bapt. (Aug. 23?), 1600.
4. *Thomas,* bapt. March 21, 1601/2.
5. *Jacob,* bapt. March 23, 1605/6.
6. *Abigail,* bapt. Nov. 8, 1607.
7. *Isaac,* bapt. Jan. 26, 1611/2.
8. *Hanna,* bapt. Oct. 9, 1614.
9. *Lydia,* bapt. Jan. 1, 1617/8.
10. *Mary,* bapt. Sept. 16, 1621.

4. **Henry^4 Perkins** (*Thomas*^{3}, *? Henry*^{2}, *Thomas*^{1}), was probably born in Hillmorton about 1555. He married at Hillmorton on November 29, 1579, Elizabeth Sawbridge. He was buried there on March 11, 1608/9. His wife's burial is not recorded.

Letters of administration were granted on April 5, 1609, to his son Thomas, and a bond was given for the tuition of Margaret, Edward, Anne [Agnes], Sarah, Francis, William, Lucy [Luke], Elizabeth and James [Jacob], "the other children." Thus the son John, of age and married, is not mentioned. The inventory, dated March 22, 1608 [1609], was taken by Rowland Wilcox, gent., Thos. Perkins, John Sawbridge, Thos. Compton and William Burnam, yeomen. It was in the sum of £336 : 8 : 8.*

---

[*] *Ibid.*

The Sawbridge family originated in the hamlet of Sawbridge in the parish of Wolfhamcote, co. Warwick, which is about six miles from Hillmorton. Several Sawbridge wills exist but they throw scant light on Elizabeth Sawbridge's parentage. The will of Richard Sawbridge of Sawbridge, made in 1558 and proved in 1559, mentions his wife Elizabeth, his son Richard and his daughter Joan. Thomas Sawbridge of Hillmorton left a will, undated but apparently proved in 1586, which leaves his estate to his son William, William's children Thomas, Elizabeth, Helena, Lettice and John (the executor) and his godchildren and the poor of Hillmorton. Thomas' son William Sawbridge of Hillmorton made his will on November 3 and it was proved on November 30, 1593. There are legacies to his son Thomas, his daughter Lettice, his son John, his son-in-law Thomas Twigger and his daughter Ellen, and John is named executor. The fourth will is that of George Sawbridge of Hillmorton who was doubtless the brother of Elizabeth Perkins. It was made March 13, 1636, and proved October 21, 1637. The legatees are his wife Agnes, his mother Elizabeth, his sons William (executor), John, George, Thomas and Isaac, his daughters Agnes and Marie. His brothers Richard Turville and Edward Bassett are mentioned, and, with Turville, "cozen [nephew] Thomas Perkins" is named an overseer.†

Children of Henry Perkins, baptized in Hillmorton:

i. ALICE, bapt. March 17, 1580/1.
ii. THOMAS, bapt. July 24, 1582; m. Elizabeth ——, possibly his second wife; d. in 1658. The will of Thomas Perkins of Hillmorton, gentleman, was made Nov. 12, 1655, and proved Feb. 10, 1658(9). He left to his wife Elizabeth £10 and a joined bed in the chamber over the old parlor. To his son Francis, £10, and to Francis' son Francis, 30s. To his daughter Anne Hanslope, £5, and to all her sons and daughters 30s. each at age of 21. To his daughter Marie Bromich, £5, and to her sons and daughters 30s. each at age of 21. To the sons and daughters of his son Henry, such portions as his executors shall think fit to raise for them. Carts, plows, etc. to his grandson Thomas, heir of his son Henry, deceased, provided he

---

* *Ibid.*, Act Book 11, p. 73.

† Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 131 Goare.

help the executors to bring up his brothers and sisters. To the poor of Hillmorton, 20s. Residue to his sons Francis Perkins and Nicholas Hanslope, the executors. Overseer: Thomas Marriott, gentleman. Codicil, Oct. 1658: Thomas Perkins gave the £5 given to his daughter Anne Hanslope, who had died, to her children.*

Children:

1. *Anne,* bapt. Sept. 25, 1614; m. Nicholas Hanslope.
2. *Elizabeth,* bapt. March 9, 1616/7; buried March 28, 1622.
3. *Henry,* bapt. Dec. 5, 1619; d., leaving children, before Nov., 1655.
4. *Mary,* bapt. March 28, 1622; m. —— Bromwich.
5. *Francis,* bapt. (Nov.?) 7, 1624; living in 1655.

5. iii. JOHN, bapt. Dec. 23, 1583.
iv. FRANCIS, bapt. Nov. 1, 1585; buried Dec. 3, 1585.
v. FRANCIS, bapt. Sept. 18, 1586; buried Jan. 7, 1586/7.
vi. MARGARET, bapt. Nov. 9, 1588; living in 1608/9.
vii. EDWARD, bapt. Dec. 12, 1590; living in 1608/9.
viii. AGNES, bapt. Oct. 16, 1592; possibly the Agnes who m. Edmund Collyson June 29, 1618.
ix. SARA, bapt. Aug. 25, 1594; possibly m. Humphrey Edmunds April 4, 1624.
x. FRANCIS, bapt. Feb. 8, 1596/7; living in 1608/9.
xi. WILLIAM, bapt. Jan. 13, 1598/9; living in 1608/9.
xii. LUKE, bapt. Nov. 27, 1600; living in 1608/9.
xiii. ELIZABETH, bapt. Nov. 28, 1602; buried Dec. 25, 1602.
xiv. ELIZABETH, bapt. Oct. 4, 1604; living in 1608/9.
xv. JACOB, bapt. July 26, 1607; living in 1608/9.

5. JOHN^5 PERKINS (*Henry*^{4}, *Thomas*^{3}, ? *Henry*^{2}, *Thomas*^{1}) was baptized at Hillmorton, co. Warwick, December 23, 1583. He married there on October 9, 1608, Judith Gater, who survived him when he died in Ipswich, Massachusetts, between March 28 and September 26, 1654.

Judith Gater, daughter of Michael Gater, was baptized in Hillmorton on March 19, 1588/9. Michael Gater had married Isabel Baylie in Hillmorton on November 13, 1576, and Ann Gater who married Thomas Wright on July 29, 1600, was probably an older sister of Judith.

Hillmorton is about two miles from Rugby, near that point on the map where the three counties of Warwick, Northampton and Leicester come together. Some six miles to the north lies the parish of Cotesbach, co. Leicester, from where two sons of the parson, Henry Dillingham, emigrated to New England, their father probably having Puritan leanings, while at Claybrooke, in the same neighborhood, preached John Higginson who left England in 1629 and became the first minister of Salem's congregation. Possibly John Perkins came under the influence of one or the other of these nonconformist parsons.

---

* *Ibid.*, 53 Pell.

With five of their children John and Judith Perkins sailed from Bristol on December 1, 1630, on the *Lyon*, William Pierce, master, one of their fellow passengers being the famous Roger Williams. After a stormy voyage of sixty-seven days, during which one seaman was lost, the *Lyon* made land at Nantasket on February 5, 1630/1, and entered Boston harbor the next day, the provisions with which the ship was loaded saving the colony from rapidly approaching famine.

The Perkins family remained in Boston for over two years before joining the settlers who under the leadership of the younger John Winthrop went up the coast in 1633 to found a town at Agawam, soon to be named Ipswich. Having joined the Boston church, John was sworn Freeman on May 18, 1631, and in 1632 he served on a committee to fix a boundary between Roxbury and Dorchester. John Perkins was a man of forty-nine in 1632 and his son John was twenty-two, so it is probable that young John was the man named in the order of the General Court on April 3, 1632: "It was ordered that no person whatsoever shall shoot at fowl upon Pullen Point or Noodle's Island but that said places shall be reserved for John Perkins to take fowl with nets."*

In Ipswich Perkins had various land grants. In 1634 he was given 40 acres and, in 1635, 3 acres of upland and 10 acres of meadow lying toward the head of Chebacco creek, also a little island of about 50 acres called More's point on the south side of the town river. Also in 1635 he had 10 acres "on part whereof he hath built a house" and 6 acres of meadow and 6 acres of upland adjoining the house lot. In 1636 he was granted 40 acres at Chebacco which he sold to Thomas Howlett in 1637, and in 1639 planting ground of 6 acres on the south side of the river.

Besides holding town offices he was the Ipswich Representative in the General Court of Massachusetts Bay in 1636 and a grand juryman in 1641, 1648 and 1652. John Perkins, Sr., being "above 60 years of age" was freed from training in March, 1649/50.

John Perkins the elder made his will March 28, 1654, and it was proved on the following September 27. He divided his cattle, horses and sheep between his son John, John's two sons John and Abraham, his son Thomas and Thomas' son John, his daugh-

---

* *Records of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay*, I: 103.

ter Elizabeth Sargent and her children, his daughter Mary Bradbury and her children, his daughter Lydia Bennett and her children and his grandson Thomas Bradbury. To his son Jacob, his dwelling-house, the outhousing and all his lands and the improvements thereon, according to a former covenant, but after the death of his wife and not before. Residue to his dear wife Judith Perkins, the sole executrix. Witnesses: William Bartholomew, Thomas Harris. The inventory, mostly of real estate, was in the sum of £250: 5: 0.*

In 1637 there was an Isaac Perkins in Ipswich where he owned "land lying above the street called Brook street, six acres." He was dead before June 15, 1639, when his widow Alice Perkins sold the lot to Joseph Morse. It is tempting to believe that he was also of the Hillmorton stock. Our John Perkins did not have a brother Isaac, but he had an uncle Isaac only eleven years older than he, while other Isaacs were baptized in Hillmorton in 1597/8 and 1611/2. If Isaac Perkins of Ipswich was a man of middle age, which we have no means of knowing, he and Alice may have been the parents of Abraham and Isaac Perkins who turned up in Hampton, not far down the coast, where Abraham took the Freeman's Oath in 1640 and Isaac in 1642. These men are presumed to have been brothers. Abraham named a son Luke, not a common name, and our John Perkins of Hillmorton and Ipswich had an uncle Luke, a brother Luke, and a grandson Luke.

Children of John Perkins, all but the last baptized in Hillmorton:

i. John, bapt. Sept. 14, 1609; m. Elizabeth ——— who d. Sept. 27, 1684; he d. in Ipswich Dec. 14, 1686. He took the Freeman's Oath on May 19, 1633. It was probably he, not his father, who was ordered to carry up 40 turfs toward the building of the fort on Corn Hill or Fort Hill in Boston, as a punishment for drunkenness, on Oct. 1, 1633. His adventure with a force of Tarratine Indians in forty canoes, who were about to attack Agawam when there were only between twenty and thirty men, young and old, living in the settlement, is told in the family genealogy. In Dec., 1643, 3s. were due him, at 12d. a day, for service against Indians. He kept the first ordinary or inn in Ipswich, his license being renewed from year to year. In 1672 a new room in the house was called "the Kings arms" and the young bloods of the town raised a riot there in the evening after training day.† There are on record the usual land grants beginning in 1634. He was Quartermaster of the Ipswich company. At least 8 sons and 1 daughter.

ii. Elizabeth, bapt. March 25, 1611; m. William Sargent. They moved to Newbury, to Hampton, to Salisbury and finally to Amesbury where she died before Sept. 18, 1670, when he married widow

---

* *Probate Records of Essex County*, I: 190-191.

† *Records and Files*, V: 31-34.

Joanna (Pindor) Rowell. He died about 1674 and the widow Joanna married Richard Currier on Oct. 26, 1676.

iii. Mary, bapt. Sept. 3, 1615; m. about 1636 Capt. Thomas Bradbury of Salisbury, a prominent man in his town and county, serving as town clerk, schoolmaster, J.P. and Representative in the General Court 1651-1656. She was tried for witchcraft and convicted in 1692 but her execution was delayed and she was released when the delusion waned. Her husband and her clergyman testified for her, and 117 of her neighbors courageously signed a petition praising her character. Captain Bradbury died March 16, 1694/5, and she survived until Dec. 20, 1700. ✓

iv. Anne, bapt. Sept. 5, 1617; died young.

6. v. Thomas, bapt. April 28, 1622.

✓ ✓ vi. Jacob, bapt. July 12, 1624; m. (1) Elizabeth (said to be daughter of Matthew Whipple) who d. Feb. 12, 1685/6; m. (2) widow Damaris Robinson; d. Jan. 27, 1699/1700. He was sworn Freeman in ✓ 1660, was a sergeant in the Ipswich train-band, and a very frequent choice as juryman. Early in an August afternoon in 1668 Mehitable Brabrook, the sixteen-year-old servant of Elizabeth Perkins, her master and mistress having gone to the town, was alone in the house and was smoking a pipe. Going outside she climbed to the top of the oven which projected from the back of the house, "to looke if there were any hogs in the corn," and knocked out her pipe on the thatch at the eaves. This was the end of the house built by old John Perkins and left by him to his son Jacob. The efforts of the neighbors to save it were futile and it burned to the ground. Mehitable was convicted of extreme carelessness "if not wilfully burning the house," was severely whipped and ordered to pay £40 to her master.* By October a new house was being built. This house was struck by lightning on a Sunday in 1671 "while many people were gathered there to repeat (discuss?) the sermon, when he and many others were struck down." ✓ Jacob and the house survived, however. In 1693 he made an agreement with two of his sons for life support. After Jacob's death in 1699 his widow returned to Boston, where she had lived with her first husband Nathaniel Robinson, and survived until 1716.

vii. Lydia, bapt. June 3, 1632, in Boston; m. Henry Bennett of Ipswich who bought a 200-acre farm from Jonathan Wade in 1654; d. before May 20, 1685, when he m. widow Frances Burr who d. Jan. 12, 1707/8. One of Lydia Bennett's sons, John, was in Capt. Lathrop's Company, "the Flower of Essex," and was slain at Bloody Brook in 1675, about twenty years old. ✓

* 6. Thomas[6] Perkins (*John*[5]) was baptized in Hillmorton on April 28, 1622, and was nearly nine years old when he landed in Boston. He married, presumably in Ipswich, about 1643 ✓ Phebe Gould of New Meadows, a settlement, partly in Ipswich and partly in Salem, which was to become the town of Topsfield in 1650. He died in Topsfield on May 7, 1686, his wife Phebe surviving him.

Upon an alarm of an impending Indian attack, which proved false, Ipswich sent a few young men into the field to join others

---

* *Ibid.*, IV: 56-57.

✓ Our Averill line (Jacob)
* Our Dodge line (Thomas) which this follows

from neighboring towns, to put up a defense. They were gone only a few days, but in 1643 Thomas was paid 3s. for the service. After their marriage he and his wife settled at New Meadows on a farm of 150 acres given him by her father, Zacheus Gould.

Perkins was a useful citizen of Topsfield and particularly in church affairs. He was made a Freeman in 1664, was a grand juror in 1666 and 1667 and a selectman in 1668, 1676, and 1682. He became deacon in 1677 and was a tythingman that year and in 1678, when he haled Thomas Baker into court for laughing in church! He served on several committees to deal with the men of Rowley Village [Boxford] as to their privileges and responsibilities in the Topsfield church which they attended before organizing a church of their own. In 1680 he was a member of a committee seeking to secure Mr. Danforth as minister, but apparently they were unsuccessful for in 1681 Perkins and the others were ordered to "discourse" with Mr. Capen who came to an agreement with them and was a much loved and respected Topsfield parson for many years.

Thomas and Phebe Perkins were among the guests at a Sunday dinner at the house of an earlier parson, Mr. Gilbert, in 1670. Mr. Gilbert was a sick man, as good old Joanna Towne charitably realized (See page 112)** but others believed him to have drunk too much wine. The matter was aired in court and Phebe Perkins testified as follows: "there was a cup with wine in it which was offered to Mr. Gilbert. He refused to take it at first, but afterward put the cup to his mouth" but she did not know whether he drank or not. Three more had the cup beside himself and after he had dined he drank what was left in the cup. Immediately after dinner he sang a psalm and in reading it she thought his voice was lower than it used to be. As evidence of drunkenness this would seem to be negligible.

Phebe Perkins' sister-in-law, Sarah Gould, wife of Capt. John Gould, went farther, however. She testified that she and Phebe went into another room after dinner, where Phebe said "I wonder my Husban would ask him to drinke for I think hee had noe need of it. The first time hee toke the Cope I saw him drinke a good draft." In spite of his wife's testimony that Mr. Gilbert was a sick man, the court admonished him.*

Sarah Gould continued to gossip and Mr. Gilbert eventually sued her for slander. In court he asked the judges to "compare her [Sarah's] Oath with the Oath of Goodie Perkins, taken att the same tym, and if they do not clash one against another I am much mistaken." We heartily agree.*

---

* *Ibid.*, IV: 246.

**Page 500 in this volume.

Thomas Perkins's will was made December 11, 1685, and proved September 10, 1686. He directed that his wife live in his house with his two sons Thomas and Timothy, "if they can possibly agree, for I do think it will be best for them to carry on together." If not, and the two sons part, Thomas, Timothy and his son Elisha are to pay their mother £2 each per annum. To his wife, a bed and all the furniture thereto belonging, and half of the household stuff. To his sons Thomas, Elisha and Timothy and their heirs male, "all the farm I do live on." To son Zacheus, four acres of meadow out of the farm for his life, and, if he has a son or sons, the remainder to them. To his grandchild Thomas Perkins, son of his son John, the thirty-acre lot over the river or £30 "if he liveth till he marryeth or be of age." To his son Zacheus, the farm which he lives upon "which I had of my father Gould" provided he pay £60 to the executors, and if he will not pay he shall have but half of it. To his daughters' children, £40 to be divided equally. To his son Joseph Towne, sixteen acres of land at the northwest end of the long hill and £16. To his daughter Judith, £40, a bed and its furniture and a cow. After his mother's death his son Thomas shall have all the housing. If Thomas and Timothy cannot agree, Thomas shall pay to Timothy "3 parts out of 4 toward the building of Timothy an house of the same bigness of his brother Elisha's house." He makes gifts of cattle, horses, sheep and swine to his sons Timothy and Elisha, his wife, and Elisha's son Thomas. When Thomas and Timothy part, one-quarter of the income of the orchard shall go to Elisha. The farm implements to Thomas and Timothy, who are named executors. Witnesses: Samuel Howlett, Daniel Reddington.

Children:

i. John, b. about 1644; m. Nov. 28, 1666, Deborah Browning; d. May 19, 1668, administration being granted to his widow in June. Son *Thomas*, a legatee of his grandfather Perkins in 1685, was born Nov. 4, 1667.

✓ Towne ✓ ✗

ii. Phebe; m. about 1665 Joseph Towne.

iii. Zacheus; m. Rebecca ——— about 1704; d. Dec. 1, 1732.

Zacheus was the cause of what must have been great sorrow to his parents. To his credit must be placed the fact that he was a soldier under Capt. Joseph Gardiner of Salem in King Philip's war and took part in the Great Swamp Fight when the fortified village of the Narragansetts was destroyed, in 1676.

---

* *Ibid.*, VII: 368.

✓ We follow Phebe (Perkins) Towne

* See pages separately about Zacheus Perkins' Regiment in K-P war + a Page in a Maule genealogy. mjz

In 1680 he was in serious trouble indeed. According to his own confession, on an election day at Wenham he fell in with a Frenchman, one Nicholas Jennings (surely a much distorted version of a French name) whom he had known at Narragansett. Jennings invited him to go to Salem to drink and they rode over in the evening and tied their horses to a tree in an orchard. Jennings told Zacheus to remain there to look after the animals and went away, returning after two hours when they went to the shop of Mr. Thomas Maule. The door was open and Jennings went in and brought out a bundle of goods which he gave to Zacheus, then going in again he came out with a sack of goods which he laid on his horse. "Soon they parted as they heard the watch coming," Zacheus riding to Topsfield and Jennings to Marblehead.

This was not Zacheus's only offense. He had stolen a silver cup from Mr. Joseph Whiting, a gold ring from Goodman Robison of Topsfield, and goods and money from Mr. Batten. Found guilty at his trial on May 4, 1680, he was sentenced to be branded on the forehead with the letter B and publicly whipped, which was carried out on May 6 "immediately after lecture." He was to pay Mr. Maule £250 and Mr. Batten £24, which presumably his father had to assume.*

iv. Martha; m. Dec. 17, 1669, John Lamson of Ipswich; living in 1719 when her sister Mary made her will.

v. Mary; m. Oct. 27, 1671, William Howlett of Ipswich whom she survived; d. about 1728, *s.p.* (See page 56.) **

7. vi. Elisha.

vii. Thomas; m. June 1, 1683, Sarah Wallis; d. in 1722, his wife surviving. He was a weaver as well as a farmer in Topsfield. A member of the witchcraft jury in Salem in 1692, he and the other jurymen made a declaration of repentance for their part in the trials, in 1696. He made his will on July 5, 1720, and it was proved May 10, 1722. He left property to his wife Sarah and his three sons Thomas, Robert and Samuel. To his four daughters Sarah, Phebe, Hannah and Martha, £40 apiece, of which Phebe had already had £34, and Hannah and Martha "the greater part."†

The daughter Phebe Perkins had married Thomas Goodale on Nov. 10, 1713. He died before her father and she was appointed administratrix on Nov. 7, 1720, but when she accounted on March 15, 1729/30, she was Phebe Goodale *alias* How, having married Joseph How of Topsfield on April 2, 1729.‡

viii. Judith, b. Jan. 28, 1658(9); d. unmarried before 1719.

8. ix. Timothy, b. June 6, 1661.

7. Elisha⁷ Perkins (*Thomas*⁶, *John*⁵) was born in Topsfield about 1654. His first wife whom he married on February 23, 1680, was Katherine Towne who died on July 2, 1714. He married, secondly, on April 4, 1715, Elizabeth Towne, who was born Elizabeth Knight and was the widow of Samuel Towne, his first wife's uncle. He died on February 18, 1741, and his widow survived until May 17, 1752.

He served Topsfield in the usual minor offices, was a selectman in 1710, 1712, 1716 and 1724, and was a member of the Essex grand jury in 1708, 1709, 1715, 1718, 1721 and 1725.

---

* *Records and Files*, VII: 364.

† Essex Probate, 313: 454-456.

‡ *Ibid.*, 313: 208; 316: 183.

**Page 301 in Vol. II of this compilation.

He was a farmer and lived on a portion of his father's large holdings. He died intestate and there is no record of administration. To his sons, however, he made gifts of land. In 1720 he deeded to his son John 2 acres of land and an island, presumably in the Ipswich river, containing 2 acres of upland and meadow. In 1739 he conveyed to his three sons John, Jacob and Joseph, the lands which he had bought from Jacob, William and Samuel Towne in 1702/3. On May 3, 1742, John Perkins, house carpenter, and Jacob Perkins, husbandman, quitclaimed to Joseph Perkins one third of the farm possessed by their father Elisha Perkins, deceased, mentioning "our grandfather Thomas Perkins."* Presumably Thomas Perkins, the eldest son, had received his share when he removed to Maine.

Children, born in Topsfield:

i. Thomas, b. Oct. 15, 1681; of "Caporpus" when he m. on Nov. 26, 1719, Mary Wildes who d. in Arundel in Maine on April 1, 1742; he died there in 1761. As their first two children were born in Topsfield it seems that he did not settle permanently in Arundel until about 1723. On May 16, 1718, Joseph Leach of Manchester, for £110, sold to Thomas Perkins of Cape Porpoise 200 acres in Cape Porpoise "formerly John Barrett's . . . commonly called Barrett's place," and on June 24, 1719, Perkins and Andrew Brown bought for £10 from John Watson, Jabez Dorman and James Tyler 50 acres on Montague's Neck at Cape Porpoise.† Cape Porpoise became Arundel and is now Kennebunkport. About a year after Thomas Perkins bought his Arundel lands another Thomas Perkins from Greenland, N. H., settled there. Both men were very prominent in the community and it is difficult to assign their activities. Our man is said to have served as town clerk and clerk of the proprietors and was a deputy to the General Court, after which he was "Esquire," having previously been Ensign and Captain.

ii. Elisha, b. May 27, 1683; d. Dec. 24, 1704.

iii. John, b. Aug. 11, 1685; m. Sept. 10, 1713, Mary Esty; d. June 22, 1750, in Topsfield. She was probably the widow Mary Perkins, "a very aged pr'son" who d. Nov. 18, 1781.

iv. Katherine, b. Feb. 3, 1688; d., unmarried, on July 2, 1714.

v. Phebe, b. Aug. 10, 1690; m. Capt. John Wildes. (*See Wildes.*)

vi. Jacob, bapt. Nov. 13, 1692; m. Dec. 5, 1721, Hannah Borman; d. Nov. 18, 1758, in Topsfield, "an aged man" (66!). His widow m. Aug. 23, 1763, John Batchelder.

vii. Ruth, b. May 10, 1695; no further record.

viii. Mary, b. March 30, 1699; probably m. John Swain of Reading at Ipswich, recorded in Topsfield, Dec. 1, 1720.

ix. Joseph, b. May 10, 1702; m. Mercy Robinson at Salem on Nov. 30, 1727. She was dismissed from Topsfield church to Methuen on May 27, 1753.

---

* Essex Deeds, 39: 185; 78: 210; 95: 239.

† York Deeds, IX: 41, 209.

8. Timothy^7 Perkins (*Thomas*^{6}, *John*^{5}) was born in Topsfield on June 6, 1661. He married about 1688, Hannah —— who died November 14, 1690. She had been admitted to the church on June 1 of that year. He married secondly, about 1691, Abigail ——, who died before him. Timothy died on August 7, 1738, in Topsfield.

Perkins held only minor offices in Topsfield, as fence viewer in 1686/7, pound keeper in 1694/5, surveyor of highways in 1689/90, 1700/1, 1701/2 and 1715/6, and tythingman in 1708/9 and 1718/9. He was called Timothy *junior*, his senior being Timothy, born in 1658, son of the erstwhile parson, Mr. William Perkins, who was of no relation to our family. He was also a deacon in the Topsfield church and when common lands were divided in 1720 he was listed as "decon Timothy Perkins so called."

Timothy Perkins left no will and there is no record of the administration of his property. His children settled his estate by an interchange of deeds. On September 18, 1738, Timothy Perkins, jun., husbandman, Abigail Dwinell, Esther Perkins and Elizabeth Perkins, singlewoman, all of Topsfield, for £72: 11: 0, conveyed to Jonathan Perkins, mason, and John Perkins, jun., husbandman, all rights in the estate of their father, Mr. Timothy Perkins, Jonathan and John having paid the debts and funeral expenses, and also "in consideration of our having the liberty of improving and living in the Dwelling house where our said father last dwelt."* On the same day Timothy and Jonathan quitclaimed to John their rights in many specified pieces of their father's land (common rights excepted), and on November 9, 1738, Timothy and John executed a similar quitclaim to Jonathan.†

Children, by first wife:

i. Timothy, bapt. July 6, 1690; m. Ruth Dorman (born in 1686) whose father, Ephraim Dorman, in his will made in July, 1720, stated that she had married Timothy Perkins and was then dead, leaving a daughter Ruth to whom he left £10. The will of Timothy Perkins, Jr., of Topsfield, made Sept. 4, 1741, was proved May 11, 1752. He left his estate to his cousins [nephews] Stephen and Timothy Perkins, sons of his brother John, and named his friend Jacob Averill executor.‡

---

* Essex Deeds, 77: 165.

† *Ibid.*, 77: 164, 202.

‡ Essex Probate, 303: 442.

Children, baptized in Topsfield:

1. *Ruth*, bapt. Aug. 29, 1714; living in 1720 but d. before 1741.
2. *Jonathan*, bapt. Aug. 28, 1715; d. young.
3. *Timothy*, bapt. Sept. —, 1717; d. young.

ii. Hannah, bapt. July 6, 1690; died young.

By second wife:

9. iii. Jonathan, bapt. Jan. 29, 1692/3.
iv. Abigail, b. June 7, 1695; m. Dec. 11, 1716, Thomas Dwinell.
v. Hannah, b. Jan. 21, 1697/8; died before 1738.
vi. John, b. June 2, 1700; m. (1) Dorothy Wildes before April 2, 1724/5, when she was named in the will of her father Ephraim Wildes; m. (2) June 18, 1736, widow Martha (Perkins) Robinson who d. Aug. 16, 1736; m. (3) Feb. 14, 1737/8, Jemima Averill, who d. March 2, 1749; he d. Feb. 7, 1780, "in the 80th year of his age." His son by his first wife, Capt. Stephen Perkins, commanded a company in the Revolutionary army and was a Representative to the General Court of Massachusetts.
vii. Esther, b. July 22, 1703; "died in an instant by falling into a well" Oct. 3, 1748.
viii. Elizabeth, bapt. Jan. 7, 1709/10; d. unmarried Dec. 3, 1809, "aged 99 years, 10 months, 15 days."

9. Jonathan^8 Perkins (*Timothy*^{7}, *Thomas*^{6}, *John*^{5}) was baptized in Topsfield on January 29, 1692/3. He married Sarah Wildes on January 21, 1718/9. She was living on April 16, 1719, when Mary (Perkins) Howlett made her will, in which she is called "my cousin Sarah Wildes now Perkins," but died before Mrs. Howlett on January 21, 1719/20, aged 20 years, 9 months and 24 days. Jonathan married secondly, on December 11, 1722, Elizabeth Porter of Salem, who survived him and died in Topsfield on November 26, 1772, "an aged woman." Perkins was a mason by trade, and his death on June 25, 1749, was caused by his "falling from a chimney." He was elected Topsfield's constable in 1733/4, tythingman in 1732/3, and held other minor offices.

Jonathan Perkins seems to have lived on his father's farm, after the division of 1738. On November 15, 1738, he and his brother John conveyed to Dr. Richard Dexter of Topsfield between ten and eleven acres south of the Ipswich river, their wives Elizabeth and Jemima releasing dower, and on the following day Jonathan, mason, and his wife Elizabeth deeded to the doctor one acre of woodland.* Jonathan had bought three and a half acres in Topsfield from Daniel Reddington on July 11, 1738.†

Administration on the estate of Jonathan Perkins, late of

---

* *Ibid.*, 77: 218, 219.
† *Ibid.*, 77: 218.

Topsfield, intestate, was granted to his widow Elizabeth on July 17, 1749.* The inventory totalled £662, of which £530 was in real estate. From Elizabeth's account we learn that she had spent 26s. 5d. on "a suit of mourning." The court appointed a committee to divide the real estate and careful provision was made for the widow's dower. The remaining two-thirds of the land was found not to admit of division among the children, and it was decided to settle it on the eldest surviving son, David Perkins, he to pay to each of his brothers and sisters, Jonathan, Hannah, Judith, Abigail, Dudley, Philemon and Sarah, £21: 0: 8 and 3 farthings, the document being dated October 28, 1751, and allowed by the court on February 24, 1752.† It was not until after the death of their mother in 1772 that a final settlement was made by deed.

Children, by second wife:

i. Jonathan, b. Jan. 1, 1723/4; d. May 31, 1729.
ii. David, b. Dec. 26, 1725; m. March 10, 1752, Mercy Fiske of Wenham; d. April 21, 1803, aged 77, "a paralytic"; she d. Oct. 19, 1777. His sisters Hannah Wildes and Judith Perkins conveyed their interest in their father's estate to him on April 30, 1751.‡
iii. Hannah, b. Jan. 16, 1727/8; m. Feb. 5, 1750/1, Amos Wildes of Topsfield. Her conveyance to her brother David is noted above. (*See Wildes.*)
iv. Jonathan, b. March 3, 1730; in 1773 his wife was named Mary, probably Mary Trask who married Jonathan Perkins of Wenham in Beverly on Feb. 7, 1754. On March 9, 1750(1), Jonathan Perkins of Topsfield, husbandman, for £28, released to David Perkins of Topsfield, cordwainer, 2/3 of 1/9 of the estate of their father, Jonathan Perkins, late of Topsfield.§ Jonathan Perkins of Beverly, cordwainer, Philemon Perkins of Ipswich, tailor, Joseph Cummings, Jr., of Ipswich, yeoman, and wife Judith, and Samuel Fisk of Topsfield, yeoman, and wife Sarah for £64, conveyed to David Perkins their shares in their father's estate, including the house, barn and barnyard set off to their mother Elizabeth Perkins, deceased, and their interest in an orchard on the land of John and Stephen Perkins, on Feb. 3, 1773. Mary Perkins and Abigail Perkins released dower.‖ No death records of Jonathan and Mary Perkins are in Beverly.
v. Judith, b. (Judah in record) June 21, 1732; m. March 21, 1758, Joseph Cummings, Jr., of Ipswich. Her conveyances are entered above.
vi. Abigail, b. Dec. 20, 1734; m. July 14, 1752, Joseph Edwards, Jr., who "died in ye war" in 1757. No conveyance to her brother David is found.
vii. Dudley, b. Sept. 8, 1737; "died in ye war" in 1758.
viii. Philemon, b. June 8, 1740; m. Dec. 14, 1769, Abigail Foster. Caleb

---

* Essex Probate, 328: 591.
† *Ibid.*, 330: 145, 320.
‡ Essex Deeds, 107: 33, 34.
§ *Ibid.*, 108: 32.
‖ *Ibid.*, 145: 85.

1692+3 this chart same as 3876+7 Dodge Ancestors D7@

PEDIGREE CHART

Averill Ancestors

Name of Compiler Norma (Hansen) Zaniewski
Address 8924 W Plainfield
City, State Greenfield WI 53228
Date 9 Oct 1991

Person No. 1 on this chart is the same person as No. 423 on chart No. A2.

Chart No. A 8 10a

b. Date of Birth
p.b. Place of Birth
m. Date of Marriage
d. Date of Death
p.d. Place of Death

(11) (1692) 4 "Sarge" John Perkins "Lion" 1630 Boston (★)
b. 1583 (Father of No. 2)
p.b. Newent, Gloucestershire, England
m. 9 Oct 1608
p.m. Hillmorton, Warwick "
d. 26 Sep 1654 - will proved
p.d. Ipswich, Essex, MA

(10) (846) 2 Jacob Perkins
b. 29 Jan 1624 (Father of No. 1)
p.b. Gloucestershire, Eng.
m. ① ca 1648
p.m. Ipswich, Essex, MA
d. 27 Jan 1699/1700
p.d. Ipswich.

(1693) 5 Judith Gates (Mother of No. 2)
b. 15
p.b. Hillmorton, Warwickshire Eng
d. ca 1669
p.d. Topsfield ? MA

Fraternal

(9) (423) 1 Judith Perkins
b. 11 July 1655
p.b. Ipswich, Essex MA
m. 16 Dec 1673
p.m. Ipswich
d. will - 9 Mar 1741
p.d. Wenham, Essex, MA

Maternal

(1694) 6 Matthew Whipple Ipswich 1635 (★)
b. ca 1594 (Father of No. 3)
p.b. Bodsing, Buckinghamshire Eng
m. ① 7 May 1622
p.m. Bucks. "
d. 1647
p.d. Ipswich, Essex MA

(847) 3 Elizabeth Whipple (Mother of No. 1)
b. ca 1629
p.b. Bodsing ? Bucks, Eng.
d. 17 Feb 1686
p.d. Ipswich

(1695) 7 Anna Hawkins (Mother of No. 3)
b. ca 1600
p.b. Buckingham Eng.
d. ca 1643, Ipswich

(422) see right (Spouse of No. 1)
(occupation - "sope biler")
b.
p.b.
d.
p.d.

(12) (3384) 8 Henry Perkins (Father of No. 4)
b. 15
p.b.
m.
p.m.
d.
p.d. Hillmorton, Warwick, Eng.

(3385) 9 Elizabeth Sawbridge (Mother of No. 4)
b. 15
p.b.
d.
p.d.

(3386) 10 Michael Gates (Father of No. 5)
b.
p.b.
m.
p.m.
d.
p.d.

(3387) 11 (Mother of No. 5)
b.
p.b.
d.
p.d.

(3388) 12 Matthew Whipple (Father of No. 6)
b. ca 15 (60)
p.b.
m.
p.m.
d. (~~[illegible]~~ buried 16) Jan 1618
p.d. Bodsing, Buckingham, Eng.

13 (Mother of No. 6)
b.
p.b.
d.
p.d.

14 John Hawkins (Father of No. 7)
b. 15__
p.b.
m. ② 15__ Mary Levitt ?
p.m.
d. 1619
p.d. Bocking (near Braintree, Essex, England)

(9) 15 → Nathaniel Brown (Mother of No. 7)
b. ca 1652
p.b. Ipswich, Essex, MA
d. before 17 June 1717
p.d. Ipswich

(13) (6798) 16 (? George) Perkins
b. 15 (Father of No. 8, Cont. on chart No. ____)
m. of Abbotts Sefford, Warwick, Eng
d.

(6799) 17 ? Elizabeth
b. 15 (Mother of No. 8, Cont. on chart No. ____)
d.

(6800) 18 Sawbridge
b. (Father of No. 9, Cont. on chart No. ____)
m.
d.

(6801) 19
b. (Mother of No. 9, Cont. on chart No. ____)
d.

20 Gates
b. (Father of No. 10, Cont. on chart No. ____)
m.
d.

21
b. (Mother of No. 10, Cont. on chart No. ____)
d.

22
b. (Father of No. 11, Cont. on chart No. ____)
m.
d.

23
b. (Mother of No. 11, Cont. on chart No. ____)
d.

24 Whipple
b. (Father of No. 12, Cont. on chart No. ____)
m.
d.

25
b. (Mother of No. 12, Cont. on chart No. ____)
d.

26
b. (Father of No. 13, Cont. on chart No. ____)
m.
d.

27
b. (Mother of No. 13, Cont. on chart No. ____)
d.

28 John Hawkins
b. (Father of No. 14, Cont. on chart No. ____)
m.
d.

29
b. (Mother of No. 14, Cont. on chart No. ____)
d.

(10) (844) 30 John Brown bef. 1640 Ipswich (★)
b. ca 1608 (Father of No. 15, Cont. on chart No. ____)
m. ② Wapping. m ca 1640 Ipswich
d. 13 Sep 1677 "

(845) 31 Mary ?
b. (Mother of No. 15, Cont. on chart No. ____)
d.

CHART No. 1 MILWAUKEE COUNTY GENEA[illegible]OGICAL SOCIETY Rev. 1985

PEDIGREE CHART

Person No. 1 on this chart is the same person as No. ___ on chart No. ___

Chart No. [illegible]

Name of Compiler: Norma [illegible]

Address: [illegible]

City, State: [illegible]

Date: 7 Oct 1971

1 John Perkins [illegible]
b. 1593
p.b. [illegible], Northamptonshire, England
m. [illegible] 1618
p.m. [illegible]
d. 26 Sep 1654
p.d. Ipswich, Essex, MA

Jacob Perkins
b. [illegible] 1624
p.b. [illegible], Eng.
m. [illegible] 1648
p.m. Ipswich, Essex, MA
d. 27 Jan [illegible]
p.d. Ipswich

Elizabeth [illegible]
b. [illegible]
p.b. [illegible], Eng.
m. [illegible] 1619
p.d. [illegible], MA

Judith [illegible]
b. [illegible] 1625
p.b. Ipswich, Essex, MA
m. [illegible] 1673
p.m. Ipswich
d. [illegible]
p.d. [illegible], Essex, MA

Matthew Whipple [illegible]
b. [illegible] 1590
p.b. Bocking, [illegible], Eng.
m. [illegible]
d. 1647
p.d. Ipswich, Essex, MA

Elizabeth Whipple
b. [illegible] 1619
p.b. [illegible], Eng.
m. [illegible] 1646
p.m. Ipswich

Anne Hawkins
b. [illegible] 1600
p.b. [illegible], Eng.
d. [illegible], [illegible]

Henry Perkins
b. [illegible]

Elizabeth [illegible]

Michael [illegible]

Matthew Whipple
p.d. Bocking, [illegible], Eng.

[illegible] Hawkins

Joanne Whipple

John Brown [illegible]
b. [illegible]
p.b. [illegible], Eng.
d. 13 Jan [illegible]

Mary [illegible]

See [illegible]

This page as ~~claimed by Perkins Genealogy~~ (Needs Proof)   Averill Ancestors

PEDIGREE CHART

Norma (Hanson) Zanrowski
Name of Compiler
Address 8924 W Plainfield
City, State Greenfield WI 53228
Date 16 July 1992

Person No. 1 on this chart is the same person as No. 6768 on chart No. A @ (16)

Chart No. A10 (6)

b. Date of Birth
p.b. Place of Birth
m. Date of Marriage
d. Date of Death
p.d. Place of Death

(6768) (13) 1 Thomas Perkins
b. 15
p.b.
m.
p.m.
d. 1592
p.d. Heilmaton, Warwickshire, England

(13,536) (14) 2 Henry Perkins (Father of No. 1)
b.
p.b. Hillmorton, Warwickshire (near Rugby)
m.
p.m.
d. 1547
p.d.

(13,537) 3 (Mother of No. 1)
b.
p.b.
d.
p.d.

(27,072) (15) 4 Thomas Perkins (Father of No. 2)
b. 14
p.b.
m.
p.m.
d. 1528
p.d. of Hillmorton, Warwickshire, England

(27,073) 5 Alys (de Astley)? (Mother of No. 2)
b.
p.b. Hellmorton
d. 1538
p.d.

6 (Father of No. 3)
b.
p.b.
m.
p.m.
d.
p.d.

7 (Mother of No. 3)
b.
p.b.
d.
p.d.

(54,144) (16) 8 William Perkins (Father of No. 4)
b. 14
p.b.
m.
p.m.
d. living 1495
p.d. of Madresfield & Nottinghamshire

9
b.
p.b.
d.
p.d.

10 Thomas de Astley
b.
p.b.
m.
p.m. Hellmorton
d.
p.d.

11
b.
p.b.
d.
p.d.

12
b.
p.b.
m.
p.m.
d.
p.d.

13
b.
p.b.
d.
p.d.

14 (Father of No. 7)
b.
p.b.
m.
p.m.
d.
p.d.

15 (Mother of No. 7)
b.
p.b.
d.
p.d.

(108,288) (17) 16 Thomas Perkins (Father of No. 8, Cont. on chart No.)
b. 14
m.
d. 1478

b.
d.

(216,576) William Perkins (18)
b. 13
m. living 1411 - 1447
d. "Baille (agent) to Humphrey, Duke of Glouc."

(216,577) Margaret
b.
d.

(433,152) John Perkins (19)
b. 13
m. "Seneschal to Thomas, Duke of Gloucester
d. living 1400

b.
d.

(866,304) Henry Perkins (20)
b. 13
m.
d.

(Mother of No. 11, Cont. on chart No.)
b.
d.

21st generation

(1,732,608) Peter Mosley alias Perkins
b. 13 (Morlaix)
m. living 1381
d. Sergeant to Hugh de Spenser of Shipton Manor, Oxfordshire during the reign of Richard II

(this means he was a steward of the court)

(1,733,609) Agnes Taylor (Mother of No.)
b. 13
d.

28 (Father of No. 14, Cont. on chart No.)
b.
m.
d.

29 (Mother of No. 14, Cont. on chart No.)
b.
d.

30 (Father of No. 15, Cont. on chart No.)
b.
m.
d.

31 (Mother of No. 15, Cont. on chart No.)
b.
d.

Fraternal
Maternal

(6769) Alice Kebble (Spouse of No. 1)
b. 15
p.b.
d. ca 1600?
p.d. Hillmorton ?

MILWAUKEE COUNTY GEN ICAL SOCIETY   Rev. 1985

CHART No. 1

Family Record

(Averill Ancestors - Jacob)
(Dodge Ancestors - Thomas)

Family No.

Perkins
Surname

sailed 1 Dec 1630
arrived 6 Feb 1631 - ship "Lion" with Roger Williams to Boston

Father - "Sarge" John PERKINS

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth bp	23	Dec	1583	Hillmorton	Warwickshire	England	To Ipswich with John Winthrop Jr	○
Death	26	Sep	1654	Ipswich	Essex	Mass. Bay Colony		○
Buried								○
Married	9	Oct	1608	Hillmorton,	Warwick	England		○

Occupation farmer, deputy, Rep to Gen. Ct 1636 Military Sgt - 1631 was with Tarrantines Church Puritan ○

Places Lived owner of Perkins Island ○

Other Wives ○

His Father's Name Henry Perkins ○

His Mother's Maiden Name Elizabeth Sawbridge ○

Mother - Judith GATER

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		ca	1590	Hillmorton	Warwick	England	(Sister?) Ann Gater, m. 29 Jul 160 Thomas Wright	○
Death	after		1654	Ipswich		Mass Bay Colony		○
Buried								○

Occupation Military Church ○

Places Lived ○

Other Husbands ○

Her Father's Name Michael Gater, (m. 13 Nov. 1576) ○

Her Mother's Maiden Name Isabell Baylie ○

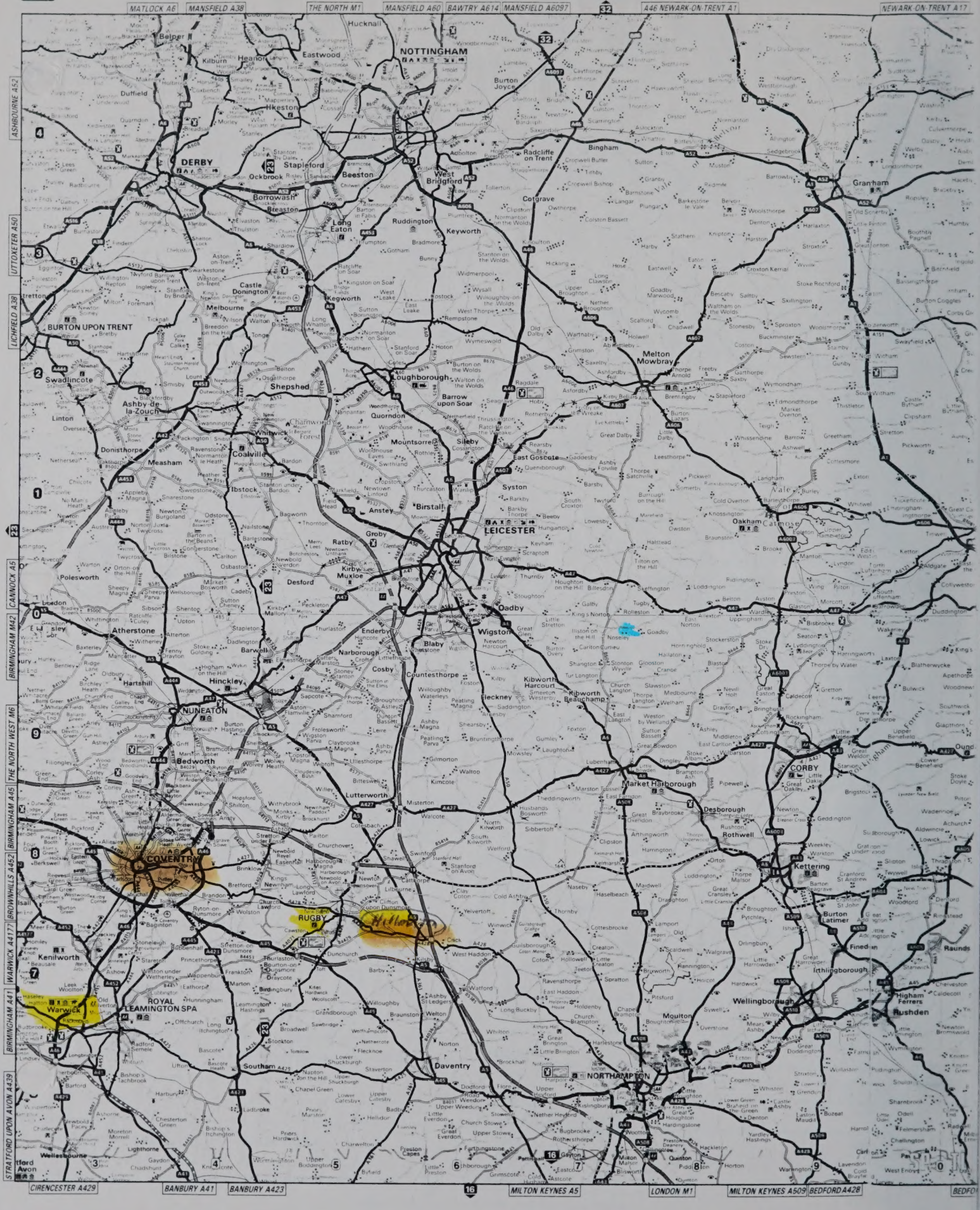
Children

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
	1. Quartermaster John Perkins Innkeeper ○	Birth bp	14	Sep	1609	Hillmorton		England	○
		Death	14	Dec	1686	Ipswich			○
	Spouse - Elizabeth (?Westley?) Newent (-27 Sep 1684) ○	Married		ca	1635	"			○
	2. Elizabeth Perkins (second of 3 wives) ○	Birth bp	25	Mar	1611	Hillmorton			○
		Death	before	Sep	1670	Amesbury			○
	Spouse - William Sargent (-1679) ○	Married		ca	1636	Ipswich ?			○
	3. Mary Perkins convicted of witchcraft late in year - but delusion soon ended ○	Birth bp	3	Sep	1615	Hillmorton			○
		Death	20	Dec	1700	Salisbury			○
	Spouse - Capt Thomas Bradbury (- Mar 1695) Prominent man - tried to help wife (bp 25 Feb 1611 Wicken-Bonhunt, Essex Eng) ○	Married		ca	1636	Ipswich ?			○
	4. Anne Perkins ○	Birth bp	5	Sep	1617	Hillmorton			○
		Death							○
	Spouse - died young ○	Married							○
Dodge Anc.	5. (Deacon) Thomas Perkins ○	Birth bp	28	Apr	1622	Hillmorton			○
		Death	7	May	1686				○
	Spouse - Phebe Gould (1620-1680+) ○	Married		ca	1643	"New Meadows" (Topsfield)			○
Averill Anc	6. (Sgt) Jacob Perkins ○	Birth bp	12	July	1624	Hillmorton			○
		Death			1699				○
	Spouse - ① Elizabeth Whipple (-1686) ② Damaris (widow) Robinson (-Jan 1700) ○	Married	① ②						○
	7. Lydia Perkins a son John Bennett age 20 was slain at "Bloody Brook" in 1675 by Indians ○	Birth bp	3	June	1632	Boston		Mass Bay Colony	○
		Death	bef	May	1685	Ipswich			○
	Spouse - Henry Bennett (- 17) (m/2 widow Burr 20 May 1685) ○	Married		ca	1654?	"			○
	8. ○	Birth							○
		Death							○
	Spouse - ○	Married							○
	9. ○	Birth							○
		Death							○
	Spouse - ○	Married							○
	10. ○	Birth							○
		Death							○
	Spouse - ○	Married							○

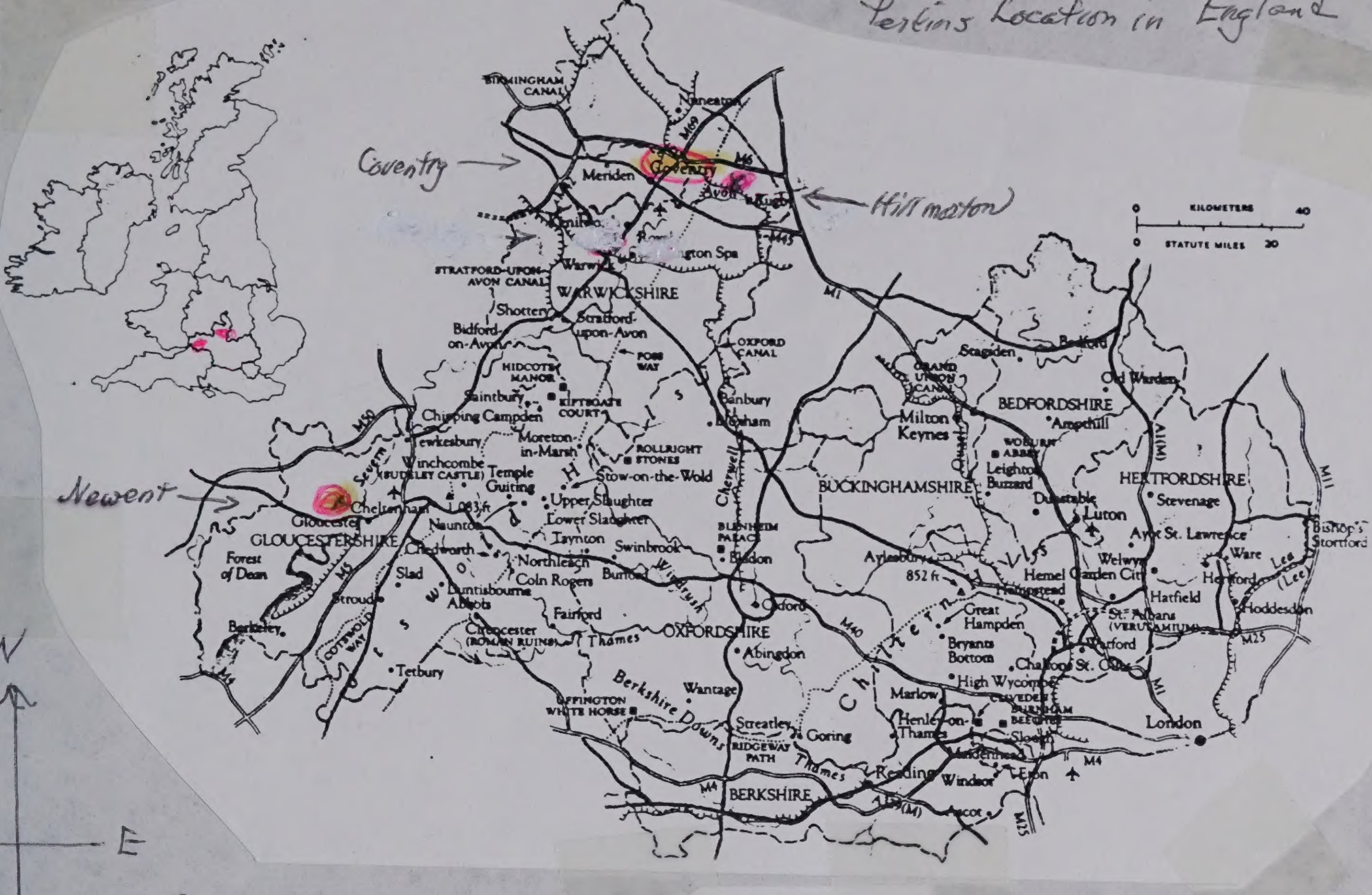
In the circles, identify by number your sources of information — then list each on the reverse side. ○

☐ Additional children listed on the reverse side.

John & Judith (Gefer) Perkins lived in Hillmorton, Warwickshire, East of Rugby (as did their parents).
A son-in-law (according to the genealogy) was from Coventry, just to the West.



Perkins Location in England

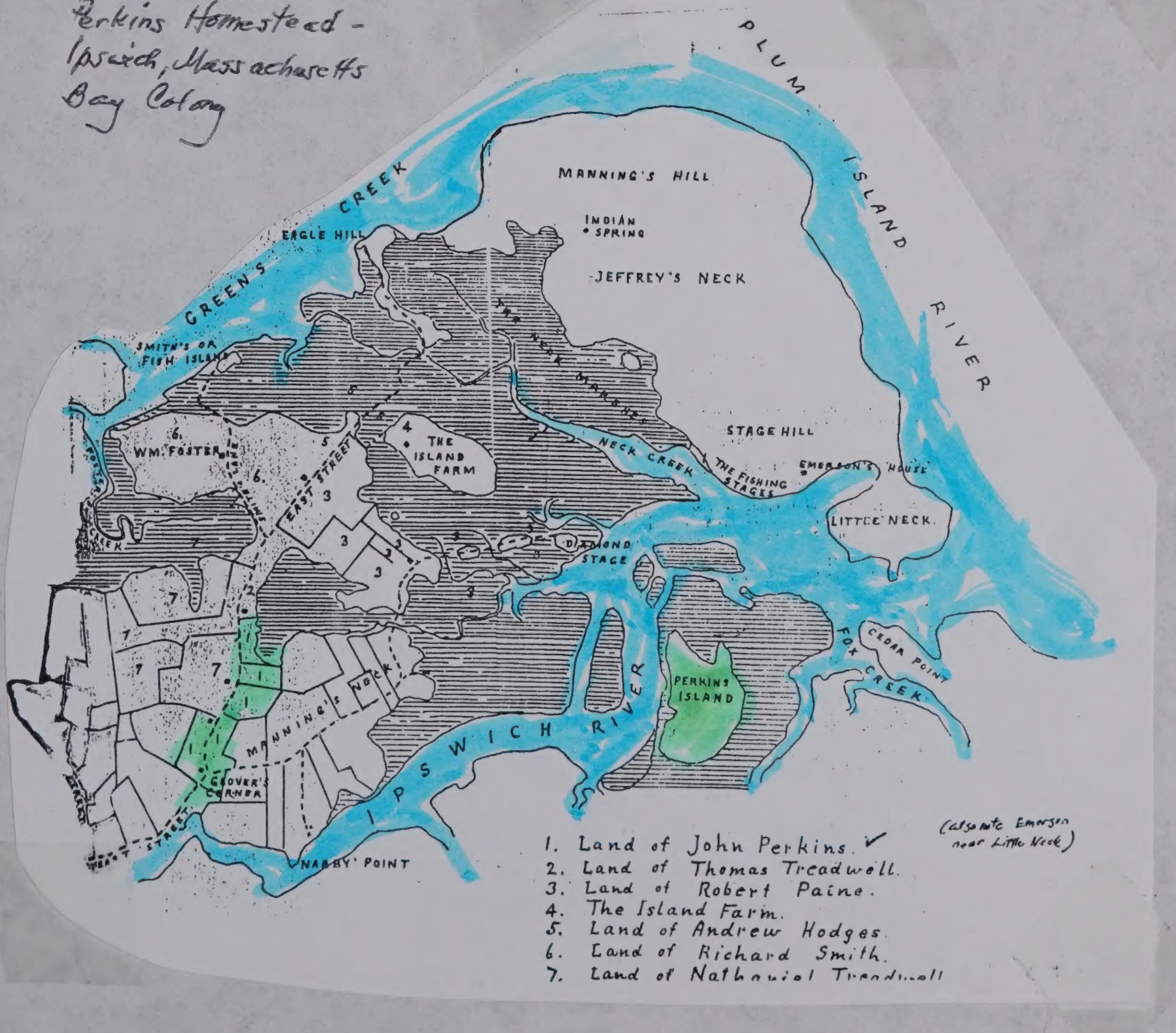


N

W E

S

Perkins Homestead -
Ipswich, Massachusetts
Bay Colony



1. Land of John Perkins. ✓
2. Land of Thomas Treadwell.
3. Land of Robert Paine.
4. The Island Farm.
5. Land of Andrew Hodges.
6. Land of Richard Smith.
7. Land of Nathaniel Treadwell

(also note Emerson near Little Neck)

Family Record

(Dodge Ancestors)

Family No.

Perkins
Surname

Father – (Deacon) Thomas PERKINS

Event	Day	Month	Year		Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth bp	28	Apr	1622	○	Hillmorton	Warwickshire	England		○
Death	7	May	1686	○	Topsfield	Essex	Mass		○
Buried				○					○
Married		ca	1648	○	New Meadows (Topsfield)		Mass. Bay Colony		○

Occupation farmer, freeman, Selectman, Supvr strict deacon Military Indian alarm Church Puritan

Places Lived gift of 150 acre farm in Topsfield from Phebe's dad

Other Wives

His Father's Name "Sarge" John Perkins

His Mother's Maiden Name Judith Gater

Mother – Phebe GOULD

Event	Day	Month	Year		Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth bp	27	Sep	1620	○	Hemel Hempstead,	Buckinghamshire	England	A kind-hearted lady - tried to protect a sick minister others (including her sister) libeled him.	○
Death		after	1686	○	Topsfield	Essex	Mass.		○
Buried				○					○

Occupation Military Church Puritan

Places Lived

Other Husbands

For Children of Joseph + Phebe (Perkins) Towne, See Towne family

Her Father's Name Zaccheus Gould

Her Mother's Maiden Name Phebe Deacon

Children

Sex	Full Given Name		Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
	1. John Perkins	○	Birth		ca	1644	Topsfield			○
			Death	19	May	1668	Topsfield			○
	Spouse - Deborah Browning (1647-1704) dau Thos - her (1)	○	Married	28	Nov	1666	"			○
+	2. Phebe Perkins	○	Birth		ca	1645				○
			Death		after	1715	"			○
	Spouse - Joseph Towne	○	Married		ca	1665	"			○
	3. brave soldier "Great Swamp Fight" KP war but disgraced ca 1650 - theft. Zaccheus Perkins	○	Birth		ca	1647	"			○
			Death	1	Dec	1732	"			○
	Spouse - Rebecca (- 15 May 1747)	○	Married		ca	1704?	"			○
	4. Martha Perkins	○	Birth		ca	1649	"			○
			Death		after	1728	Ipswich			○
	Spouse - John Lamson (1642-1717)	○	Married	17	Dec	1668	"			○
	5. Mary Perkins (no issue)	○	Birth		ca	1651				○
			Death		ca	1728				○
	Spouse - William Howlett (1650-1718)	○	Married	27	Oct	1671				○
	6. Elisha Perkins	○	Birth		Ca	1654?				○
			Death	18	Feb	1741				○
	Spouse - ① Catherine Towne (1662-2 July 1714) ② Elizabeth (Knight) wid Saml Towne (- May 1752)	○	Married	① 23 ② 4	Feb Apr	1680 1715				○
	7. Thomas Perkins (served on Witchcraft Jury, afterwards apologized)	○	Birth		Ca	1656				○
			Death	ca	Apr	1722				○
	Spouse - Sarah Wallis (- 1722+)	○	Married	1	June	1683				○
	8. Judith Perkins	○	Birth	28	Jan	1658				○
			Death		bef.	1719				○
	Spouse - did not marry	○	Married		—					○
	9. (Deacon) Timothy Perkins	○	Birth	6	June	1661				○
			Death	7	Aug	1738	Tops f.			○
	Spouse - ① Hannah (- 14 Nov 1690) ② Abigail (- ca 1711?)	○	Married	① ②	ca ca	1688 1691 ?				○
	10. (? ③ Ruth Dorman ?	○	Birth "	③	ca	1712 ?)	#3 Not listed by W. G. Davis			○
			Death							○
	Spouse -	○	Married							○

☐ Additional children listed on the reverse side.

In the circles, identify by number your sources of information — then list each on the reverse side. ○

Family Record

(Averill Ancestors)

Family No.

Perkins

Surname

Father – (Sgt) Jacob PERKINS

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth	29	Jan	1624 ○	Hillmorton	Warwickshire	England	Home (1668) accidentally? set on fire by ashes	○
Death	27	Jan	1699/1700 ○	Ipswich			from maid's pipe. Second home (1771)	○
Buried			○				struck by lightening after church –	○
Married		ca	1648/9 ○				while many people gathered there.	○

Occupation farmer – active in community affairs Military In 1664 chosen sgt of military company Church Puritan ○

Places Lived ○

Other Wives ① Damaris (   ) Robinson, widow of Nathaniel, a mariner of Boston ○
In Salisbury – date uncertain – after 1685 per Torrey –

His Father's Name "Serge" John Perkins ○

His Mother's Maiden Name Judith Gater ○

Mother – Elizabeth Whipple

(See Whipple + Lovell sections)

	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Whipple	Birth		ca	1629 } ○	{ Bodsing, Buckinghamshire		England	Davis + Torrey say Whipple	○
	Death		ca	1629 } ○	{				○
(age 56)	~~Buried~~ Death	12	Feb.	1685/6 ○	Ipswich	Essex	Massachusetts		○

Occupation Military Church Puritan ○

Places Lived ○

Other Husbands ○

For children of Nathaniel and Judith (Perkins) Brown
see Brown Family

Her Father's Name Matthew Whipple ○

Her Mother's Maiden Name Anne Hawkins ○

Children

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
	1. Elizabeth Perkins ○	Birth	1	Apr	1649/50	Ipswich			○
		Death							○
	Spouse – Thomas Borman (1643–1719) ○	Married	1	Jan	1667/8	"			○
	2. John Perkins ○	Birth							○
		Death				Salisbury?			○
	Spouse – ① Mary Fisk of Salisbury ② Elizabeth Prytherch ③ Mary (White) Hooper ○	Married	① ca ② 13	 Oct	1677 1696	" [illegible]? ③ 17—?			○
+	3. Judith Perkins ○	Birth	11	July	1655				○
		Death			17	✓ Ipswich ✓			○
	Spouse – Nathaniel Brown (?1652–1717) ○	Married	16	Dec	1673	"			○
	4. Mary Perkins ○	Birth	14	May	1658	"			○
		Death			1729	Amesbury			○
	Spouse – John Annable ○	Married				✓			○
	5. Jacob Perkins ○	Birth	3	Aug	1662				○
		Death	12	Nov	1705?				○
	Spouse – ① Elizabeth Sparks (dau John) ② Sarah Treadwell (1673–1738) ○	Married	① 25 ② 5	Dec Jan	1684 1685				○
	6. (Capt) Matthew Perkins 5Ca. ○	Birth	23	June	1665				○
		Death				✓			○
	Spouse – Esther Burnham (3 Aug 1662 – 6 Oct 17[illegible]) dau Lt Thos + Mary (Lawrence) Burnham (of our Dodge line) ○	Married			1685/6				○
	7. Hannah Perkins ○	Birth	11	Oct	1670				○
		Death			17	✓			○
	Spouse – ? Maybe Ezekiel Woodward (first wife) ○	Married	?	ca	1696?	✓ Gloucester?			○
	8. Joseph Perkins ○	Birth	21	June	1674				○
		Death			1726	Norwich		CT	○
	Spouse – Martha Morgan (1680–1754) (she m ② Jos. Lathrop in 1727) ○	Married	22	May	1700				○
	9. Jabez Perkins ○	Birth	15	May	1677				○
		Death			17	Norwich		CT	○
	Spouse – ① Hannah Lathrop (1677–1721) ② Charity Leonard ○	Married	① [illegible] ②	June	1698 1722	" "			○
	10. ○	Birth							○
		Death							○
	Spouse – ○	Married							○

☐ Additional children listed on the reverse side.

○ In the circles, identify by number your sources of information — then list each on the reverse side.

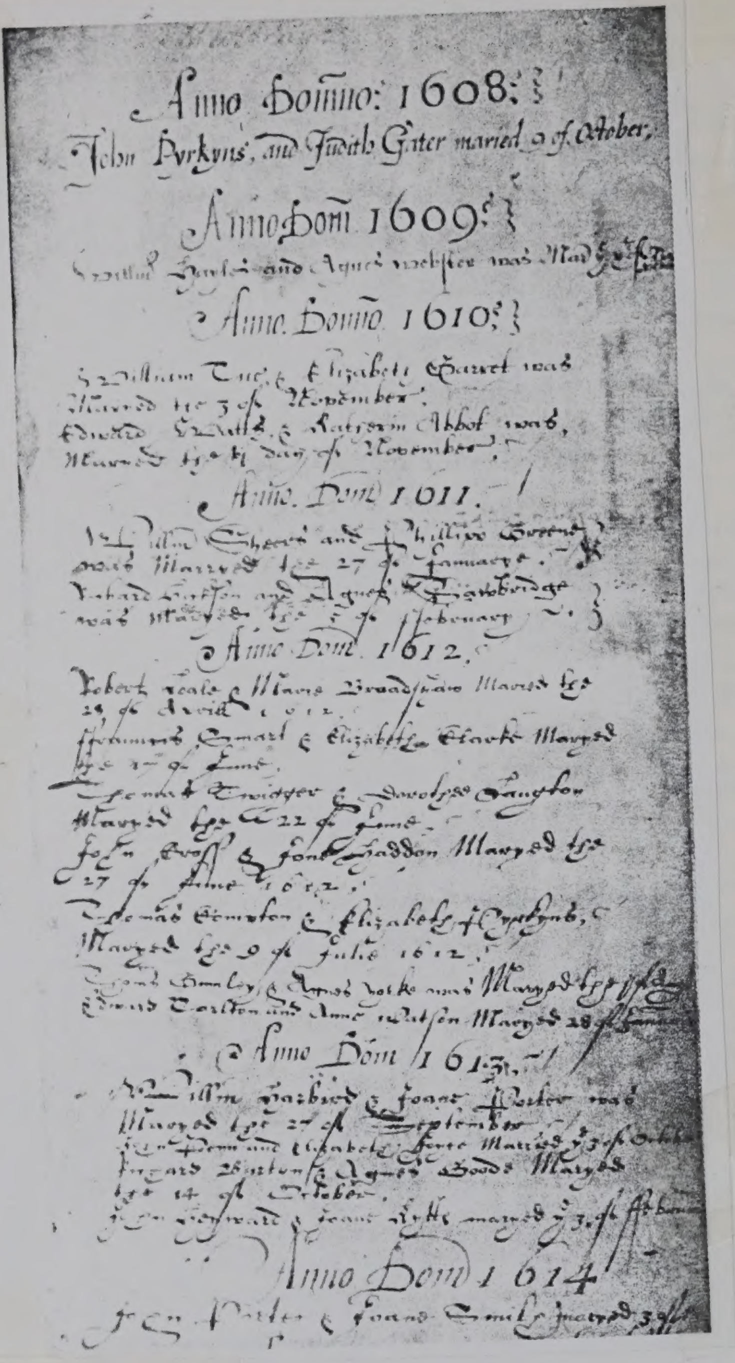
Family Record

Perkins

Husband — (Sr) Abram PERKINS

Wife —

Children



Anno Domino: 1608:
John Pyrkyns, and Judith Gater maried 9 of October;

Anno Domi 1609:
William Harbe and Agnes webster was Mared the [illegible]

Anno Domino 1610:
William Tue & Elizabeth Garret was Marred the 3 of November.
Edward Smith & Katren Abbot was, Marred the 11 day of November.

Anno Domi 1611.
William Sheere and Phillipe Gorton was Marred the 27 of Janwarye.
Richard Watson and Agnes Trowbridge was Marred the 5 of February.

Anno Domi 1612.
Robert Peale & Marie Broadshaw Marred the 23 of Aprill 1612.
Thomas Smart & Elizabeth Clarke Marred the 17 of June.
Thomas Twigger & Dorothe Laughton Marred the 22 of June.
John Cross & Jone Haddon Marred the 27 of June 1612.
Thomas Compton & Elizabeth Perkyns, Marred the 9 of Julie 1612.
[illegible] Hemley & Agnes Yorke was Marred the [illegible]
Edward Carlton and Anne Watson Marred 28 of Janu

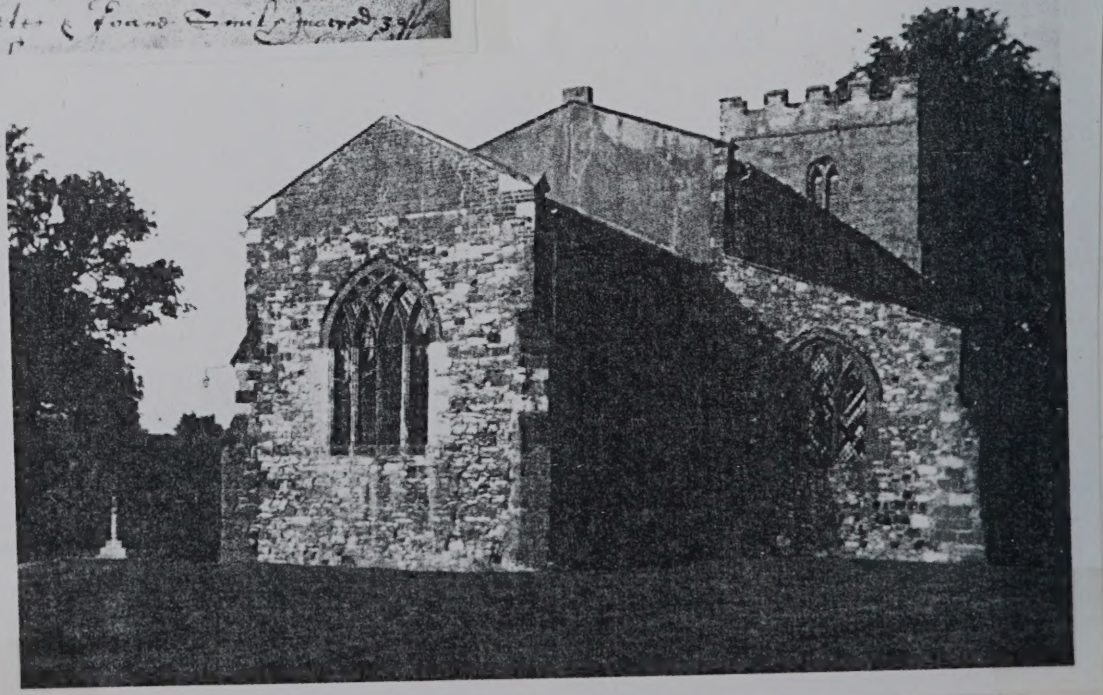
Anno Dom 1613.
William Harbird & Joane Parker was Marred the 27 of September
John Perin and Elizabeth Perre Marred the 3 of Octob
Richard Burton & Agnes Goode Marred the 14 of October.
John Howard & Joane [illegible] marred the 3 of Febru

Anno Dom 1614
John Parker & Joane Smith marred 3 of

Record of marriage of JOHN PERKINS

and JUDITH GATER

HILLMORTON PARISH CHURCH
HILMORTON, ENGLAND
1972



Clippings - Regarding the Perkins family Coat of Arms (see caveat elsewhere)
The material here is not proven as applies to our line,

From book, Burke, "The Landed Gentry - American Families" p 2863 plate LII

Lineage.—Peter Morley, *alias* Perkins, living 1381, Sergeant to Hugh de Spencer, of Shipton Manor. Oxon, *m.* Agnes Taylor, and was father of

Henry Perkins, whose son,

John Perkins, Seneschal to Thomas, Duke of Gloucester, was father of

William Perkins, living 1420, who by Margaret his wife, had a son,

Thomas Perkins, who *d.* before 1479, leaving a son,

William Perkins, *d.* 1495. His son,

Thomas Perkins, of Hillmorton, Co. Warwick, *d.* 1528, leaving by Alys his wife (who *d.* 1538), a son,

Henry Perkins, *d.* 1547, leaving a son,

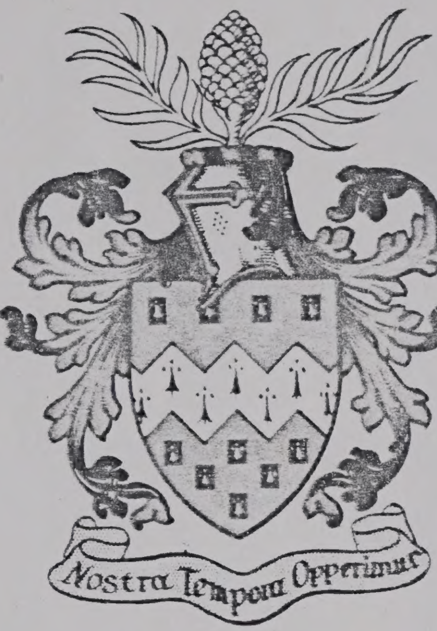
Thomas Perkins, *m.* Alice Kebble, and *d.* 1592, and was father of

Henry Perkins, of Hillmorton, who *d.* 1609, leaving a son,

John Perkins, of Hillmorton, Co. Warwick, and afterwards of Ipswich, Mass., representative of the General Court 1636, sailed from England 1 Dec. 1630, and arrived in New England 5 Feb. 1631, *bapt.* at Hillmorton 23 Dec. 1583; *m.* 9 Oct. 1608, Judith, dau. of Michael Gater, and *d.* 1654, leaving a son,

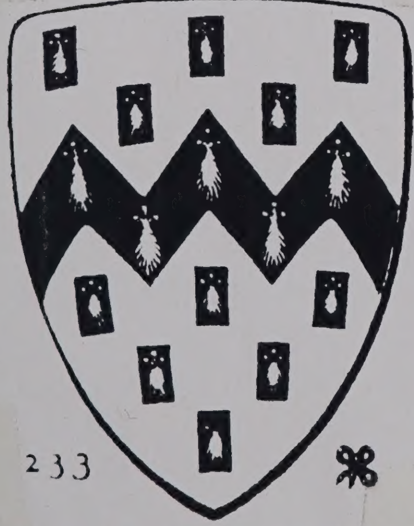
Jacob Perkins, *b.* 1624; *m.* 1st, Elizabeth Lovell; and 2ndly, Damaris Robinson, and *d.* 1699-1700,

Arms: Or, a fesse dancette ermine between ten billets ermines 4, 3, 2 and 1.
Crest: A pineapple stalked and leaved proper.
Motto: Nostra tempora opperimur



PERKINS *Formerly* OF HILLMORTON

Perkins



NEHGR - 1952 Volume -

"A Roll of Arms" - #233 was registered to Edmund Perkins of Boston MA before 1677, whom historians have connected to the same English origin as our Perkins.

Arms: Gold billety and a dancette counter-ermined

Crest: A pineapple with stalk and leaves proper.

Perkins

Copied from Cogswell - Holdeman Genealogy

Take the beginning of this for what it is worth!

faits pour avoir des idees." Buffon. London; Elliot Stock, 62 Paternoster Row. Reading: Miss Langley; Newbury; J. W. Blacket, 1892.

I. PETER MORLEY

PETER MORLEY alias Perkins of Co. Salop was living 1380/81. He married Agnes Teylor and was servius to Lord Hugh Despencer, Lord of Shipton, Co. Oxen.

II. HENRY PERKINS

III. JOHN PARKYNS

JOHN PARKYNS was seneschall (secretary) to Thomas Despencer, Earl of Gloucester, and was living 1397-1400.

IV. WILLIAM PARKYNS

WILLIAM PARKYNS, Lord of Ufton, married Margaret .... He was Baillie (or agent)to Humphry, Duke of Gloucester, and was living 1411-1447.

V. THOMAS PARKYNS

THOMAS PARKYNS was living in 1452 and died in 1478. He had four sons:

1. John Parkyns liv. 1495; m. Margaret Collee, heiress of Finchempstead and Padworth
2. Thomas Parkyns of Madresfield; m. Ellen, sister of John Tompkins of Nappond, Herefordshire (Reference: Page 226 of Miss Sharp's book under heading, Of the Family of Parkyns of Madresfield and Nottinghamshire)
3. William Parkyns, married (he was perhaps trustee of Ufton Settlement 1495) and was ancestor of Marstan Jabet family of Warwickshire.
4. Humphrey Parkyns (no doubt this son was named for Humphrey Plantagenet)

Note: Thomas, William and Humphrey Parkyns are called of Madresfield and Nottinghamshire.

John Parkyns living 1495, married Margaret Collee and had a son Thomas Parkyns who was living in 1495 and died 1524. Thomas

married Dorothy, daughter of Edward More of Wichwood, Co. Hants. Francis Parkyns married Anne ______ and lived at Padworth. Arthur Perkins married Elizabeth, daughter of Nicholas Kymball of Bedfordshire. This is the line of Nicholas Perkins who came to Virginia in 1641.

Heraldic crest made in 1559 to Richard Parkins, in it styled of Madresfield in Berkshire.

"William Harvey Esquire, also Clarencieux states: beinge required of Richarde Parkyns of Madresfield in the county of Berks, gentleman, sonne & heire to Richard Perkins, sonne & heire to William Parkins, sonne & heire to Thomas Parkins of Madresfield aforesaid, gentleman, to make searche in the Registers & Recordes of myne office for the ancient armes unto hym descended from his auncestors . . . could not but allow the same accordinglie & . . . I have ratified & confirmed unto the said Richarde Parkins gent. & his posteritie & to all the posteritie of the said Richarde Parkins, his father: That is to say, *Argent. an eagle displayed sables, in a canton golde, a fess dauncette between seven billettes sables, on each an erminey.* And for as much as I found no creaste unto the same (as comotie to all auncient armes there belongid none) . . . I have given unto hym by way of increase *for his creaste & cognisaunce,* on a wreath argent & sables a pine aple braunche verte, the aple in his propor couller, mantled gules, doubled argente.

"Here it is stated that Richard Parkins, the receiver of the grant, was descended from a great-grandfather, Thomas Perkins of Mattisfelde in Berkshire. This appears to be an error, as there is no place now in Berkshire of that name. However, in a pedigree of early date, preserved in the College of Arms which is added to Richard Mundy's copy of the Worcestershire Visitation, the same descent if found traced from Thomas Parkyns of Mattisfelde in Worcester, which place may be supposed to be the same now called Madresfield in that county.

"The allusion to Berkshire may be explained by the fact that a descent from the family of Ufton was always accepted as authentic by the Nottingham branch, and that Thomas their immediate ancestor was in other deeds styled of Ufton as well as of Madresfield, suggesting the idea that he may have been one and the same person with Thomas Parkyns of Ufton, Robert who died in 1478.

"It may be remembered that John Parkyns had in 1390 acquired

a small property in Madresfield, and if, as there seems no reasonable doubt, he was the same as John, the grandfather of Thomas of Ufton, he (Thomas) inheriting his grandfather's estate would be rightly styled of Ufton in Berkshire and of Madresfield in Worcestershire . . . the Worcestershire pedigree here gives the clue that the same Thomas had other sons, and that to his next son he bequeathed his land in Madresfield, who thereupon became the founder of another branch of the family."

From this same book we also learn that Thomas Parkyns(brother of John and William and Humphrey, married Ellen, sister of John Tomkins of Nappond, Herefordshire. Their son William Parkyns of Madresfield married Joan, daughter of ______ Reade of near Coventry. They had a son Richard Parkyns who was granted the crest and to whom the arms were confirmed.

"In 1390 John Parkyns, as we learn from the Madresfield Court Roll (before referred to) had held one messuage and 18 acres of land there, for which he did homage to the lady of the manor, Johanna Bracey, showing that he had then only recently acquired the property.

"William Parkyns, the sone of John, was the first of the family who was Lord of Ufton, Robert. From 1411 he is named in the dioceson registry as patron of the living, etc. He was attached to the service of Humphrey Plantagenet, Duke of Gloucester as baillious, or agent. Thomas Parkyns, Armiger, etc. . . . John Perkins son of Thomas, was 28 years old when he inherited his father's manor of Ufton Robert (this would place time of his birth as 1450).

Note: The above three paragraphs were taken from pages 39, 42, 43, and 226 of the aforementioned book.

The line of descent continues, taken from Lichfield Wills and Hillmorton Parish Register, Warwickshire p. 78 of *The Perkins Family in Ye Olden Times,* by Mansfield Parkyns, Esq. of Woodborough Hall, Nottinghamshire, Eng. edited by D. W. Perkins, Utica, N.Y., U. S. A., No. CS 429.P48 (1916) Library of Congress, Washington, D. C.

VI. WILLIAM PERKINS

WILLIAM PERKINS was of Warwickshire, 1495. He married and had the following sons:

1. John
2. THOMAS PERKINS, of Hillmorton, d. 1528; m. Alys, who died 1538
3. William Perkins, of Marston, Parish of Buckington, d. 1536; m. Agnes, had 2 sons: John and Thomas

Astley.

VII. THOMAS PERKINS

THOMAS PERKINS of Hillmorton, died in 1528. He married Alys who died in 1538. (Hillmorton is near Rugby.)

VIII. HENRY PERKINS (d. 1547)

IX. THOMAS PERKINS

THOMAS PERKINS died in 1592. He married ALICE KEBBLE.

X. HENRY PERKINS (d. 1609)

XI. JOHN PERKINS

JOHN PERKINS was baptized December 23, 1583, in Hillmorton, Co. Warwickshire, England. He emigrated Dec. 1, 1630, and arrived in New England Feb. 5, 1630/31. He died in 1654 at Ipswich, Massachusetts. On October 9, 1608, he married JUDITH, daughter of Michael Gater. She died at Ipswich, Mass.

Children of John and Judith Perkins:

1. John, bp. Nov. 8, 1609, Hillmorton, Warwickshire, Eng., came to New England with parents
2. Elizabeth, bp. Mar. 23, 1611, Hillmorton, Warwickshire, Eng., came to N. E. with parents; m. Wm. Sargent
3. Mary, bp. Sept. 3, 1615, Hillmorton, Warwickshire, Eng., came to N. E. with parents; m. 1636 prob. Thomas Bradbury
4. Ann, bp. Sept. 5, 1617, Hillmorton, Warwickshire, Eng., author Savage does not say she came to N. E.; is not named in father's will
5. THOMAS, bp. April 28, 1622, married and was a Deacon; of Ipswich in 1648; had a daughter Judith b. Jan. 28, 1658; settled in Topsfield in that part formerly Ipswich; d. May 7, 1686; his will dated Dec. 11 preceding, probated Sept. following, leaving a large estate. No wife mentionel which indicates she pre-deceased her husband. Dau. Judith, b. Jan. 28, 1658; m. Dec. 16, 1673, NATHANIEL BROWN, b. 1652. (See p. 111).

PERKINS

Perkins was a substantial yeoman family in Hillmorton parish, Warwickshire, England. They are believed to have descended from Pierre de Morlaix who flourished in the reign of Richard II, and had a son called Henry Pierrekins. Perkins is a patronymic from Pierre, with the addition of the diminutive *kin*.

Dawes I:484-491; Perkins pp.v,1-28; Perkins,Eng.pp.1-23; Anc.WGD III:165-182;
Savage III:394-397; Torrey pp.571,572

Line 896a

1. **Pierre de Morlaix**, (living 1371),
   m. **Agnes Taylor**, dau. of **John Taylor**,
   ch. 2. **Henry Perkins**.

Pierre de Morlaix, (or Peter de Morley alias Perkins) has been generally accepted as the first known ancestor of this line. He was living in 1371 in Shropshire, England. Pierre was the bailiff, or manager, of the estates belonging to Hugh Le Despenser of the manor of Shipton, in Oxfordshire. Pierre married Agnes, possibly the daughter of John Taylor or Tyler, of Madresfield, Worcestershire.

2. **Henry Perkins**,
   m.
   ch. 3. **John Perkins**.

Henry Pierrekins (son of Pierre) became known as Henry Perkins.

3. **John Perkins**, (living 1400),
   m.
   ch. 4. **William Perkins**.

John Perkins was seneschal to Thomas Le Despenser in 1398.

4. **William Perkins**, (living 1447),
   m. **Margaret**,
   ch. 5. **Thomas Perkins**.

William Perkins, who was living in 1447, was bailiff to Humphrey Plantagenet, Duke of Gloucester. ✓

5. **Thomas Perkins**, (living 1479),
   m.
   ch. John Perkins, m. Margaret Collee,
   Thomas Perkins, m. Ellen Tomkins,
   6. **William Perkins**,
   Humphrey Perkins.

6. **William Perkins**, (living 1495),
   m.
   ch. John Perkins,
   7. **Thomas Perkins**,
   William Perkins, m. Agnes.

7. **Thomas Perkins**, (ca 1475-1528),
   m. **Alice de Astley**, dau. of **Thomas de Astley**,
   ch. 8. **Henry Perkins**,
   Joan Perkins, m. — Sleyter,
   Julian Perkins, m. Thomas Cumpton.

Thomas Perkins was born about 1475, in Hillmorton parish. He married Alice, believed to be a daughter of Thomas de Astley. Thomas Perkins died shortly after 3 Apr 1528, when his will was made. His wife's will was proved 15 Oct 1538.

8. **Henry Perkins**, (ca 1500-ca 1546),
   m.
   ch. 9. **Thomas Perkins**,
   William Perkins,
   Joan Perkins.

Henry Perkins was born about 1500, in Hillmorton parish. His will was proved 16 June 1546.

9. **Thomas Perkins**, (ca 1525-ca 1592),
   m. **Alice Kebble**,
   ch.10. **Henry Perkins**,
   John Perkins, m. Elizabeth Shaw,
   William Perkins, m. Elizabeth,
   Edward Perkins, m. Sara Smyth,
   Thomas Perkins, m. Mary Bate,
   Francis Perkins,
   Luke Perkins,
   Isaac Perkins, m. Alice.

Thomas Perkins was born about 1525, in Hillmorton. He married Alice Kebble. Thomas was buried in Hillmorton, 23 Mar 1592. Alice was buried 20 Aug 1613.

10. **Henry Perkins**, (ca 1555-1609),
    m. 1579, **Elizabeth Sawbridge**,
    ch. Alice Perkins,
    Thomas Perkins, m. Elizabeth,
    11. **John Perkins**,

Astley, Thomas—bore, in the second Dunstable tournament 1334, azure, a cinquefoyle pierced ermine. (F.) Ascribed also to ANDREW, JOHN, and Sir THOMAS in St. George and Ashmole Rolls and Jenyns' Ordy.

*THOMAS, of (Hill) Morton, differenced with a bordure engrailed or; in Surrey Roll R. II. Sir RAUFF—a bordure argent—in Ashmole Roll E. III.; and THOMAS DE—with a label (3) or, on each point two bars gules, in Surrey Roll R. II.

[**Astley, Giles**—bore, gules, a cinquefoyle pierced ermine between three mullets or; Harl. MS. 1481 fo. 75^b.]

[illegible] Foster Feudal Coats of Arms

See 'Ancestry of [illegible] Grant' Vol 3

Perkins

Perkins and Astley

On the face of it, that old Perkins pedigree sounds like one of those lineages made up by Tudor heralds to flatter rich clients. On the other hand, sometimes old legends turn out to be quite accurate despite initial appearances. We cannot be positive without more proof one way or the other.

The earliest positively-identified Perkins in Hillmortonwere quite prosperous, even rich for their time. The Astleys are much more well known and include knights and barons. Still, both Perkinses and Astleys must have had younger sons who begat more younger sons. Thus a Thomas Perkins could have married Alice, daughter of Thomas Astley. Thomas was a common surname in both families. Both families were definitely in Hillmorton; but the Astleys had been there longer, and histories of that place tell much about them. One of the most interesting excerpts which follows is a description -- the part about the stone medieval effigies of an Astley knight and his wife on display in the church there. Wouldn't it be fun to descend from that couple?

The Astley family took their name from their manor, as most of the Normans did in those days. The word is Old English (Saxon) for "EastLea" or meadow--originally an eastern clearing in the woods for planting. Hillmorton is in the northernmost spike of Warwickshire near Staffordshire and Leicestershire. The Parish of St. John the Baptist way back when was built to servetwo settlements, the little burgs of "Hull" or Huile" (meaning hill) and Morton, which eventually grew together, combined as Hillmorton. The Church vital records there commence about 1585 and mention Perkinses. Earlier land records do exist, for government took fees. ~~The first~~ are shown in inquisition post mortems back in feudal times.

Burke's Extinct and Dormant Peerages shows the following about Astleys. Unfortunately the editor skipped a few generations for the sake of brevity now and then, just when we need the information the most!

ASTLEY, OF MELTON CONSTABLE.

CREATED 21st Jan. 1642.

EXTINCT 7th Sept. 1659.

Lineage.

The ASTLEYS, extinct and extant, derived their name from the manor of Astley, or as originally written Estley, in the county of Warwick, of which they were lords so early as the time of HENRY I.

PHILIP DE ESTLEY, grandson of the first proprietor, held three knights' fees, in the reign of HENRY II., (*anno* 1166), of William, Earl of Warwick, viz. Estley or Astley, in Warwickshire, Wedinton, Hillmorton, Melverton, and Merston Jabet, *de veteri feoffamento*, by the service "of laying hands on the earl's stirrop when he did get upon, or alight from horseback." His great-grandson,

SIR THOMAS DE ASTLEY, knt. was constituted, in the 26th of HENRY III., one of the king's justices for the gaol delivery at Warwick, and again the next year, when he paid £15 for his relief. Sir Thomas was afterwards one of the great leaders amongst the barons, and fell at Evesham in 1264, with Montford, Earl of Leicester, and other rebellious lords. By his first wife, Joane, daughter of Ehnald de Bois, a great man at that time in Leicestershire, Sir Thomas had a son, ANDREW ASTLEY, from whom sprang the *Extinct* Lords Astley, of Astley, and a daughter, Isabel, wife of William de Birmingham. By his second, Editha, daughter of Peter Constable, of Melton Constable, in Norfolk, and co-heir of her brother, Sir Robert Constable, knt., he left three sons, THOMAS, Ralph, and Stephen, with a daughter, Agnes. The eldest of these sons,

THOMAS DE ASTLEY, inherited Hill Morton, but died *s. p.* and was *s.* by his brother,

RALPH DE ASTLEY, of Hill Morton and Melton Constable. From whom we pass to his lineal descendant, (fifth in succession),

JOHN ASTLEY, esq. of Hill Morton and Melton Constable, who *m.* Frances, daughter and heir of John Cheyney, esq. of Sittingborne, in the county of Kent, and was *s.* by his only son,

ISAAC ASTLEY, esq. of Hill Morton and Melton Constable. This gentleman *m.* Mary, daughter of Edward Waldegrave, esq. of Borley, in Essex, and had

THOMAS, his heir.
JACOB (Sir), a distinguished cavalier officer, who for his eminent services was raised to the peerage in 1661 as Lord Astley, of Reading. (See BURKE's *Extinct Peerage*.)

The elder son,

THOMAS ASTLEY, esq. of Hill Morton and Melton Constable, wedded Frances, daughter and co-heir of George Deane, esq. of Tilney, and had issue,

Francis (Sir), who *d. s. p.*
ISAAC, heir to his father.
EDWARD (Sir), who *m.* the Hon. Elizabeth Astley, only daughter and eventual heiress of his uncle Jacob, first Lord Astley, of Reading, and was father of
    JACOB ASTLEY, who inherited the estates of his uncle, Sir Isaac Astley, bart. and being created a BARONET himself in 1660, founded the existing baronets of Hill Morton and Melton Constable.

The elder surviving son,

I. ISAAC ASTLEY, esq. of Hill Morton and Melton Constable, was created a BARONET by *King* CHARLES I. 21st January, 1642. Sir Isaac *m.* Rachel, daughter of Augustine Messinger, esq. of Hackford, in Norfolk; and, secondly, Bridget, daughter of John Coke, esq. of Holkham, and widow of Edward Doyley, esq. of Shottisham, but dying without issue 7th September, 1659, his estates devolved upon his nephew, as stated above, and the BARONETCY became *Extinct*.

Arms—Az. a cinquefoil erm. within a bordure engrailed, or.

A valuable reference book, The Norman People, says:

> Astley, or De Newburgh. Henry de N. , Earl of Warwick in 1068, a descendant of Bernard the Dane living 936 had issue Roger, his successorRotrou, Robert, Geoffrey, and Henry--the last of whom in the time of King Henry I, obtained Estleia etc., held by the service of three knights. It was so held by Philip de Estleia, his son, 1165., from the Earl of Warwick. This family bore the arms of the Earls of Leicester and Mellent, the elder line of Newburgh. From it descended the Lords Astley and Hastings, THE Baronets Astley.

The following excerpts were clipped from pages 108-11e, Victoria County History of Warwickshire.

A HISTORY OF WARWICKSHIRE

HILLMORTON

Acreage: 3,124.

Population: 1911, 1,259; 1921, 1,712; 1931, 3,786.

Hillmorton parish lies to the south-east of Rugby, in which borough it has been absorbed since 1932, except for the eastern part, which has been annexed for civil purposes to Clifton-upon-Dunsmore. Though not widely known by name, it is perhaps the most prominent of all Warwickshire parishes, the 820-ft. masts of the Post Office wireless station being a landmark for some twenty miles around.[1] The parish forms the eastern end of the tract of high ground of which the western part is Dunsmore, and there are good views from the village over the flat country south and east into Northamptonshire. Its eastern boundary is the Watling Street. The Rains Brook divides Hillmorton from Barby and Kilsby in Northants. on the south, and the northern boundary of the parish is formed by a small tributary of the Avon, the ground rising from about 300 ft. by these streams to over 400 ft. at the top of the village. Though they never seem to have had separate existence as manors, the parish is made up, and its name derived from, two townships Hull and Morton, which even in Dugdale's time were to some extent distinct, the former 'conteyning that part standing on the Bank', the latter, 'where the church is, that below in a moorish flat ground'.[2] Thomas, noting the number of houses in 1730 as 74, states that 'this Town stood formerly more in the bottom nearer the Church than it does now',[3] and the two main streets of the village, running parallel east and west, continued to be known as Upper and Lower Street. The former, which is part of the main road from Northampton to Coventry, throws off a branch to Rugby and expands into an attractive green, on which stand the remains of the market cross. West of the green there has been much building in recent years, linking the old village with Rugby.

was mu

KNIGHTLOW HUNDRED

MANORS The ownership of land in *HILLMORTON* is difficult to establish from Domesday Book owing to the confusion between Morton and Marton, but the 1 hide and one-sixth hide held by Hugh de Grentemaisnil of the king in charge (*in custodia*) certainly refers to Hillmorton, as this holding extended also into the neighbouring parish of Willoughby. Grinchet and Suain had been in possession before 1066.[13] As Hillmorton was later one of the Earl of Warwick's manors, it is probably right to connect it with three small estates of the Count of Meulan in 'Mortone', one ($1\frac{1}{2}$ hides) being in 1086 held of him by Mereuin, who with Scrotin and Wallef had held it freely before 1066,[14] and two, of 1 hide and 1 virgate, and half a hide, were held by Wallef, who before 1066 had held the smaller while Scroti had held the larger portion freely.[15]

In 1166 Philip de Estleg' (i.e. Astley) was holding three fees of the Earl of Warwick *de vetero feffamento*,[16] part of which, though not specifically so mentioned, was in Hillmorton. In 1242 Thomas de Astley held of the earl one fee in Astley, Morton, and Milverton.[17] This was held, as $1\frac{1}{2}$ fees, in 1316 by Nicholas (son of Andrew) de Astley,[18] representative of the main line of the family, after which date there appears to be no mention of the Warwick overlordship. . . . . .

In January 1265 Thomas de Astley obtained the grant of a weekly market on Saturday and an annual fair at Midsummer.[19] He was killed later in that year at Evesham, but the grant was renewed in 1268 to his son Thomas, the market being altered to Wednesday, with the right of free warren in his demesne lands added.[20] In 1263 Thomas de Astley, senior, is said to have granted the manor and advowson of Hillmorton to Thomas, his eldest son by his second wife,[21] the father probably retaining a life-interest. This younger Thomas died without offspring before 1284, when his brother Ralph, who was the ancestor of a family that held Hillmorton in direct descent down to the end of the 18th century, claimed and was allowed view of frankpledge, free warren, and the right to hold markets and fairs.[22] Ralph's son Thomas was lord of Morton *cum membris* in 1316,[23] and he and his wife Margery (Charnels) settled the manor, except for a messuage, one carucate, and £12 in rents, on themselves with remainder to their right heirs in 1333.[24] In 1334 Thomas de Astley obtained confirmation of the right to hold a weekly market, in this case on Tuesdays, and an annual fair.[25] The manor was apparently held by the junior branch of the Astley family of the senior branch settled at Astley near Coventry, as in 1387 it was stated by Sir William de Astley, the last of the senior line, that Thomas de Astley, grandson of the Thomas mentioned above, held the manor of him by homage and fealty, with scutage at the rate of 20*s.* annually. William had been given the wardship of Thomas's son Thomas, who had been abducted by his mother Katherine (Bacon) and Thomas Grantewelle and John Huse,[26] but the end of the suit is not recorded.

ASTLEY. *Azure a cinquefoil ermine within a border engrailed argent.*

In 1567 there was a conveyance of the manor between Frances Astley, widow, and Isaac Astley, and Sir William Butte and Edward Walgrave,[27] and a similar transaction in 1593 between Isaac and Mary his wife and Francis and Anthony Warner.[28] His grandson Isaac, created a baronet in 1642,[29] was succeeded by his nephew Jacob, also created a baronet (1660).[30] The latter, with his wife Blanche (Wodehouse) and son Philip, conveyed the manor in 1690 to John Brereton and Francis Carver.[31] The last Astley to hold interests in Hillmorton was Sir Edward, who was lord in 1764–5.[32] He presumably sold it to one of the Yardleys.

Another hide in 'Mortone', probably Hillmorton, which before 1066 had been held freely by Wiching, was in 1086 in the hands of Richard the Forester, or Cheven, being then worth 20*s.*[41] In 1252 it was recorded that he had been enfeoffed of half a carucate in (Hill)morton by William the Conqueror, the value of which was 16*s.* Richard's grandson Walter (Croc) had granted it to William de Morton to hold as one-fifth of a knight's fee, and William's son Henry had parted with some of the land.[42]. In 1198 Henry de Morton had held land for one plough (*waignagium 1 caruce*) valued at 20*s.* of Hugh de Loges,[43] the representative of Richard Cheven. In 1300 these lands, here definitely said to be in 'Hullemorton', were held by Richard de Loges as part of his manor of Chesterton, held by grand serjeanty and the service of keeping the forest of Cannock (Staffs.).[44]

Small properties in Hillmorton were granted for religious purposes. In 1329 William Poyntel of Lutterworth (Leics.) was licensed to alienate 8 messuages and 1½ virgates in Hillmorton to St. John Baptist Hospital at Lutterworth, for daily celebration of masses for the souls of himself, his wife, and their ancestors.[45] Two similar chantries were founded in Hillmorton parish church, one in 1334 by Thomas de Astley, endowed with a messuage and a carucate of land,[46] and dedicated to St. Mary. This was probably absorbed by another chantry of St. Mary founded in 1342 by Sir Edmund Trussell, second husband of Margery Astley,[47] which was endowed with 4 messuages, 50 acres of land and 7 of meadow, and 26*s.* of rent.[48] The value of the Trussell chantry when suppressed in 1545 was £4 18*s.* 10*d.* clear.[49] In 1247 Lady Elisant, widow of Osbert de Clinton, gave a messuage in Hulle on the west of her 'court' and other lands and rents to endow a chantry for the souls of herself, her ancestors, and heirs in the chapel of St. James in Hulle.[50] In 1344 Thomas de Morton received licence to alienate a messuage, a virgate, and 4 acres of land and a rood of meadow to endow a chaplain to celebrate mass daily in the chapel of St. James, Hulle, for the souls of himself and his relatives.[51] At its suppression this chantry was worth £2 6*s.* 8*d.*[52] The properties providing endowments for these chantries were in 1549 granted to Thomas Fyscher and Thomas Dabrigecourte,[53] saving annual rents of 8*d.* to John Astley, 'lord of Hulmoreton', and 8*d.* to the master of St. John Baptist Hospital in Lutterworth for its property in Hillmorton.

The Count of Meulan and Henry, Earl of Warwick, gave to the Abbey of Préaux, *c.* 1080, tithes in 'Moritona',[54] which may be Hillmorton.

CHURCH

The church of *ST. JOHN THE BAPTIST* stands on a slight eminence in the north-east of the parish, some distance from the two principal centres of population. It consists of a chancel, nave, north and south aisles, south porch, and west tower.

The earliest architectural remains are of the early or mid-13th century, and indicate the existence of a chancel and aisleless nave. Early in the 14th century north and south aisles were added and alterations made to the chancel. The windows in the aisles were mostly rebuilt at later dates, and the wall of the north aisle had buttresses added or rebuilt in 1609. The west tower was built in the 15th century. The date 1655 in its south wall indicates considerable alteration or repair, possibly amounting to a complete rebuilding of the tower. The clearstory is of uncertain date but is certainly a late addition, probably of the second half of the 16th century. The whole church, but especially the chancel, underwent extensive restoration in the late 18th century, when the present pews were put in.

There are three monumental effigies in the church. In the recess in the north aisle is the figure of a priest in eucharistic vestments with alb, short chasuble, and maniple, carved about 1348, and possibly representing William de Walton.[60] The monument was much damaged on one side when the pews were inserted in the latter part of the 18th century. In the second bay of the south arcade, partially concealed by pews, is the badly mutilated sandstone effigy of a knight, dating from about 1345 and probably representing Thomas de Astley.[61] The hands are joined in prayer and the left leg is crossed over the right, but the arms and left side of the figure together with the shield have been broken and worn away. He wears a bascinet helmet and camail, steel or leather plates on the legs, and knee-caps. Other surviving features of his dress are sollerets and a rowel-spur, and an ornamented sword-belt. The feet rest on a lion. The monument has been much disfigured, apparently by the sharpening of tools or weapons upon it. Opposite it in the middle of the south aisle is the contemporary effigy of a lady beneath a cinquefoiled gable canopy. She is probably Margaret, his wife.[62] Flanking the main gable of the canopy are two gabled trefoil-headed niches, each containing a figure, the one on the left holding an open book, the one on the right a scroll. The gable is supported by two corbel-figures, on the left a hooded centaur, on the right a cloaked figure with his right arm on a staff or crutch. The lady is wearing a close cote-hardie with sleeves reaching to the knuckles, and over it a mantle, gathered under the arms and fastened at the neck with a cord. She has a wimple and veil, and her feet rest on two pet dogs.

South of this monument, beneath a trapdoor in the floor-boards of the pews, is a brass to a lady, about 1410,[63] and similar to one at Merevale. She is dressed in a cote-hardie, the sleeves of which reach to the knuckles, and over it has a mantle fastened by a cord. Her hair is coiled and braided in nets, with which she wears a wimple or kerchief. At her feet are two pet dogs. From her hands rises a scroll which formerly encircled the head, but considerable parts of it are now missing. The remaining lettering reads: 'Ave . . . fruct' ventris tui. Ihu. fili dei misere mei'. In the top part of the slab are two empty matrices of shields.

The plate includes an Elizabethan chalice and paten, the latter dated on the foot 1571.

The registers begin in 1564 but are not complete from that date.

ADVOWSON

The first recorded presentation, by Thomas de Astley of his brother Philip, is undated, but occurred before 1265, when Thomas was killed at the battle of Evesham.[65] In 1343 the church was appropriated to the college of Astley,[66] newly founded by the senior branch of the family, and a vicarage was ordained in 1346.[67] The advowson, like the other properties of this college, was in 1546 granted to Henry, Marquess of Dorset, and Frances his wife,[68] and was in possession of the latter at her death in 1559.[69] It then passed to the Marquess of Hertford, husband of her second daughter, who presented in 1565.[70] Probably owing to the validity of this marriage being questioned the patronage reverted to the Crown, and was granted in 1577–8 to Christopher Chute for 21 years,[71] and renewed to the same in 1589–90.[72] Another grant was made in 1608–9 to Francis Philip and Richard More,[73] who must have parted with their interest fairly soon, for in 1621 the advowson was conveyed by John Stratford and his sons John, Robert, and Edward to Francis Astley,[74] thus becoming reunited with the manor, with which it descended till the late 18th century, Sir Jacob presenting in 1758.[75] Since then the patronage has passed through a variety of hands,

CHARITIES

The Abbott Charity for Poor. Edward Abbott by will dated 11 July 1799 gave £50 to purchase bread with the interest thereof, to be distributed among all the most necessitous poor of this parish at or about Christmas yearly. The annual income of the charity amounts to £1 4*s*.

Sir Edward Astley by indenture dated 13 December 1770 reciting that Sir Edward Astley and some of his ancestors had for several years past directed the sum of 2*s*. a week to be laid out in bread for the poor of this parish, granted to trustees certain property in the parish of Hillmorton upon trust out of the rents and profits thereof weekly to lay out 2*s*. in the purchase of a dozen twopenny loaves and to distribute the same every Sunday after divine service to such of the poor of the parish who should have attended the service (unless disabled by sickness) as the vicar and churchwardens

Our John Perkins was baptized on 23 December 1583 in the church we have seen described above, with all its trappings; and there on 09 October 1608 he married Judith Gater, daughter of Michael Gater. Judith was baptized there on 19 March 1588/9. Her oarents Michael Gater and Isabel Baylie had married in that church on 13 November 1576. All but the youngest of John and Judith's seven children were baptized there. But this family came under the influence of the Puritans, who wanted to change the church from within, from evils they believed were occuring. They sold their land in Hillmorton and traveled southwest to Bristol where on 01 December 1630 they sailed for Boston, an infant, struggling settlement in New England. On board their ship, the Lyon, were food and supplies to succor the few folk already there who were in a starving condition.

As for the Astleys, it appears as though some of them must still be in Hillmorton.

(Perkins)

NP pg 144

Astley or De Neuburgh. Henry de N., Earl of Warwick 1068 (a descendant of Bernard the Dane 936 had issue Roger, his successor, Rotrou, Robert, Geoffrey and Henry – the latter of whom temp Henry I obtained Estleie, to be held by service of 3 knights.

It was so held by Philip de Estleie his son 1165 from the Earl of Warwick. This family bore the arms of the Earls of Leicester & Mellent, the elder line of Newburgh. From it descended the Lords Astley and Hastings and the Baronets Astley.

from; Cogswell-Haldeman Genealogy

✓ He married Judith Perkins December 16, 1673, and died in 1717. His will was proved June 17, 1717. His wife survived him and made her home in Wenham for many years.

Nathaniel Browne built a "worke-house" 1671/2 on 8 or 10 rods of land granted him "to make pott ashes and sope" and that much needed commodity became obtainable. By 1691 the old soap-boiling establishment had given way to a blacksmith shop. In 1647 an incident created by a blacksmith of an earlier time, Edmond Bridges, when his refusal to shoe Dept. Governor Samuel Symonds' horse with proper haste, was made the occasion for a special reprimand from the Great and General Court, which "ordered that Edmond Bridges for his neglect of shooing Mr. Symonds' horse when he came to Corte, be required to answer this complaint, and neglect to further publicke service."

Children of Nathaniel and Judith Brown were:

1. John, b. ab. 1674; lived in Wenham and removed to Preston, Conn.
2. Nathaniel, b. ab. 1676. In 1706, a weaver by trade, he bought his father's homestead in the Hamlet. He also removed to Wenham before 1717.
3. Elizabeth, m. William Hasey of Rumbly Marsh (Chelsea), April 5, 1702
4. ours ✓ HANNAH, m. EDWARD COGSWELL of Chebacco. Edward Cogswell sold to Nathaniel Brown "my father's house etc. in Chebacce," May 3, 1709. With their son, Samuel, who later married Lydia Starkweather, Hannah and Edward moved to New Milford, Conn., in 1710. Edward Cogswell was the son of William II and Martha (Emerson) Cogswell
5. Jacob
6. James, b. June 1, 1685
7. Benjamin

"Judith (Perkins) Brown, the widow of Nathaniel, conveyed to her sons, Nathaniel and Benjamin, the right to the houses where they then dwelt, given her by her husband's will, Oct. 10, 1716, and to her son James, all the lands given him by his father, March 9, 1741."

Reference: *Candlewood, An Ancient Neighborhood in Ipswich*, by F. T. Waters, Salem Press, Salem, Mass., 1909 Pp. 89-95

THE PERKINS FAMILY

CAVEAT
Unproven up to
pg. 107!

PERKINS:
Arms: or, a fess dancette between 10 billets ermine.
Crest: pinecone ppr
Ref.: *Matthews' American Armoury and Blue Book*, 1908, London, Eng.

The Perkins family descends from Pierre de Marlaix, a Norman knight in the time of William the Conqueror, according to legend. Since the motto is in French, not Latin, would seem to prove this. Toujours loyale — forever faithful. The arms are first found here, however, around 1400.

The name Perkins was first known in Berkshire, England, having been derived from Pierre (Peter) de Morlois. This Peter de Morlois (living 1300-1332) had a son Henry (son & Heir) living 1380. This Henry took the name Perkins (kin being the Anglo Saxon suffix denoting the junior or cadet branch of Peter, shortened to Per). ✓ This Peter de Morlois is said to be a descendant of "Pierre de Morlois," one of the barons opposed to King John at Runnymede.

From 1380 the Perkins held the post of Seneschal (secretary) to the House of Lancaster in their service of the Duke of Lancaster, Humphrey Plantagenet, brother of King Henry V of England. Later, became Secretary to the Despencer family (Hugh Despencer, Earl Marshall).

The table of Descent of the family of Perkins of Ufton is found in The *History of Ufton Court*, of the Parishof Ufton, in the County of Berks, *and of the Perkins Family*, compiled from *Heralds Visitations* and other ancient records by A. Mary Sharp. "Rassemblons les faits pour avoir des idees." Buffon. London; Elliot Stock, 62 Paternoster Row. Reading: Miss Langley; Newbury; J. W. Blacket, 1892.

I. PETER MORLEY

PETER MORLEY alias Perkins of Co. Salop was living 1380/81. He married Agnes Teylor and was servius to Lord Hugh Despencer, Lord of Shipton, Co. Oxen.

II. HENRY PERKINS

III. JOHN PARKYNS

JOHN PARKYNS was seneschall (secretary) to Thomas Despencer, Earl of Gloucester, and was living 1397-1400.

IV. WILLIAM PARKYNS

WILLIAM PARKYNS, Lord of Ufton, married Margaret ---------. He was Baillie (or agent) to Humphry, Duke of Gloucester, and was living 1411-1447.

V. THOMAS PARKYNS

THOMAS PARKYNS was living in 1452 and died in 1478. He had four sons:

1. John Parkyns liv. 1495; m. Margaret Collee, heiress of Finchempstead and Padworth
2. Thomas Parkyns of Madresfield; m. Ellen, sister of John Tompkins of Nappond, Herefordshire (Reference: Page 226 of Miss Sharp's book under heading, Of the Family of Parkyns of Madresfield and Nottinghamshire)
3. William Parkyns, married (he was perhaps trustee of Ufton Settlement 1495) and was ancestor of Marstan Jabet family of Warwickshire.
4. Humphrey Parkyns (no doubt this son was named for Humphrey Plantagenet)

Note: Thomas, William and Humphrey Parkyns are called of Madresfield and Nottinghamshire.

John Parkyns living 1495, married Margaret Collee and had a son Thomas Parkyns who was living in 1495 and died 1524. Thomas

married Dorothy, daughter of Edward More of Wichwood, Co. Hants. Francis Parkyns married Anne --------- and lived at Padworth. Arthur Perkins married Elizabeth, daughter of Nicholas Kymball of Bedfordshire. This is the line of Nicholas Perkins who came to Virginia in 1641.

Heraldic crest made in 1559 to Richard Parkins, in it styled of Madresfield in Berkshire.

"William Harvey Esquire, also Clarencieux states: beinge required of Richarde Parkyns of Madresfield in the county of Berks, gentleman, sonne & heire to Richard Perkins, sonne & heire to William Parkins, sonne & heire to Thomas Parkins of Madresfield aforesaid, gentleman, to make searche in the Registers & Recordes of myne office for the ancient armes unto hym descended from his auncestors . . . could not but allow the same accordinglie & . . . I have ratified & confirmed unto the said Richarde Parkins gent. & his posteritie & to all the posteritie of the said Richarde Parkins, his father: That is to say, *Argent, an eagle displayed sables, in a canton golde, a fess dauncette between seven billettes sables, on each an erminey.* And for as much as I found no creaste unto the same (as comotie to all auncient armes there belongid none) . . . I have given unto hym by way of increase *for his creaste & cognisaunce*, on a wreath argent & sables a pine aple braunche verte, the aple in his propor couller, mantled gules, doubled argente.

"Here it is stated that Richard Parkins, the receiver of the grant, was descended from a great-grandfather, Thomas Perkins of Mattisfelde in Berkshire. This appears to be an error, as there is no place now in Berkshire of that name. However, in a pedigree of early date, preserved in the College of Arms which is added to Richard Mundy's copy of the Worcestershire Visitation, the same descent if found traced from Thomas Parkyns of Mattisfelde in Worcester, which place may be supposed to be the same now called Madresfield in that county.

"The allusion to Berkshire may be explained by the fact that a descent from the family of Ufton was always accepted as authentic by the Nottingham branch, and that Thomas their immediate ancestor was in other deeds styled of Ufton as well as of Madresfield, suggesting the idea that he may have been one and the same person with Thomas Parkyns of Ufton, Robert who died in 1478.

"It may be remembered that John Parkyns had in 1390 acquired a small property in Madresfield, and if, as there seems no reasonable doubt, he was the same as John, the grandfather of Thomas of Ufton, he (Thomas) inheriting his grandfather's estate would be rightly styled of Ufton in Berkshire and of Madresfield in Worcestershire . . . the Worcestershire pedigree here gives the clue that the same Thomas had other sons, and that to his next son he bequeathed his land in Madresfield, who thereupon became the founder of another branch of the family."

From this same book we also learn that Thomas Parkyns(brother of John and William and Humphrey, married Ellen, sister of John Tomkins of Nappond, Herefordshire. Their son William Parkyns of Madresfield married Joan, daughter of ________ Reade of near Coventry. They had a son Richard Parkyns who was granted the crest and to whom the arms were confirmed.

"In 1390 John Parkyns, as we learn from the Madresfield Court Roll (before referred to) had held one messuage and 18 acres of land there, for which he did homage to the lady of the manor, Johanna Bracey, showing that he had then only recently acquired the property.

"William Parkyns, the sone of John, was the first of the family who was Lord of Ufton, Robert. From 1411 he is named in the dioceson registry as patron of the living, etc. He was attached to the service of Humphrey Plantagenet, Duke of Gloucester as baillious, or agent. Thomas Parkyns, Armiger, etc. . . . John Perkins son of Thomas, was 28 years old when he inherited his father's manor of Ufton Robert (this would place time of his birth as 1450).

Note: The above three paragraphs were taken from pages 39, 42, 43, and 226 of the aforementioned book.

The line of descent continues, taken from Lichfield Wills and Hillmorton Parish Register, Warwickshire p. 78 of *The Perkins Family in Ye Olden Times,* by Mansfield Parkyns, Esq. of Woodborough Hall, Nottinghamshire, Eng. edited by D. W. Perkins, Utica, N.Y., U. S. A., No. CS 429.P48 (1916) Library of Congress, Washington, D. C.

VI. WILLIAM PERKINS

WILLIAM PERKINS was of Warwickshire, 1495. He married and had the following sons:

1. John
2. THOMAS PERKINS, of Hillmorton, d. 1528; m. Alys, who died 1538
3. William Perkins, of Marston, Parish of Buckington, d. 1536; m. Agnes, had 2 sons: John and Thomas

VII. THOMAS PERKINS

THOMAS PERKINS of Hillmorton, died in 1528. He married Alys who died in 1538. (Hillmorton is near Rugby.)

VIII. HENRY PERKINS (d. 1547)

IX. THOMAS PERKINS

THOMAS PERKINS died in 1592. He married ALICE KEBBLE.

X. HENRY PERKINS (d. 1609)

XI. JOHN PERKINS

JOHN PERKINS was baptized December 23, 1583, in Hillmorton, Co. Warwickshire, England. He emigrated Dec. 1, 1630, and arrived in New England Feb. 5, 1630/31. He died in 1654 at Ipswich, Massachusetts. On October 9, 1608, he married JUDITH, daughter of Michael Gater. She died at Ipswich, Mass.

Children of John and Judith Perkins:

1. John, bp. Nov. 8, 1609, Hillmorton, Warwickshire, Eng., came to New England with parents
2. Elizabeth, bp. Mar. 23, 1611, Hillmorton, Warwickshire, Eng., came to N. E. with parents; m. Wm. Sargent
3. Mary, bp. Sept. 3, 1615, Hillmorton, Warwickshire, Eng., came to N. E. with parents; m. 1636 prob. Thomas Bradbury
4. Ann, bp. Sept. 5, 1617, Hillmorton, Warwickshire, Eng., author Savage does not say she came to N. E.; is not named in father's will
5. THOMAS, bp. April 28, 1622, married and was a Deacon; of Ipswich in 1648; had a daughter Judith b. Jan. 28, 1658; settled in Topsfield in that part formerly Ipswich; d. May 7, 1686; his will dated Dec. 11 preceding, probated Sept. following, leaving a large estate. No wife mentionel which indicates she pre-deceased her husband. Dau. Judith, b. Jan. 28, 1658; m. Dec. 16, 1673, NATHANIEL BROWN, b. 1652. (See p. 111).

✓ 6. Jacob Perkins, bp. Sept, 12, 1624, Hillmorton, Warwick, Eng.
7. Lydia Perkins, bp. June 3, 1632, Boston, Mass.

The N. E. Gen. & Hist. Reg. Vol. 3, p. 408, concerning marriages and deaths, states: "Jacob Perkins (the well-known inventor) Regents Square, London, died at the home of his son July 30, aged 83 yrs, 21 days. He was born in Newburyport. He was a descendant of that branch of the Perkins family early seated at Ipswich. His emigrant ancestor was named John, born at ~~Newent Co. of Gloucester~~, England, in 1590. He came with his family to New England in 1631 in the same ship which brought over Roger Williams . . . His wife's name was Judith and names of the children were: John, Thomas, Elizabeth, Anna, Lydia, and Jacob, all born between 1613 and 1625, probably."

error

PERKIN'S ARMS: or, a fesse dancette between 10 billets ermine. Crest: pinecone ppr. (proper) (Pineapple seems to be correct.) Given as arms of John Perkins b. 1590, freeman of Newent, Glo. 1630, settled in Ipswich, Mass. 1654.

ROLL OF ARMS #223 PERKINS, Edmund of Boston before 1677, Arms: gold billety and a dancee counter-ermine. Crest: pineapple with stalk and leaves, proper.

References

Genealogical Dictionary of New England Families by Savage
Matthews' American Armoury and Blue Book, 1908, London, England
New England Hist. & Gen. Reg. V. 106, Oct. 1952, p. 261

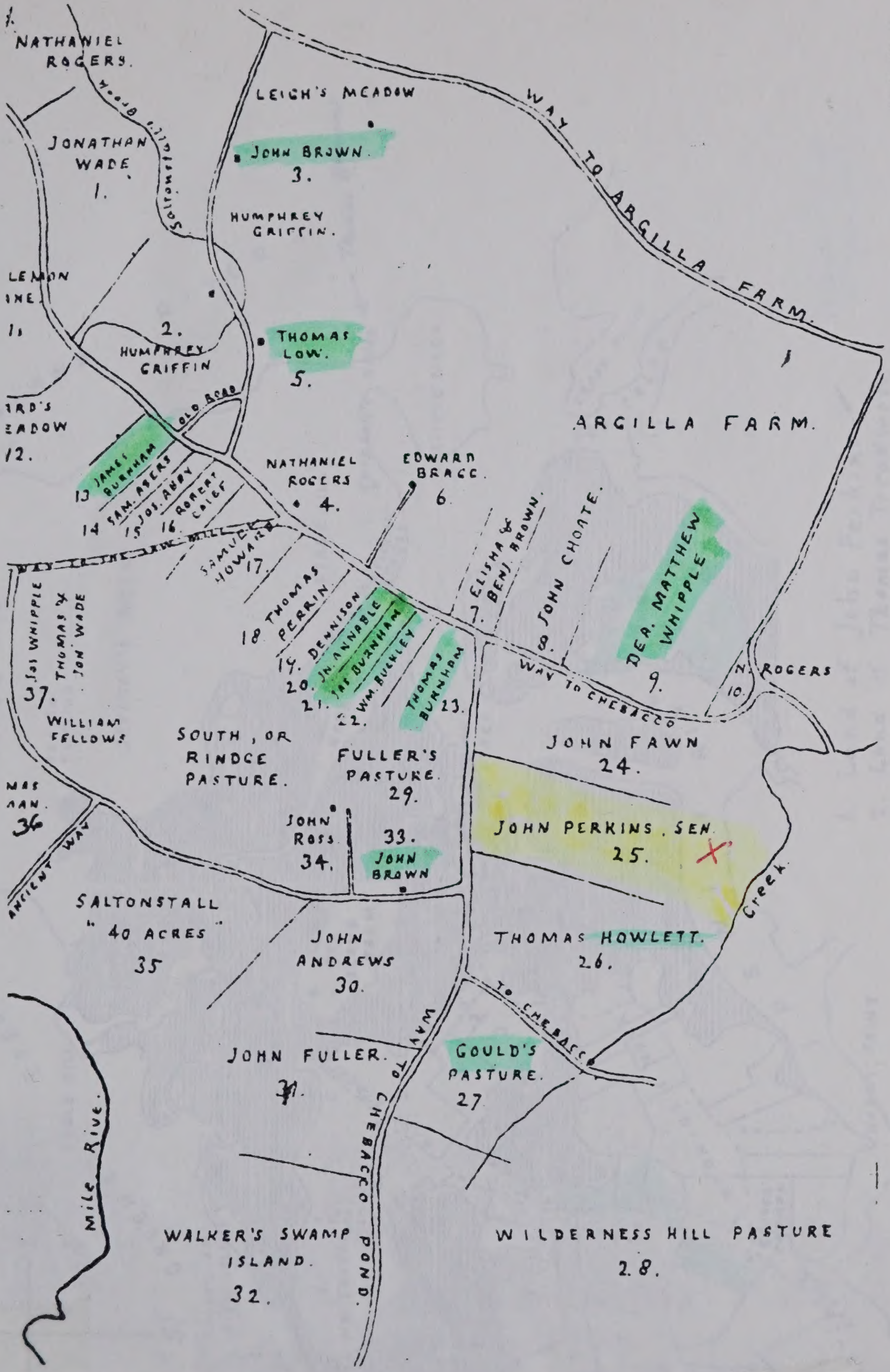
Note: The editor states the Hillmorton Register begins with the year 1534. All dates previous to that (in the early part of this pedigree) have been knitted together from the Lichfield wills. The records of John Perkins, immigrant to New England and his family are taken from the register verbatim.

XII THOMAS PERKINS

Error

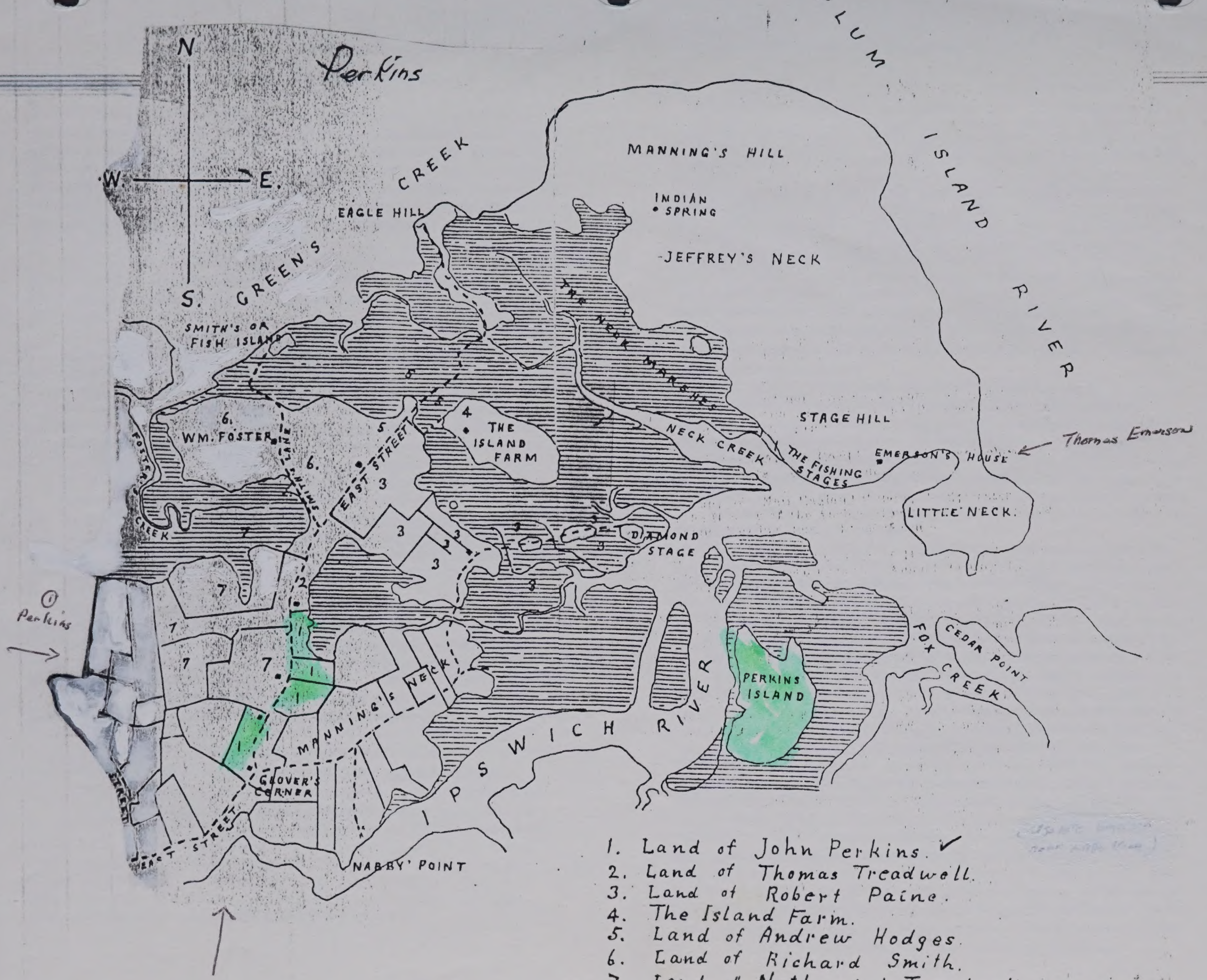
THOMAS PERKINS, bp. April 28, 1622, d. May 7, 1686; m. circa 1650, PHEBE GOULD, daughter of Zaccheus and Phebe ____ Gould, b. 1630/31, County Bucks, England. Their daughter, JUDITH PERKINS, b. c. 1655, m. Dec. 16, 1673, Nathaniel Brown and they became the parents of Hannah Brown, who m. 1708 Edward Cogswell. (See pages 66, 78, 97, 102.)

No! Jacob was her father.



From: Essex Historical Collections Series

The narrative is about John Perkins' farm at Ipswich - Chebacco Parish. Many families shown on the map married into the family. Direct ancestors of ours were Deacon Matthew Whipple, Thomas & James Burnham, Zacheus Gould, John Brown, and Thomas Low.



1. Land of John Perkins. ✓
2. Land of Thomas Treadwell.
3. Land of Robert Paine.
4. The Island Farm.
5. Land of Andrew Hodges.
6. Land of Richard Smith.
7. Land of Nathaniel Treadwell

The John Perkins Farm.

No. 1.

1634.

> "Att a meeting houlden in November [ ] was consented and agreed unto the length [ ] of Ipswitch should extend west ward unto [ ] buryinge place and Eastward unto a Cove of the River unto the plantinge ground of John Pirkeings the Elder."

Thus begins the Town Record, written in the month of November, 1634. John Perkins Sen., who enjoys the distinction of being the first man, whose name appears in the Record, was already comfortably established in his home on the corner of East Street and the way to the Neck, where Mr. James S. Glover now resides. Though the entry of the grant was not made until a later date, he had already received an allotment of ten acres, "upon part whereof he hath built a house"; six acres of meadow and six acres of upland joining his houselot, and forty acres of land in "Cheboky." He soon exchanged this lot with Thomas Howlett for some land by the riverside, near his dwelling.

He was now about forty-four years old and was recognized as a citizen of sterling worth. The most delicate and pressing matter that engaged the little group of settlers was the assignment of lands, their definite location, and orderly entry in the public record book. It is no small compliment to Mr. Perkins that the order was adopted in 1634:

> "Whosoever will have his lott entered into the records of the Towne shall bring unto the officer in that behalf a certificate under the hands of Henry Short John Pirkins Robert Mussey John Gadge or the greatest pt of them w^{ch} shall bee a warrant unto the officer in that beehalf to enter and record the same."

The Town in its corporate capacity voted the land grants, but the "lot-layers" had the responsible task of laying out the grants and locating the metes and bounds. There was especial fitness in assigning a part in this work to him. The great area of level and fertile soil, fringed with a vast expanse of salt marsh and thatch banks, called variously, "the Neck at the East end of the Town," and "this Neck of Land the Town Standeth," but a little later by common consent, "John Mannings Neck" lay at his door, and the great area still known as the "Common Fields" was near at hand. Though the Town voted on January 5, 1634-5, that the land now known as Great Neck or Jeffrey's Neck, "shall remayn for comon use unto the Towne forever," no other reservation was made in this vicinity and a great number of citizens received grants of about six acres of upland, with

allotments in the marsh lands in this section. The lot layer was a busy man and very important functionary in those days. He was chosen one of the "seven men," as the Selectmen were then called, in Feb. 1636-7. His associates were Mr. Winthrop, Mr. Simon Bradstreet, Mr. Daniel Denison, John Gage, Jonathan Wade, and Goodman Thomas Scott.

To define the limit between the land in the Town proper held in severalty by the citizens from the more remote fields and farms, which were probably unfenced, a fence was ordered built in January, 1637-8, when the Town voted:

> "that a general fence shall be made from the end of the Town to Egypt River with a sufficient fence and also from the East end of the Towne in the way to Jeffries Neck from the fence of John Perkins to the end of a creek in the marsh near land of Wry Foster to be done at the charge of all those that have land within the said cumpass and by them to be maintained."

Mr. Foster's land is probably included in the farm now owned by Mr. Hudgens, and the fence thus ordered extended along the whole western side of the highway. No doubt there were division walls and fences already built on the eastern side and to some extent on Manning's Neck, but these were matters of private concern, which each man settled to suit himself and his neighbor. The common fence was built and maintained at the command of the Town.

In March, 1650, John Perkins, Sen., being about sixty years of age, was freed from ordinary training by permission of the Quarter Sessions Court. No doubt he was feeling physically weak as he died in the year 1654. His will is preserved in the Registry of Probate, but the fading of the ink and the extraordinary chirography of William Bartholomew, the Town Clerk, who drew the will, a penman of the old school, render it almost illegible in parts. It was signed, 28th, 1 mo., 1654, but either from illness or lack of education, he could only make his mark. It was proved on the 26th of September of the same year.

He bequeathed to his wife, Judith, the usual privileges of life interest in his estate, which were accorded widows; to his son John, the unborn foal of his young mare and one ewe after shearing time; to his son, Thomas, to his daughter, Elizabeth Sargeant, wife of William Sargeant, his daughter, Mary Bradbury, wife of Thomas of Salisbury, his daughter Lidia Bennett, wife of Henry Bennett, each a cow and a heifer, and to his grandson, Thomas Bradbury, one ewe. Mrs. Mary Bradbury, then living in Salisbury, was accused of witchcraft in her eightieth year and condemned to death, but she was finally acquitted.[1] To his son Jacob, born in the year, 1624, he gave all his landed estate, with full possession after the decease of his wife.

The inventory taken 7 mo., 26th, 1654, is interesting from its early date, and the glimpses it gives of the possessions of an ancient Ipswich

---

[1] A Short History of the Salem Village Witchcraft Trials. M. V. B. Perley p. 26.

farmer. It included the dwelling, barn and out houses, 8 acres about the house, 12 acres of "improved land,'' and some 40 acres more of upland and marsh, a mare with foal, six cows, a steer and four yearling heifers, a dozen ewes and lambs and a yearling wether. The furnishings were very meagre, one feather bed with bedstead and furniture, one coverlid and other small items, several kettles, pots and dishes in the kitchen, and ten pounds sterling in money. The land lay on both sides the road and in Manning's Neck.

Jacob Perkins met with a great loss when his house burned to the ground, early in August, 1668. Mehitable Brabrook, aged about sixteen years, the house servant, was summoned before Gen. Daniel Denison, Justice of the Court.

> "This examinator saith that on Thursday last was seven night her master Jacob Perkins and his wife being gone to the Town she was left at home alone about two or three o'clock in the afternoon she was taking tobacco in a pipe and gott upon the oven on the outside and backside of the house (to look if there were any hogs in the corn) and she layd her right hand upon the thatch of the house (to stay herself) and with her left hand knocked out her pipe over right arm upon the thatch on the eaves of the house (not thinking there had been any fire in the pipe) and imediately went down into the cornfield to drive out the hogs she saw.''

Looking back she saw smoke rising from the roof and ran to tell the wife of their neighbor, Abraham Perkins. They rushed back together and Mehitable ran for a bucket of water, "but before I could get out of the house the thatch flamed and for want of ladders and help being round the house was burned down.''

Goodwife Perkins testified that she ran into both the rooms of the house and looked up both the chimneys. She also looked up into the chamber "through the boards that lay very open up towards that side where the smoke was on the outside.'' She saw no flame but was unable to put out the burning thatch on the roof.

Evidently by accident or with malice prepense the serving maid was responsible, and the testimony of John Williston, aged twenty, was not helpful to her:

> "that as they were going into the meadow to make hay Mehitable told him her mistress was angry and she had fixed her by putting a great toad into her kettle of milk.''

The Court sentenced her "on suspicion of fireing ye house,'' to be severely whipped, and pay £40 damage to Jacob Perkins and costs and fees of court. Notwithstanding the suggestive revelations of the young maid's temperament, which the public trial brought to light, she was sought in marriage in the following year by John Downing. They were wedded on Nov. 2, 1669, and her father, Richard, as a marriage settlement, gave the bride and her husband half his farm.

Apart from the tale of the maid's misdoings, valuable information is afforded as to the architecture of the dwelling. Though Jacob Perkins and his father before him were men of good estate, he was content to live in a two-room house, with a great chimney at each end, probably of wood, daubed with clay, with a loft over head floored so loosely that one could look up into it from below, and a thatch roof. At the same time John Whipple, the elder, was living in the western half of the house, now owned by the Historical Society, in regal luxury compared with the primitive simplicity of the Perkins dwelling.

In 1671, the new house was struck by lightning on Sunday, "while many people were gathered there to repeat the sermon, when he and many others were struck down, and had his waistcoat pierced with many small holes like gooseshot and was beaten down as if he had been dead for the present.''

Jacob Perkins Senior, had a considerable family.

JACOB, who married Elizabeth, daughter of John Sparks, the famous inn-keeper of the time, Dec. 25, 1684. Her sister, Rose, married Benjamin Newman, a near neighbor.

MATTHEW, who married Esther, daughter of Lieut. Thomas Burnham, afterwards known as Captain, born, Nov. 11, 1670.

JOHN
ELIZABETH
JUDITH
MARY
HANNAH

Mr. Nathaniel Brown

JOSEPH, son of Sargeant Jacob, born June 21, 1674.

JABEZ, born May 15, 1677.

On March 23, 1685, (8:51) Jacob Perkins, "aged about 61,'' as the deed recites, conveyed to his son, Jacob Tertius, in consideration of his marriage with John Sparks's daughter, three quarters of an acre out of his homestead, "4 and 20 rods to set his house on, out of my orchard, and 4 score and 16 rods above my orchard,'' with two acres of tillage land in Manning's Neck, the pasturing of two cows in his pasture, and at his decease, a fourth part of all his lands, including that already given him. This small lot was west of the dwelling, fronting on East St.

On the same day, (7:147) he conveyed to his son Matthew, "by agreement of marriage with Lieut. Burnam's daughter,'' a house and three-fourths acre of land, "within y^{e} gate that the highway leads to Jeffries Neck,'' bounded by the same east, and his land north and south, with a similar gift of two acres pasturage, and an eventual quarter of his whole estate. He also gave a portion to his son, John, the deed of which is not recorded.

On March 13, 1692-3 (9:271) Jacob Perkins, now grown old, and unable to manage his estate as formerly, and having given to his sons, John, Jacob and Matthew, such part of his land etc., and also to pay his three daughters, Elizabeth, Judith and Mary, their portions, that they might be debarred from claims upon the rest of his estate belonging to the rest of his children, Joseph, Jabez and Hannah, made an indenture with his sons, Jacob and Matthew, that they should have the other half of his real estate, paying an annual stipend to himself and wife, including his dwelling, except what was reserved to his wife before marriage, the great pasture on the east side of the road to Jeffrey's Neck, his land in Manning's Neck, "his upland, meadow and marsh lying below the field adjoining to said Mannings field on yᵉ N. W. side, the Town River S. E. and Mr. Robert Paines N. E.," with upland and marsh at Grape Island.

The sons, Jacob and Matthew, divided the property. By a deed drawn March 20, 1693-4 (13:108), Jacob, a tailor, received as his portion, "the mansion, orchard, garden, etc.," and the southerly side of the land extending to a division fence between Jacob and Matthew, "except the least barn," which fell to Matthew, the south end of the great pasture, and half the Manning's Neck lands. Matthew, a weaver by trade, received the homestead north of the division fence, the north end of the pasture with all the marsh ground adjoining thereto, bounded by Nathaniel Treadwell's land, and half the Manning's Neck land. Jacob Perkins Sen. made no will. His inventory dated Feb. 9, 1699 (Pro. Rec. 307:296) indicates that his death occurred about this time.

Jacob Perkins, Tertius, as he has been styled though he was the son of Jacob, Senior, married Elizabeth Sparks, Dec. 25, 1684. Their children were:

Jacob, born Feb. 15, 1685.
John, born Sept. 2, 1687.
Elizabeth, born March 18, 1691, who married William Leatherland, pub. Oct. 23, 1708.

Elizabeth, the wife of Jacob, died April 10, 1692, and he married again soon after, choosing his neighbor, Sarah Treadwell, daughter of Thomas Treadwell of the Island farm. Their children were:

Elisha,
Sarah, born Dec. 26, 1696.
Mary, born Nov. 26, 1698.
Hannah, born July 24, 1701.
Judith, baptized. Nov. 4, 1705.

Jacob Perkins died Nov. 12, 1705, in his 44th year. In his will, signed Nov. 10, 1705, he bequeathed to his children by the earlier marriage, John, Jacob and Elizabeth, his new house with an acre of land adjoining, his new barn at the upper end of his pasture, with three acres adjoining, four acres of plow land in Manning's Neck, etc.; "but if Jacob and John pay to my daughter, Elizabeth, £40 in money at the age of eighteen, they shall enjoy all these lands and buildings. If not, I constitute my two loving brothers, Matthew Perkins and Thomas Treadwell, to lay out a third to my daughter, Elizabeth."

All the rest of the estate was given to his loving wife, Sarah, and her children, Elisha, Sarah, Mary, Hannah and Judith. "My son, Elisha, paying out of the estate £30 apiece to his four sisters, shall enjoy all housing and land." His wife, Sarah, was made executrix.

His inventory (309:2) included, beside the houses and lands, 6 oxen, 4 cows, 10 young cattle, 1 horse, 56 sheep, 4 swine, and the unusual items in ancient inventories, 4 stock of bees, 12 dung hill fowls. Jacob Perkins, Jr., with his wife, Lydia, then residents of Cape Natuck, (Neddick), Maine, conveyed his third in the property, bequeathed to Jacob, John and Elizabeth, to Thomas Treadwell, Jr., March 24, 1707-8 (21:153). John Perkins, cordwainer, then of Norwich, Conn, conveyed his interest, Oct. 18, 1708 (22:40).

William Leatherland, fisherman, and Elizabeth, his wife, daughter of Jacob Perkins, acknowledged receipt of £40 from her brothers Jacob and John and quit claimed interest March 18, 1708-9 (311:108)

Elisha Perkins, son of Jacob, succeeded therefore to the ownership of the homestead and the land adjoining, and the pasture and tillage land in Manning's Neck. He married his neighbor and playmate, Abigail Newmarch, int. August 4, 1722. Their children were:

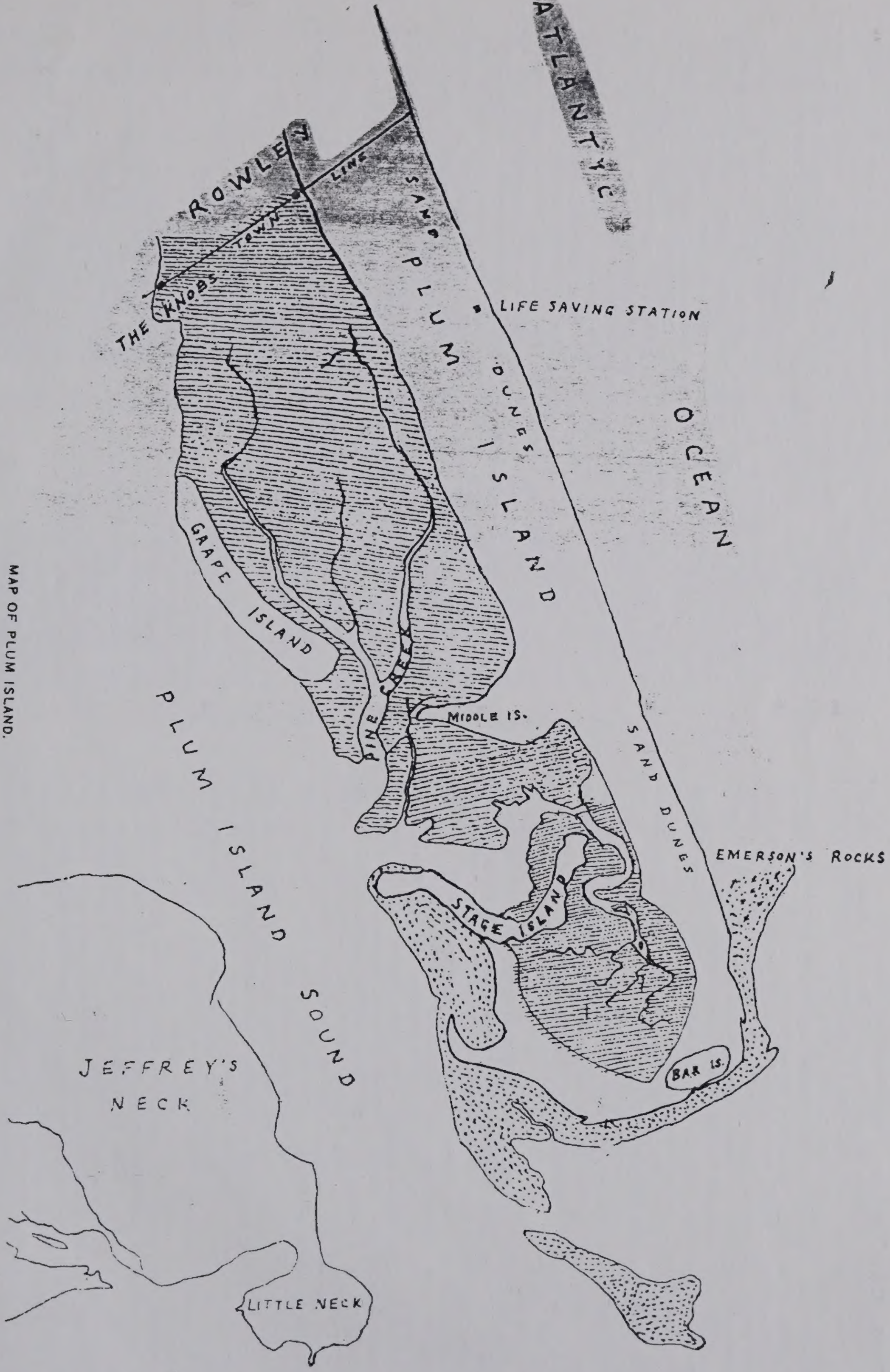
Elisha, baptized May 28, 1727. John Treadwell was appointed his guardian, as a person non-compos mentis, May 23, 1759. (Pro. Rec. 336:244.)

Abigail, baptized Feb. 8, 1735. Married 1st Elisha Gould, intention July 26, 1755. Their children were: Abigail, baptized June 6, 1756, Elisha Perkins, son posthumous, baptized Nov. 13, 1757; married 2nd Richard Holland of Gloucester, intention May 2, 1767.

On Feb. 13, 1716, probably very soon after he became of age, Elisha and his mother sold Arthur Abbott, yeoman, a lot 4 rods square at the N. E. corner of the homestead, abutting on land of his uncle, Capt. Matthew Perkins, and fronting on the road to Jeffrey's Neck. (34:16). Abbott built a house on the lot, but sold house and lot back to Elisha, who then sold the house with a half acre of land, bounded N. W. by Andrew Burley, to Solomon Lakeman, fisherman, Aug. 14, 1724. (44:35).

Elisha and his mother sold Lakeman a strip of the Perkins orchard 2½ rods wide, the whole depth of the lot, about a third of an acre, with a privilege of a cartway in at the bars for his convenience to a barn, if he should erect one. December 9, 1732 (65:177).

Solomon Lakeman sold the house and land, now about ¾ of an acre, to his brother, Archelaus Lakeman, Jan. 20, 1734 (69:16), and his widow conveyed half the house and land to Solomon Lakeman, Jr., June 4, 1747 (101:236). He secured the other half and deeded the whole to Moses Wells, Jr., mariner, Feb. 19, 1756 (101:236). John Wells and others sold the homestead to Abner Harris, May 29, 1777 (142:224), and his executor to Edward Martin, June 9, 1785 (143:187), who conveyed it to



MAP OF PLUM ISLAND.

Plum Island - from Ipswich Historical Soc.
Publication 22

1665

ion was based, was characteristic of the spirit of the time. It was a money qualification, pure and simple, exception being made only for the magistrates, ministers, and the school master.

The generall Towne meeting the 14th of Feb. 1664
1. Voted that Plumbe Iland, Hogg Iland and Castle Neck be devyded to such as have the right to commons acording to law acording to the pportion of foure six and eight.
2. All that doe not exceed six shillings eight pence their pson and estate in a single country rate, to be of the first devision of 4th all them that exceed not sixteen shillings to be of the second sort of sixth. All those that exceed sixteene shillings in a single Country rate together with our Maiestrates, Elders, Mr. John Rogers and Mr. Thomas Andrews to be of the highest devision of 8th.
3. John Gage was voted and granted to be one of them of the middle number
4. Voted that it be left to the Selectmen to have those places viewed messered and devyded

The Selectmen chosen at that meeting were Mr. Samuell Symonds, Major Gen'll Denison, Mr. John Appleton, Cornett Whipple, Ensigne French, John Dane, Deacon Will. Goodhue.

April 10:1665
The Selectmen according to the town order for the devission of Plum Island, Castle Neck and Hog Island taking a survey of the Inhabitants which according to law and the s^{d} order have right to any share of the Common Lands and considering also the estates of the Inhabitants, as valued in the last Country rate according to the sd order; doe find two hundred and three reckoned and allowed Inhabitants, that may have right to the Comons, whose names or the names of their tenants at present inhabiting their Lands or Houses are registered on a paper. Whereof according to the order of the Towne, eight and twenty are to have a double share, and seaventie to have a share and a halfe, and one hundred and five have a single share, so that the whole number of single shares are two hundred and sixty six.

And having caused the sd Plum Island and Castle Neck and Hog Island to be surveyed and measured, they have found in the whole about eight hundred acres of marsh and upland beside beaches and gall^{d} hills, so that the single share will be three acres, the share and halfe, four acres and a halfe, the double share six acres.

Which they have ordered to be layd out in this manner viz. one double share, next two devisions of a share and halfe, and then three single shares, and so to begin again, one double share, two devisions of a share and a halfe and then three single shares, and so on till all the double shares be run out and then there will remain fourteen devisions of a share and a halfe and twenty one single shares, which shall be laid out in this manner, namely, one devision of a share and a halfe and one single share, till all the share and half devisions be layd out and the seaven remaining single shares to be layd out one after the other.

Which divisions being layd out as above sd, It is ordered they shall be shared by lott in this manner, there shall be eight and twenty lotts for the deviding of the double shares, and seaventy lotts to be putt by themselves for the dividing of the share and halfe divisions, and one hundred and five lotts putt by themselves for the dividing the single shares.

And it is agreed that the beginning of these divisions shall be at the upper end of Plum Island next Rowley and so downwards to the Barr, and if the sd share cannot be layd conveniently all the breadth of the island then the beginning shall be next the Beach, and so from the upper end next Rowley down to the Barr, and then begin at the upper end and so downward and so again if the shares shall be layd in three ranges.

The next shall be layd out shall be at Castle Neck, beginning at the hill and so downward to Wigwam Hill and the long marsh, and if it be convenient to lay the shares in two ranges, the first shall be next the Pines and the second to begin next the hill and so downward to the River. The last shall be at Hog Island beginning at the Westerly end and so to the East side thereof and if it be most convenient to be layd in two ranges, the first shall be the Southerly side, and then to begin again at the Westerly end and to divide the Northerly side of the sd Island.

And it is further agreed that Cornet Whipple Robert Lord, John Leighton and Thomas Lovel shall take the first opportunity to lay out the sd shares in manner aforesaid, which having done and made knowne to the Selectmen, the Inhabitants shall forthwith be summoned to meet to take up their shares by lott as afores^{d}. And then those that are above appointed to lay out the divisions shall goe upon a day appointed and share to every inhabitant, his share or division and shall deliver unto him or them the possession thereof, he or they, then paying for the laying out, so much as shall be appointed by the Selectmen. And no Inhabitant shall claim right or propriety in or to any share or devision of the Land aforesd before he has payd for the charge of dividing, but the right of such share shall be and remain in the Town to be disposed of as they shall see cause.

A List of the Inhabitants that have shares in Plum Island, Castle Neck and Hog Island (together with their shares) according to the Towne order the 14 of Feb. '64.

DOUBLE SHARES

✓ Mr. Samuel Symonds	26	Thomas Wells	17
Major Denison	12	✓ Will^{m} Cogswell	16
Mr. Wade	25	John Proctor Sen.	3
Capt. Appleton	20	– Georg Gittins	9
Leift. Appleton	23	Richard Jacob	13
Mr. Richard Hubbard	10	Edward Coborne	
Mr. Jo: Paine	18	Mr. Saltonstall's farme	27
Mr. Cobbet	22	– Elder Jo: Whipple	5
Mr. Will^{m} Hubbard	7	Will^{m} Pritchett	
Mr. John Rogers	6	Richard Jacob's farm	
Mr. Tredwell	14	one half to ye Widdow Roberts	1
✓ Mr. Booreman	4	John Airs. Mr. Norton's farms	
Thos: Bishop	8	Mr. Bar	25
Will^{m} Goodhue	2	– Mr. Epes	24
– Mr. Thomas Andrews	28	The Mil and House	21
✓ Thomas Burnam	11	Elder Paine	19

(✓ = our ancestors, – = our relatives)

SHARE AND A HALFE

✓ Symon Tuttle	8
Richard Shatswell	38
Robert Day	22
Thomas Hart Sen.	14
Edward Alline Mr. Paine's farm	17
Richard Kimbal	43
Mr. Willm Norton	18
John Wooddam	16
Samuel Varnham	24
Thomas Lovel	36
Nathaniel Piper	65
Mr. Wilson	20
Mr. Baker	54
Thomas Newman Sen.	23
Francis Wainwright	28
✓ Jacob Perkins	13
John Newmarsh	27
Richard Smith	12
✓ John Perkins	2
Sergt. Thos. Clarke	30
Robert Peirse	9
Thomas Knolton	4
Mr. Ezekiel Rogers	33
Reginald Foster	10
Daniel Warner	51
Ensign French	11
Edward Lummas	31
Cornet John Whipple	34
John Whipple Jun.	15
John Warner Elder Whipple's farm	1
Anthony Potter	40
✓ Robert Kinsman Jun.	42
John Leigh Sen.	21
John Dane	25
Nathaniel Emerson : farme	32

Henry Bennet	45
Symon Tompson	46
✓John Browne Sen.	7
John Fuller	6
Willm Fellows	58
Richard Brabrook Wid. Haffield's farme	56
Robert Crose	60
John Burnam	55
Cornelius Waldo ✓ Cogswel's farme	61
John Andrews	52
Willm Story	62
Edward Brag	29
✓Thomas Low Sen.	26
Robert Coborne	47
Nathaniel Adams	70
John Adams	41
Thomas Safford	37
John Kimball	48
Robert Wallis	66
Ensign Howlett	59
Allen Perly	50
James How Sen.	5
Georg Farrow	53
Jeremy Jewett	39
Nathaniel Elithrop	49
Moses Bradstreet	3
Twiford West	35
Mr. Samuel Rogers	60
Mr. John Denison	44
Thomas Kimbal	57
Aaron Pengry	67
Moses Pengry, Mr. Paine	64
Mr. Nathaniel Rogers	19
Samuel Pod	68
John Gage	63

SINGLE SHARES

Hanniel Bosworth	77
Thomas Smith	60
Caleb Kimbal	44
Marke Quilter	17
John Leedes, Jo: Kimbal	16
John Brewer	58
John Denison	91
Robert Whitman	33
Walter Roper	7
Georg Smith	10
Edward Chapman	5
Robert Lord Jun.	27
Andrew Peters	19
Robert Collins	43
John Caldwell	3

Mr. Russell	31
Joseph Browne	67
John Browne Jun.	30
Robert Low Sen.	98
John Edwards, Mr. Vincent	47
Michael Crecy	100
John Gaines	1
John Newman	46
Giles Birdley	105
Francis Jordan	102
Thomas Harris	6
James Chute	28
Obadiah Wood	92
John Kendricke	2

These with a ✓ mark are our ancestors in other lines.

Willm Buckley	65
Sam: Taylor	56
Willm Hodskin	66
Bennet Pulsifer	55
Thomas Lord	82
Robert Dutch	94
John Annable	8
Andrew Hodges	32
Jacob Foster	38
Job Bishop, Mr. Appleton	79
Samuel Graves	52
John Wiatt	51
John Pinder	37
John French	25
Willm White	63
Thomas Wilson	48
John Sparke, Thos: Bishop	74
Henry Archer, Mr. Symonds ✓ Thos. Wayte Osgood	18
Edmund Bridges	80
John Smith, Mr. Appleton	95
Widdow Quilter	34
Symon Stacey	40
Willm Gutterson	50
Thomas French	97
Joseph Whipple	42
John Safford	54
Jeremy Belcher	78
Samuel Younglove Sen.	26
Thomas Manning	62
Samuel Aires	39
Nathaniel Ross	64
Ezekiel Woodward	101
Joseph Reading	41
Samuel Hunt	45
Willm More	14
Usewel Wardwell	68
Daniel Hovey	6
✓ Thomas Emerson	107
Isaiah Wood	53
Robert Fitch	9
Widdow Lea	106
John Marshall, Brabrook	85
Willm Marshall, Scot	87
Thomas Stacey farme	21
✓ John Cogswel	12
John Knolton	15
Samuel Ingals	76
✓ Thomas Low Jun.	35
Daniel Davison, Hubbard	69
Alexander Tompson, Whipple	29
John Ross, Wardwell	103
Willm Reyner	104
Abram Foster	90
Isack Foster	57
Henry Batchelor	13

Reinold Foster Jun.	70
Thomas Varney	86
John Chote : Thos. Bishop	88
John Jewett	75
Willm Whitred, Jo. Perkins ✓	81
Nicolas Marrable	89
Currimacke	22
Joseph Goodhue	49
John Ringe, Brag	36
Willm Searle	96
Phineas Clarke Sen.	20
Samuel Younglove Jun.	11
Willm Merchant	23
Phillip Fowler	4
Robert Kinsman Sen.	84 ✓
Willm Fellows, Mr. Saltonstall	71
Thomas Whitred	24
Samuel Pod	73
Elder Paine's farme	93
John Leighton, Maxy Juett to have this	59
Ed Neland	83
James How Jr.	99
Widdow Metcalfe	
Thos. Metcalfe	
John Dane	
Serg. Jacobs' farme	
Jo. Newmarsh, for Hardy's house	
John Newman Jr. (ho. Rog Lancton)	
Neh Abbott — 3a. adj. Good How.	
Kilicres Ross, Mr. Symonds	
John Hassall	
Daniell Hovey	
Tho. Clarke, taner	
Corpll Andrews at Averill's Hill (✓)	
Ed Heard hath Archers	
Aron Pingry	
Sergt Tho: Waite	
Joseph Fellows hath Jo. Ayres	
John Gidding	
Thos. Gidding	
✓Thomas Burnam Jun. for Jr. Belcher's farme, 2 acres in lieu of single share	
Liberty for firewood . . . . and one cow	
John Knowlton	
Obadiah Bridges	
John Frurke?	
John Dutch	
Giles Cowes	
Sam Dutch	
John Grow	
Steeven Crose	

1681-2. 16 February.

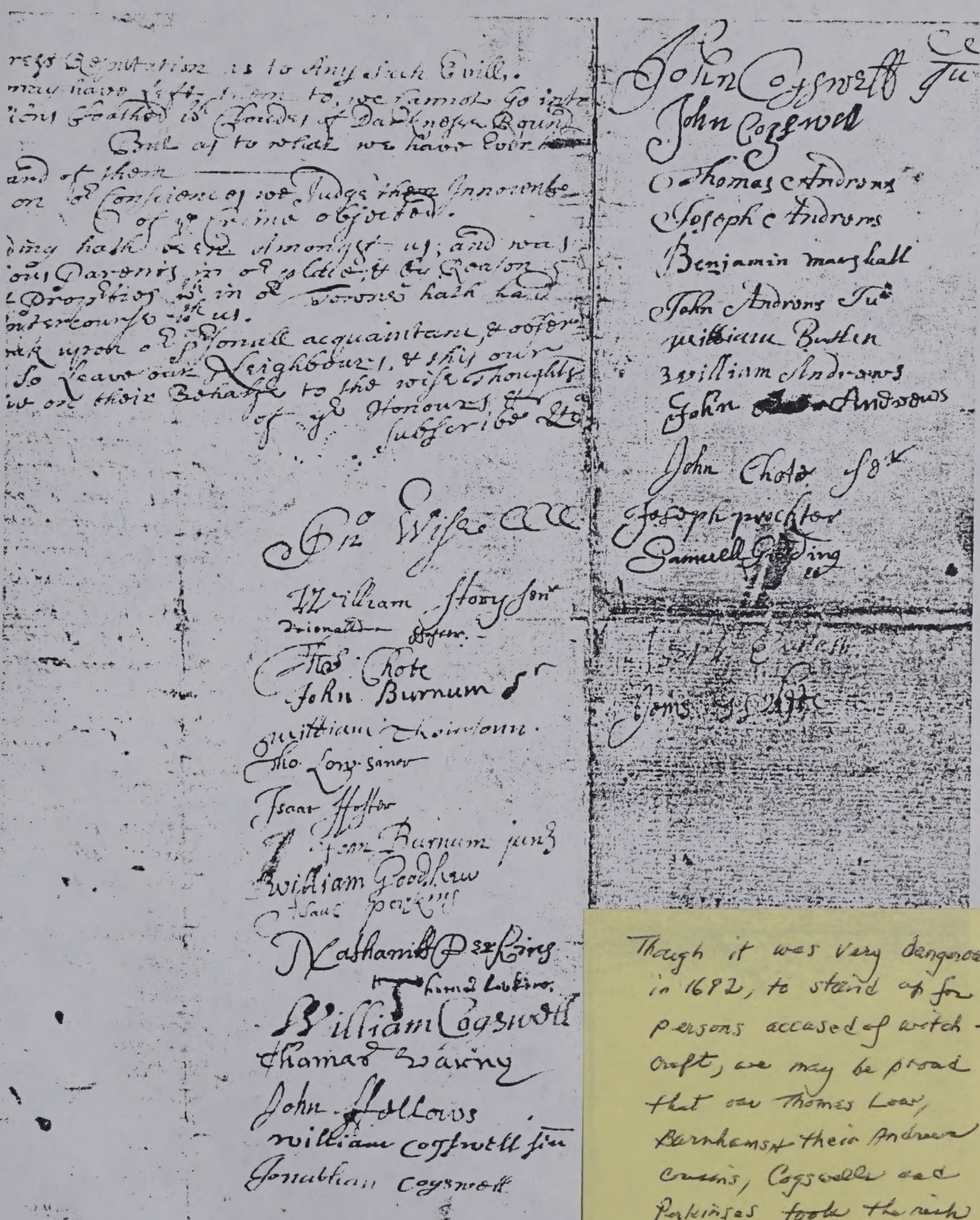
possession given, nor any survey made thereof, according as in the sajd grant is specified & required, whereby one of the great ends & designes of the charter granted to the council of Pljmouth, w^ch^ was for the planting & subduing of the land in these parts, is evaccuated. Vpon all which considerations, & particularly that of the nonvses, wee humbly suppose that Mr Masons grant (if any) is forfeited, & his title voyd in law.

Wherefore, wee humbly implore your majtjes favour, & that yor majtje uill gratiously please to interpose yor royall authority wth Mr Mason, that he may cease to molest & disturbe vs in our lawfull rights, or that yor majty uill direct the sajd Mr Mason to make his clajme in yor majtjes Courts of justice here established, according to the judgment (in that case) of the lords-cheife justices, approoved by the right honnorble the lords of the Comittee for Trade & Forreigne Plantations, and confirmed by yor sacred *sacred* majtje in council, on the 20th day of July, 1677, while the former agents of ys your majtjes colony were attending your royall pleasure in the affaires then vnder consideration. & your humble supplyants shall euer pray, &c̄.

Signd & subscribed by

JNo PICKARD,
JNo PERKINS, (Jr)
DANI: EPPS,
JONATH: WADE, Señ,
WILLJAM GOODHUE,
SAMUEL ROGERS,
SYMON STACJE,
THO: KNOULTON,
CALEB MOODY,
THO: FISKE,
PHILLIP NELSON,
THO: BURNAM,
EZEK: NORTHEN,
DANI: WARNER,
TRISTRAM COFFYN,
JOSEPH PIKE,
JNo PLUMER,
THO: FISKE,
THO: PATCH,
WILLJAM COGSWELL,
WALTER FAIREFEILD,
MOSES PENGREY, Señ,
HENRY SEWALL,
DANIEL PEARCE,
SAMUEL CORNING,
GEORG RAYMENT,
WILLJAM DODGE,
NICHO: NOYCE,
RICHARD DUMER,
SAMUEL PLATTS,
JNo WHIPLE,
JAMES STEEPHENS,
WILLJAM SERJANT,
WILLJAM HASKALL,
THOMAS MILLET,
JOHN HILL,
THOMAS RIGGS,
SAMUEL APLETON,
THO: COBBET, Señ,
JNo WOODBRIDGE,
WILLJAM HUBBARD,
JOHN ROGERS,
JNo HALE,
JNo APLETON,
HENRY WALKER.

1692



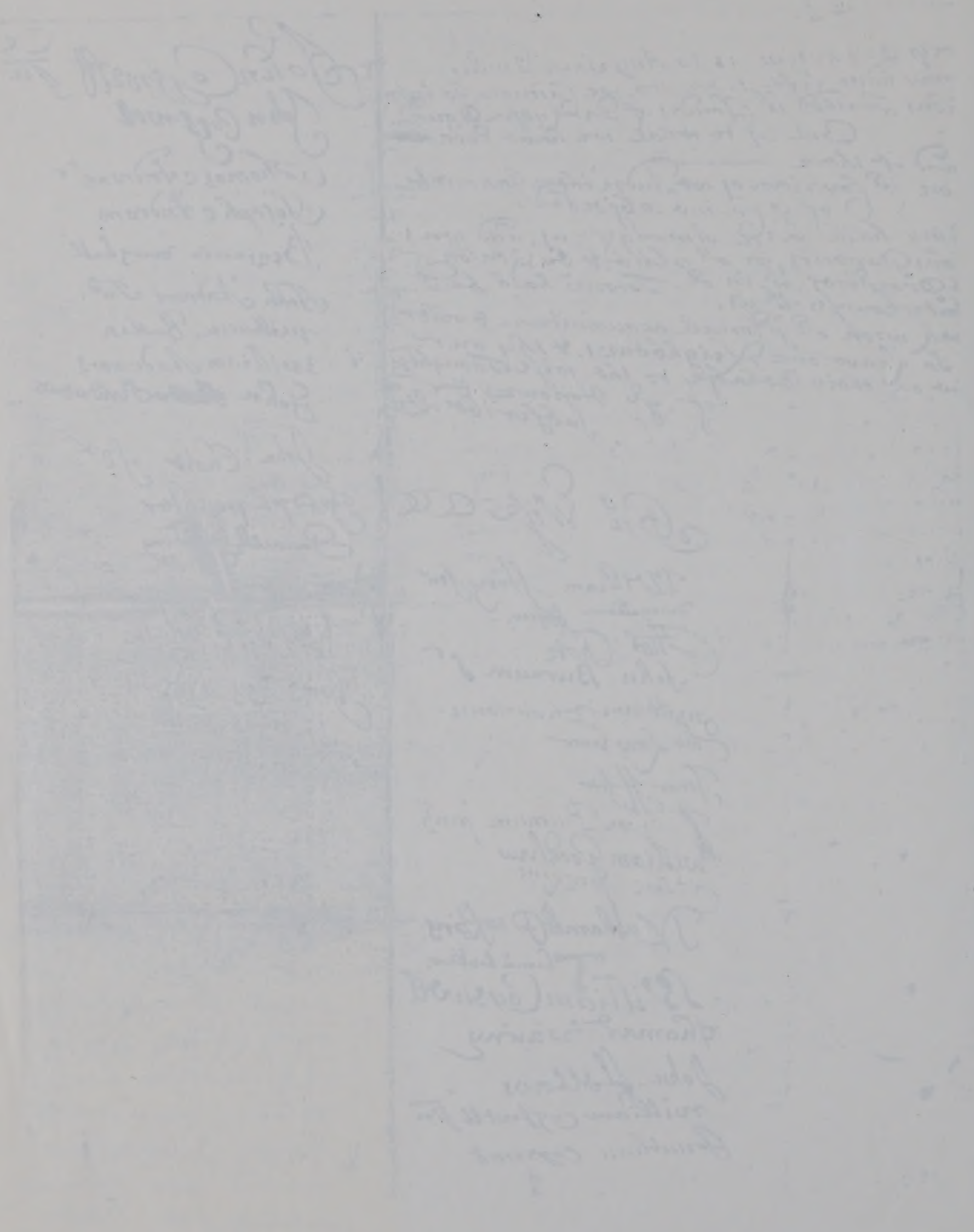
ress Reputation as to Any such Evill.
may have left them to, we cannot go into
ious Cloathed w^th Clouds, of Darkness Round
But as to what we have ever
and of them ——
on o^r Consciences we Judge them Innocent
of y^e crime objected.
ding hath bin amongst us; and was
ous Parents in o^r place, & by Reason
Propinquity w^ch in o^r Towne hath had
intercourse w^th us.
nk upon o^r p^rsonall acquaintance, & obser
So Leave our Neighbours, & this our
in o^r their Behalfe to the wise thoughts
of y^r Honours, & subscribe &c.

Jn^o Wise
William Story sen^r
Reinald Foster
Thos Chote
John Burnum s^r
William Thomson
Tho: Low senr
Isaac ffoster
Jacob Burnum jun^r
William Goodhew
Isaac Perkins
Nathaniell Perkins
Thomas Lovkin
William Cogswell
Thomas Varny
John ffellows
William Cogswell jun
Jonathan Cogswell

John Cogswell Ju
John Cogswell
Thomas Andrews
Joseph Andrews
Benjamin Marshall
John Andrews Ju^r
William Butler
William Andrews
John [illegible] Andrews
John Choate se^r
Joseph Prockter
Samuell Gidding
Joseph Eveleth
James White

Signatures, John Wise petition for the Proctors.
Courtesy of the Essex Institute, Salem, Mass.

Though it was very dangerous in 1692, to stand up for persons accused of witch-craft, we may be proud that our Thomas Low, Burnhams & their Andrews cousins, Cogswells and Perkinses took the risk on behalf of the Proctors



Signatures, John Wise petition for the Proctors.
Courtesy of the Essex Institute, Salem, Mass.

New England Historic Gen. Reg. - April 1885

Zaccheus Thomas
Re: Perkins & Flint

SOLDIERS IN KING PHILIP'S WAR.

Communicated by the Rev. George M. Bodge, of East Boston, Mass.

[Continued from page 78.]

No. X.

Capt. Joseph Gardiner and his Men.

JOSEPH GARDINER was the son of Thomas and Margaret Gardner of Salem. He married before August, 1656, Anne Downing, daughter of Emanuel Downing and niece of the first Gov. Winthrop (Register, xxxviii. 199).

He was a man of energy and ability, and held many positions of honor and importance in Salem. In May, 1672, he was appointed by the General Court of Massachusetts, lieutenant of the foot company under Capt. William Price of Salem (Mass. Colony Records, v. 517).

On May 12, 1675, the militia of Salem was divided into two companies by order of the Court, and by the same order the election of Joseph Gardiner as captain of the First Company in Salem was confirmed. When the expedition against Narraganset was organized, Capt. Gardiner was appointed, November 3, 1675, to command the company raised at Salem and the adjoining towns, and mustered his men, ninety-five strong, at Dedham Plain, December 10th, and marched with the army towards the rendezvous at Wickford. During the march several skirmishes took place, and Mr. Hubbard relates that some of Stone-wall-John's crew "met with some of Capt. Gardiner's men that were stragling about their own business contrary to order, and slew his Sergeant with one or two more." In "Capt. Oliver's Narrative" it is related that on this occasion the Indians "killed two Salem men within a mile of our quarters and wounded a third so that he is dead." The names of these are given in the list below. The fall of Capt. Gardiner is thus related in Church's "Entertaining History":

> "Mr. Church spying Capt. Gardner of Salem amidst the Wigwams in the East end of the Fort, made towards him; but on a sudden while they were looking each other in the face, Capt. Gardner settled down, Mr. Church stepped to him, and seeing the blood run down his cheek lifted up his cap and calling him by name, he looked up in his face but spake not a word, being mortally Shot through the head."

After the death of Capt. Gardiner, the command of his company fell upon his lieutenant, William Hathorn, under whom the men served during the campaign, until disbanded about February 7th to 10th. It is thus that the men were credited sometimes under Gardiner, sometimes Hathorn, occasionally both; the latter's name, signed to the voucher on "debenter" which each soldier presented to the paymaster, doubtless confused the clerks and caused this appearance of double command. Capt. Hathorn's subsequent career at the eastward will be given in its proper place.

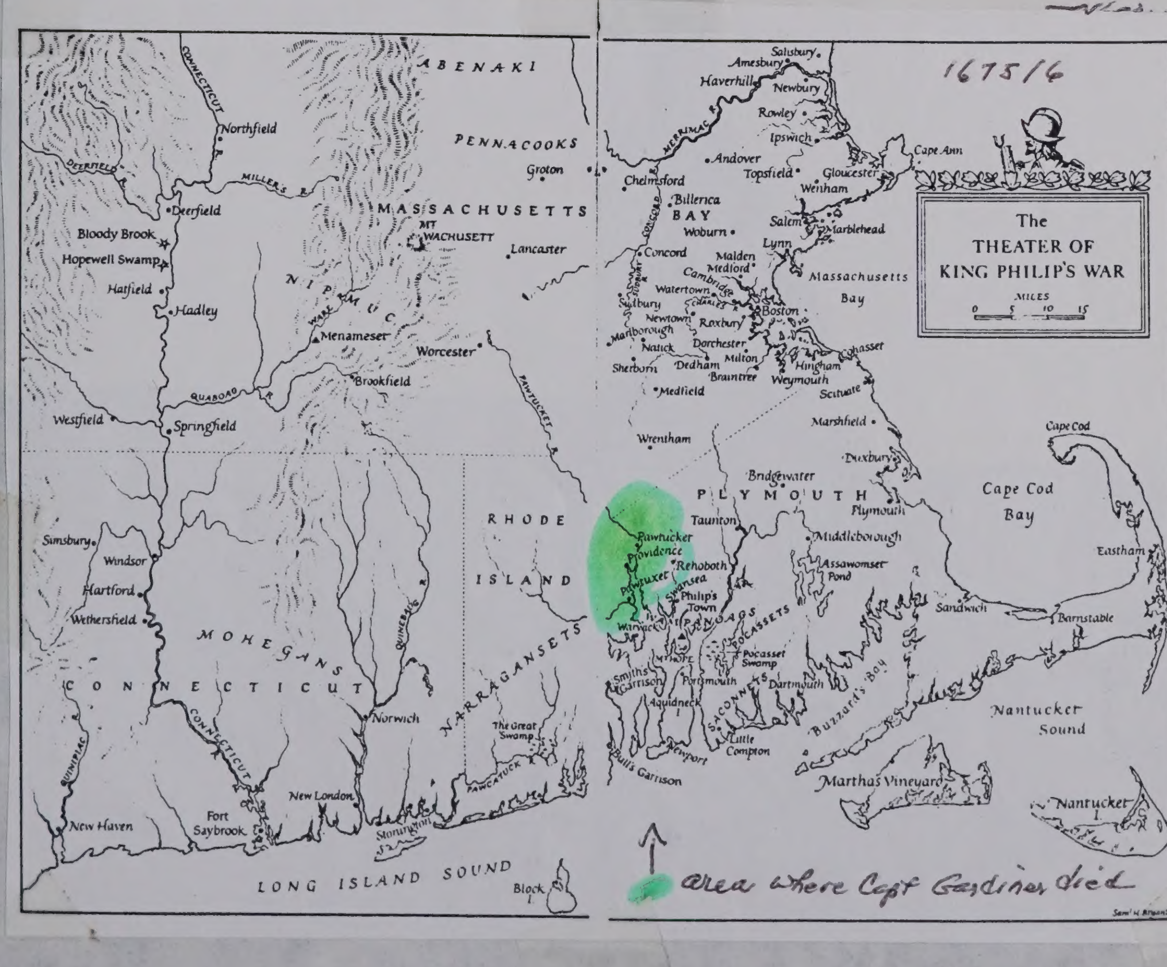
His widow, then aged about thirty-four, married June 6, 1676, Gov. Simon Bradstreet, whose age was about seventy-three. She died April 19, 1713, aged 79 (Reg. viii. 313; xiii. 234). Leaving no children, Capt. Gardiner's Narraganset claim fell to the oldest male heir of his eldest brother Thomas. This heir was Habakkuk Gardiner, son of the Captain's nephew Thomas, who in the list of claimants claims in the "right of his uncle, Capt. Joseph Gardiner."

Capt. Joseph Gardiner and his men.

February 29th 1675 & 6

	£	s.	d,
William Hathorne, *Capt.*	11	09	08
Samuel Gray	03	06	07
Peter Cary	02	14	00
Jeremiah Neall	04	18	00
Peter Cole	02	14	00
Joseph Price	01	13	00
Samuel Tarbox	03	09	03
Sam. Beadle	04	01	00
Benjamin Hooper	02	14	00
Rice Husband	02	14	00
Marke Stacy	02	14	00
William Hollis	02	18	00
John Clark	01	14	00
Thomas Weymouth	02	14	00
William Hutchins	02	07	00
Christopher Read	02	14	00
William Bassett	05	04	04
Samuel Graves	02	14	00
John Farrington	02	02	00
William Driver	02	14	00
Andrew Townsend	02	14	00
Jonathan Looke	02	14	00
Charles Knight	03	03	00
John Prince	03	15	08
Andrew Sargeant	02	19	02
Edward Haradine	02	19	02
John Trask	02	17	08
Joseph Houlton	02	14	00
Isaac Welman	02	14	00
William Pritchett	02	14	00
John Maston	02	14	00
Benjamin Chadwell	02	14	00
Stephen Greenleaf	01	10	00
Amos Gurdon	02	14	10
Peter Emons	02	14	10
William Webb	02	14	00
Robert Sibly	02	14	00
Andrew Ringe	05	08	00
Benjamin Langdon	03	00	00
James Briatly	04	01	00
Benjamin Webster	02	14	00
Freegrace Norton	03	12	00
Israel Thorne	02	14	00
Ezekiel Woodward	02	14	00
John Wheeler	05	08	00
William Wainwright	02	14	00

Map from Bodge's Book



Zaccheus was son of Thos. + Phebe. (Gould) Perkins

John Boutell	00	18	00
Jonathan Clark	02	14	00
William Williams	02	14	00
Samuel Rust	04	01	00
Benjamin Sweet, *Lieut.*	03	00	00
Henry Dow	01	16	00
Silvester Hayes	03	03	00
Thomas Tenney	02	14	00
Joseph Jewett	02	14	00
John Boynton	02	14	00
Peter Coomes	03	08	00
Jonathan Copp	01	04	00
John Mann	02	04	00
March 24th 1675–6			
John Vowden	02	14	00
Lawrence Majore	02	14	00
✓ Thomas Flynt	02	16	00
Thomas Greene	02	14	00
John Read	02	14	00
Adam Gold	02	14	00
✓ Zacheus Perkins	02	14	00
William Pabody	02	14	00
Joseph Gardiner, *Capt.*	05	03	00
James Fry	02	14	00
Leonard Toser	02	14	00
April 24th 1676.			
Thomas Kenny	02	14	00
John Stacy	02	14	00
June 24th 1676			
Francis Jefford	02	14	00
Samuel Phelpes	02	14	00
John Presson	02	14	00
Joseph Abbott	02	14	00
Samuel Pickworth	00	11	06
Abraham Snitchell	01	01	00

Michael Towsley	02	15	08
Thomas Kemball	02	14	00
Thomas Blashfield	02	14	00
William Allen	02	14	00
Edward Whittington	02	14	00
John Parker	02	14	00
Philip Butler	02	14	00
James Wall	04	10	10
John Ballard	02	14	00
July 24, 1676			
William Hathorne, *Capt.*	07	03	09
Amos Gourdin	01	04	00
Daniel Johnson	03	10	00
Jeremiah Neale, *Lieut.*	03	00	00
August 24th 1676			
Edward Counter	02	14	00
Ebenezer Barker	02	02	00
Thomas Russell	02	14	00
Joseph Jeffords	01	09	00
Thomas Vely	02	05	00
Eleazer Linsey	01	16	00
Thomas Bell	04	05	08
Sept 23d 1676			
Mark Bacheler	00	14	00
Robert Cocks	02	02	00
Moses Morgaine	02	14	00
Credited under Capt. Hathorne.			
Samuel Story	04	05	08
Peter Ashamaway	04	05	08
Jacob Knight	01	10	00
William Wainwright	04	16	06
Samuel Moulton	01	04	00
James Creeke	04	04	00
James Cox	04	05	00

A Lyst of Capt Joseph Gardiner Company yt were wounded and Slayne of his Company, some ye 16 Decr & Other 10 dec 75

Joseph Rice of Salem Samuel Pikeworth of Salem Mrke Batchiler of Wenham	wch. 3 were slayne .... abroad from ye Garrison
Capt Joseph Gardiner of Salem Abra. Switchell of Marblehead Joseph Soames of Cape Anne Robert Andrews of Topsfield	4 men Slayne more
Charles Knight of Salem Nicholas Huchins of Lynn ✓ Thomas flint of Salem Jno Harrington of Lynne Robert Cocks of Marblehead Eben Baker of Andiver Edwd Mardin of Cape Ann Joseph Read of Beverly Joseph Abett of Andiver Joseph Holcton of Salem	10 men wounded

---

Mass. Archives, Vol. 68, p. 93.

A list of ye names of Capt. Gardiner's Souldiers for this p'sent Expedition

Salem.

Serjeant Jeremiah Neall
Serjeant William bassett
Sert Samuel bradell
Corp. Samuell Pikworth
Charls Knight
John boden
William holess
Marck Stace
Samuell Gray
Larance Magery
John Polott
Philip butteler
Beniamen Lemon
Edward Counter
Lenard Tossier
William Hind
Joseph Price
✓ Tho Flint
Pelter Prescote
Isack Read
Tho. Buffingtog
John Stacey
Henery Rich
Tho. Greene
James Wall
Joseph Holton junr
Tho. Reny

Salem

Joseph Dees—wounded
Abraham Switchell
Samuell ffrail—not apearing
ffrances Jefford
Clem. Rumeall
Adam Gold
Samuell Tarbox

Marblehead.

Petter Coll
Henry Codner
Auguster fferker
David Shapligh
Petter Cary
Robertt Cooks
Edward Severy
Ephraim Jones
Lenerd Belinger
Philip Brock

Thomas Weymouth Thomas Weymouth Thomas Russell	These men wanting of their Comp'y

Topsfield.

William Peabody
Zacheus Curtis
✓ Zacheus Perkins
Robertt Andrews
Isek burton

Andover.

Nathan Stevens
James Fry
Eben baker
John Parker
Joseph Abett
John balard
John Lovejoy
Edward Whittington
Samuell Philips
John Prston

Gloster.

John Prince
Andrew Serjant
Joseph Somes
Vincesont Davis
Moses duday

Beverley.

Christopher Brown
John Trask
Thomas Blashfield
Lott Cunant
Christopher Read
William fferyman
Moses Morgine
John Clark
William Allen
William bath
Richard Hussband

Lyn.

Nicholas Huchin
John Linsey
Robert driver
Daniell Huchin
John Davis
Samuell Graves
Andrew townsend
Thomas baker
Johnathan Looke
Iseck Welman
Isaack Hartt
John Farington
Samul Rods
Mark Bacheler
Richard Hutten
Thomas Kemball
Philip Welsh
John Hunkens

Zaccheus Perkins is said to have been a sore problem to his "poor old father" - Deacon Thomas Perkins, who had to pay his son's fines & suffer embarrassment. Perhaps the deacon was so Puritanical young Zack rebelled - like the proverbial minister's son.

He fought bravely in King Phillips war, in which his captain was killed; The attached about the theft from the Quaker merchant is an example of one of his scrapes. This Nicholas Jennings is supposed to have been a former fellow soldier.

RT 223 M38 M38 (1995)
James Edward Maule

> what happened, although the order of events is rather uncertain. It would appear that Maule was working in his barn one Sunday and a number of children gathered around. Thomas Deane and Charles Phillips threw stones at him or at the barn and young Deane prodded him with a stick through a hole in the wall. Maule evidently rushed out upon them, and as usual in such cases caught the smallest boy, in the person of George Deane, Jr., whom he shut up in the barn. The boy cried and his sister Elizabeth demanded his release, whereupon Maule struck her with a stick. Then Thomas Deane attempted a rescue of his brother and was hit with a sod spade. Finally Maule went to his house and the boys stoned his barn and sent word to him that if he would come out they would drub him. In the evening someone cut down some of his apple trees.[122]

The magistrates of Quarterly Court admonished Maule and the boys, and ordered all parties to bear their own costs.[123] Aside from the deplorable and surprising way in which Maule, a Quaker, reacted to the children's taunts, the case is puzzling, for if there were ever an opportunity for the authorities to justify banishing or otherwise severely punishing Maule, this were surely it. One must wonder if there were much more to the story that has been reported.

By 1696, Maule reported that he had been imprisoned five times, whipped three times, and subject to other abuses many other times.[124] He states that his goods were taken three times.[125] He also claims that on one occasion he was punished for an offense he denied doing, because the court chose to believe the testimony of "two evil minded persons" one of whom, it was later discovered,

---

[122] Jones at 10 (citing 8 *Rec. and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex Co.* 340-343, 346).

[123] Jones at 10 (citing 8 *Rec. and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex Co.* 340-343, 346).

[124] Duniway at 70; Maule, *New England Persecutors* at 52.

[125] Duniway at 70; Maule, *New England Persecutors* at 52.

Perkins / Gould

was a thief.[126]

There is no indication Maule ever considered removing to Rhode Island, a colony that more than tolerated Quakers.[127] One reason might be that he was unwilling to relinquish a very successful mercantile business in a bustling seaport. Another might be that he had another kind of business to conduct with the Puritans, on account of his father's treatment by their English counterparts, and thus needed to remain in the colony to which he had deliberately emigrated.

HIS RECOURSE TO THE COURTS

In June of 1670, the Essex County Court allowed costs to Thomas Maule in an action for unpaid debt brought by John Hartshorne.[128] In May of 1680, Zacheus Perkins and Nicholas Jennings stole goods from Thomas Maule's shop.[129] They were caught and sentenced to pay Maule 250 pounds and the goods and were branded with a B on their foreheads.[130] ✓

In 1681 Maule entered a complaint against William King, a neighbor, after King declared himself "the eternall Son of God," attacked Maule, spit in his face, and dared him to go to a magistrate, offering to repeat his statement.[131] This incident, which arose out of a religious discussion between the two men, resulted in King's being brought to trial for blasphemy before the Court of Assistants at Boston.[132] King in fact repeated his statements in front of magistrate Gedney, who delayed acting for a few days but who

---

[126] Maule, *New England Persecutors* at 52.

[127] Worrall at 26.

[128] J.R. Maule at 9 (citing 4 *Rec. and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex Co.* 251, 269, 276, 277).

[129] J.R. Maule at 8-9 (citing 7 *Rec. and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex Co.* 364); 3 Perley at 152-53.

[130] 3 Perley at 152-53.

[131] Jones at 10-11 (citing *Early Files Suffolk Co. Court Cases*, No. 2021).

[132] *Id.*

Zaccheus was son of Deacon Thomas and Phebe (Gould) Perkins and sister of our Phebe who married Joseph Towne. He was named for his maternal grandfa

INTRODUCTORY NOTE

Thomas Allen Perkins, the compiler of this genealogy, died 18 September 1932.

As a boy he became interested in the history of his family by hearing his mother and his grandfather discuss the older generations of the Perkins family. In 1893 he assisted his brother in a collaboration of the records of the Perkins families of Wells and York, Me., but owing to pressure of other duties the work was soon put aside not to be taken up until the winter of 1925 when an effort was started to complete a genealogy of the descendants of Jacob Perkins of Wells. The work was still in progress at the time of the death of the compiler.

During the past eight years Mr. Perkins gave freely of his time and money to the task. He searched town, city, county, State, United States Census, and church records, copied family records and inscriptions on gravestones and monuments, interviewed a large number of persons and families in their homes, consulted family histories in public libraries, and obtained much information by correspondence.

In 1930 he visited the old church of St. John the Baptist, in the parish of Hillmorton, co. Warwick, England, and had a copy made of all references to the name of Perkins appearing on the church records down to 1633.

He was under special obligations to Isaiah S. Perkins, York, Me.; Mrs. Vesta N. (Perkins) Hawes, Brooksville, Me.; Lucius M. Perkins, Alfred, Me.; William W. Perkins, Brewer, Me.; Edwin R. Perkins, Brownfield, Me.; Mrs. Martha A. Perkins, Frederick A. Perkins, George M. Perkins, Daniel Johnston, and William A. Walker, Castine, Me.; Albert Ellery Varnum, Penobscot, Me.; Howard E. Perkins, Sanford, Me.; Mrs. Harriet A. Lovell, Portsmouth, N. H.; Eugene W. Hatch, Eaton, N. H.; Mrs. Winifred Lane Goss, Dover, N. H.; Ralph S. Perkins, M.D., Worcester, Mass.; Edwin F. Perkins, Springfield, Mass.; and Mrs. Maria J. (Perkins) Canney, Croton-on-Hudson, N. Y.

The compiler of this genealogy sometimes included material that exceeded the scope of this book, and the editor has felt obliged to omit some of the records which did not deal directly with a member of the Perkins family.

H. C. D.

Kennebunkport, Me.
October 1933.

JACOB PERKINS OF WELLS, MAINE, AND HIS DESCENDANTS.

I. Ancestry of Jacob Perkins.*

1. John[1] Perkins, son of Henry† and Elizabeth (Sawbridge) Perkins, born at Hillmorton, co. Warwick, England, and baptized there 23 Dec. 1583, died at Ipswich, Mass., in 1654. He married, 9 Oct. 1608, Judith Gater, daughter of Michael Gater.

He sailed from Bristol, England, 1 Dec. 1630, in the ship *Lion,* William Pierce, master, bound for Boston, Mass., taking with him his entire family, consisting of his wife and five children. The boat arrived at Nantasket 5 Feb. 1631 and the next day anchored before Boston.

He settled first in Boston, where on 18 May 1631 he took the oath of freeman which admitted him to all rights of the colony. On 7 Nov. 1632 the General Court appointed Capt. Traske, William Cheeseboro, Mr. Conant, and John Perkins to set down the bounds between Roxbury and Dorchester, Mass.

---

*Jacob Perkins of Wells, Me., was a great-grandson of John[1] Perkins and the line of descent which is here given is based on material found in "The Family of John Perkins of Ipswich, Mass.," 1889, by George A. Perkins, M.D., Part I, pp. 1–21; part III, pp. 1–10.

†Henry Perkins, of Hillmorton, perhaps the eldest son of Thomas and Alice (Kebble) Perkins of Hillmorton, was buried 11 Mar. 1608/9. He married at Hillmorton, 29 Nov. 1579, Elizabeth Sawbridge.

Letters of administration upon his estate were granted at Litchfield, 5 Apr. 1609, to Thomas Perkins, the oldest son.

A bond was given for the tuition of Margaret, Edward, Anne, Sarah, Francis, William, Lucy, Elizabeth, and James Pirkins, "the other children."

The inventory, dated 22 Mar. 1608, was taken by Rowland Wilcox, Gent., Thomas Pirkins, John Sawbridge, Thomas Compton, "yeomen." Amount, £336, 8s. 8d.

Litchfield Registry, Act Book No. II, Page 73

Children (records from the church register of St. John the Baptist, in the parish of Hillmorton):

i. Alice, bapt. 17 Mar. 1580/1.
ii. Thomas, bapt. 24 July 1582.
iii. John, bapt. 23 Dec. 1583.
iv. Francis, bapt. 1 Nov. 1585; d. 3 Dec. 1585.
v. Francis, bapt. 18 Sept. 1586; d. 7 Jan. 1587.
vi. Margaret, bapt. 9 Nov. 1588.
vii. Edward, bapt. 12 Dec. 1590; m. 6 Oct. 1616 Mary Watkin.
viii. Agnes, bapt. 16 Oct. 1592; m. 29 June 1618 Edmonde Colbyson.
ix. Sarah, bapt. 25 Aug. 1594; m. 4 Apr. 1624 Humphrey Edwards.
x. Francis, bapt. 8 Feb. 1596/7.
xi. William, bapt. 12 Jan. 1598/9.
xii. Luke, bapt. 27 Nov. 1600; m. 2 Aug. 1621 Margerie Pursser.
xiii. Elizabeth, bapt. 28 Nov. 1602; buried 25 Dec. 1602.
xiv. Elizabeth, bapt. 4 Oct. 1604; m. 20 May 1622 John Springthorpe.
xv. Jacob, bapt. 26 July 1607.

[A tentative line of descent of John[1] Perkins from Pierre de Morlaix *alias* Perkins, living in 1380, high steward of the estates of Hugo Despencer, through Henry, John, William, Thomas, whose wife was Ellen Tompkins of co. Hereford, James of Shropshire, Thomas of Hillmorton, Henry, and Thomas who married Alice Kebble, is given in "Genealogical and Family History of the State of Maine," 1909, Lewis Historical Publishing Company, vol. 2, pp. 508-509.

Abstracts of wills of the Perkins families of Hillmorton with a pedigree chart are printed in "Notes on the Perkins Families in England," 1894, by D. W. Perkins, pp. 5-10.]

In 1633 he removed to Ipswich, Mass., the colony newly founded by John Winthrop, where he had several grants of land. His house was near the river, at the entrance to Jeffries Neck, on what is now East Street. Here he engaged in agriculture.

He was a deputy to the session of the General Court held in Boston 25 May 1636. He held many town offices, occupied places of trust, and was one of the leading men at Ipswich. His will, dated 28 Mar. 1654, mentions all of his children except Ann.

Children, baptized at Hillmorton:

i. John,² of Ipswich, bapt. 14 Sept. 1609; d. 14 Dec. 1686; m. Elizabeth ——. Eight sons and one daughter.
ii. Elizabeth, bapt. 3 Mar. 1611; m. William Sargent of Amesbury, Mass. Two sons and three daughters.
iii. Mary, bapt. 3 Sept. 1615; m. in 1637 Thomas Bradbury of Salisbury, Mass. Six sons and five daughters.
our Dodge line iv. Ann, bapt. 5 Sept. 1617; probably d. young.
✓ v. Thomas, of Ipswich and Topsfield, Mass., bapt. 28 Apr. 1622; d. at Topsfield 7 May 1686; m. Phoebe Gould. Five sons and four daughters.
2. vi. Jacob, bapt. 12 Sept. 1624.
vii. Lydia, b. in Boston, Mass., and bapt. there 3 June 1632; m. Henry Bennet of Ipswich. Five sons.

our Averill line

2. **Jacob² Perkins** (*John¹*), of Ipswich, Mass., farmer, sergeant of a military band at Ipswich in 1664, baptized at Hillmorton, co. Warwick, England, 12 Sept. 1624, died at Ipswich 27 Jan. 1699/1700. He married first, about 1648, Elizabeth ~~Lov~~ell, Whipple who died 12 Feb. 1685, aged 56 years, daughter of ~~Thomas Lovell~~ of Ipswich; and secondly Damaris Robinson, widow of Nathaniel Robinson.

Children by first wife:

i. Elizabeth,³ b. 1 Apr. 1649; m. 1 Jan. 1667 Thomas Borman.
ii. John, b. 3 July 1652; d. in 1718; m. (1) Mary Fisk; m. (2) Elizabeth Prythatch; m. (3) Mary (White) Hooper.
ours see Brown file ✓ iii. Judith, b. 11 July 1655; m. 16 Dec. 1673 Nathaniel Browne.
iv. Mary, b. 14 May 1658; m. John Annable.
3. v. Jacob, b. at Ipswich 3 Aug. 1662.
vi. Matthew, b. 23 June 1665; m. Esther Burnham of Ipswich.
vii. Hannah, b. 11 Oct. 1670.
viii. Joseph, of Norwich, Conn., b. 21 June 1674; m. 22 May 1700 Martha Morgan.
ix. Jabez, of Norwich, Conn., b. 15 May 1677; m. (1) 30 June 1698 Hannah Lathrop; m. (2) 17 Dec. 1722 Charity Leonard.

3. **Jacob³ Perkins** (*Jacob,² John¹*), of Ipswich, weaver and farmer, born at Ipswich, Mass. 3 Aug. 1662, died 12 Nov. 1705. He married first, 25 Dec. 1684, Elizabeth Sparks, who died 10 Apr. 1692, daughter of John and Mary (Sinnett) Sparks; and secondly, 5 Jan. 1693, Sarah Treadwell, who was born 10 Jan. 1673 and died 5 Aug. 1738, aged 65 years, 7 months, daughter of Thomas and Sarah (Titcomb) Treadwell.

Children by first wife, born at Ipswich:

4. i. Jacob,⁴ b. at Ipswich 15 Feb. 1685.

ii. John, of Norwich, Conn., b. 2 Sept. 1687.
iii. Elizabeth, b. 18 Mar. 1691; m. 2 July 1711 David Burnham.

Children by second wife:

iv. Elisha, b. in 1694; m. (intention recorded at Ipswich 4 Aug. 1722) Abigail Newmarch.
v. Sarah, b. 26 Dec. 1696.
vi. Mary, b. 26 Nov. 1698.
vii. Hannah, b. 24 July 1701.
viii. Judith, bapt. 4 Nov. 1705.

II. JACOB PERKINS AND HIS DESCENDANTS.

4. **Jacob⁴ Perkins** (*Jacob,³ Jacob,² John¹*), of Cape Neddick in York,* who, with his descendants, is the subject of this book, was born at Ipswich, Mass., 15 Feb. 1685 and died intestate at Wells between 19 Mar. 1770, when he acknowledged a deed of land in Wells, and 15 Oct. 1772, when in a deed he is called "late of Wells, deceased." He married first Lydia Stover, daughter of John and Abigail (Alcott) Stover of York; and secondly, at Hampton Falls, N. H., 12 Oct. 1717 (Rev. Theophilus Cotton, pastor of the First Church, officiating), Anna Littlefield, who was baptized at Wells 28 June 1702, daughter of Josiah and Lydia Littlefield.

On 27 Mar. 1708 Hannah Green, widow of John Green (mariner, once of Cape Neddick in York), with her surviving children, sold for £50 to Jacob Perkins, cooper, of Ipswich, Mass., 60 acres of upland and marsh at Cape Neddick, situated on the southwest side of Cape Neddick River between two creeks or coves, and 4 acres of marsh between Cape Neddick river and Ogunquit River, together with a house and barn on the said upland. (York Deeds, vol. 7, fo. 100.)

Jacob Perkins settled on this land and made it his home until 23 Oct. 1717, when he sold to James Carr, Jr., cordwainer, of Newbury, Mass., this property, which consisted of a piece of upland and meadow ground situated on the southwest side of Cape Neddick River in the township of York, where the said Perkins then lived, containing by estimation seventy acres, sixty acres whereof was sold to the said Perkins by Hannah Green and her children by a deed bearing the date of 20 Mar. 1708, the other ten acres given to said Perkins by the town of York 17 Mar. 1713/4, with one dwelling house and barn standing on said land, together with six oxen, three cows, ten swine, nine sheep, one mare, four yearlings, and three calves, and the whole of hay or corn upon said land with all the other materials for the husbandry, Anna, wife of said Jacob Perkins, releasing and setting over unto said James Carr all her rights of dowry and thirds. (York Deeds, vol. 8, fo. 247.)

---

*All places mentioned in this genealogy are situated within the present limits of the State of Maine, unless another State or region is indicated in the text or may be easily inferred from the context.

On 25 Oct. 1717 he bought from Isaac Provender 48½ acres of land in York, situated by the sea shore between the great marsh and the Wells bounds. (York Deeds, vol. 9, fo. 102.)

Within two months he again bought land. On 9 Dec. 1717 he purchased from Thomas Mason, weaver, of Wells, 100 acres in the township of Wells, bounded as follows: southwesterly by land of George Jacobs, from a stake upon the bank of Ogunquit River running up into the country upon a west-southwest line or point to a white pine tree marked on four sides, and from said white pine tree running forty poles or rods upon a north-northwest line to a white oak marked on four sides, the said white oak being the corner bounds between said granted land and land belonging to Zachary Goodall, and from the aforesaid white oak running upon an east-northeast line to a black ash tree marked, at the head of the salt water in Clay Hill Creek, and so on the same course directly to Ogunquit River, and southeasterly upon Ogunquit River till it come down to the bound stake before mentioned. (York Deeds, vol. 9, fo. 103.)

It was on this farm in Ogunquit that Jacob Perkins spent most of the remainder of his life, and some of his descendants still live on part of his old homestead. The business section of the present village of Ogunquit occupies a portion of the original farm.

By a deed dated 13 Oct. 1766 Jacob Perkins of Wells, yeoman, gave to his youngest son, Jacob Perkins of Wells, husbandman, all his homestead land and buildings where he then lived at a place called Ogunquit in Wells, containing 70 acres, more or less, fronting southeasterly on Ogunquit River and running back west-southwesterly between the lands of the late George Jacobs on the southeasterly side and those of the late Gersham Maxwell, deceased, on the northwesterly side to the utmost boundary of his farm, or however the said farm may be bounded. (York Deeds, vol. 41, p. 236.)

Jacob Perkins bought 6 July 1767 from his son Stephen Perkins four acres of upland with dwelling, barn, and orchard situated on the highway adjoining the old homestead, and sold it to his son Jacob Perkins 16 Feb. 1769. (York Deeds, vol. 40, p. 123; vol. 41, p. 193.)

He was a cooper by trade, a farmer, an extensive landowner for that period, and a part owner of mills in Phillipstown (now Sanford), York, and in the part of Berwick later set off as North Berwick. The records show that during his life he bought and sold many tracts of land in York, Wells, and Phillipstown.

He was interested in public affairs of Wells and served that town as a constable, surveyor of highways, and selectman.

In 1736 he was appointed a member of a committee to finish the first meeting house in Wells.

He was a large man physically and was called "Much Big" Perkins by the Indians of whom he had no fear.

Children by first wife, born at Cape Neddick in York:

5. i. JACOB,^{5} b. about 1710.
6. ii. JOHN, b. about 1712.
7. iii. JOSEPH, b. 8 Feb. 1716/7.

Children by second wife, born at Wells:

iv. LYDIA, b. 26 Dec. 1719; d. 28 May 1748; m. 10 Sept. 1741 NATHANIEL CLARK, JR., of Wells, b. 11 June 1718, d. before 4 May 1782, when his will was proved, who m. (2) 24 Oct. 1751 Sarah Southwick of Salem, Mass.

In his will he provided for the maintenance of Anna, a daughter by his first wife.

Children (surname *Clark*):

1. *Lydia*, b. 1 Sept. 1742; m. 20 Mar. 1760 Joshua Brooks of Kittery, bapt. 1 Nov. 1739, son of Joshua and Anne (Staple) Brooks.
2. *Jacob*, b. 17 Sept. 1744; d. 18 Sept. 1745.
3. *Martha*, b. 18 July 1746; m. (intention recorded 20 Oct. 1773) Nathaniel Thompson of Bristol, N. H.
4. *Anna*, b. 18 May 1748.

8. v. SPARKS, b. 28 Dec. 1721.
vi. SARAH, b. about 1723.
9. vii. ELISHA, b. about 1726.
10. viii. JOSIAH, b. about 1730.
11. ix. NEWMAN, b. 5 July 1734.
12. x. STEPHEN, b. in 1736.
13. xi. DAVID, b. about 1739.
xii. ANNA, b. in 1741 and bapt. at Wells 23 May 1742; d. 26 Aug. 1825; m. (1) ——— Perkins; m. (2) at Wells, 25 Dec. 1776, as his second wife, DEA. NATHANIEL TAYLOR of Wells, farmer, soldier in the Revolutionary War.

On 4 Sept. 1795 Nathaniel Taylor and wife Anna conveyed to Jesse Perkins 7 acres in Wells adjoining land of Samuel Jefferds, but reserving two appletrees for life. (York Deeds, vol. 110, p. 89.)

On 4 Sept. 1795 Nathaniel Taylor conveyed to his sons Jacob and Dimon 46 acres of land next to land he sold Jesse Perkins, with dwelling, etc., also 50 acres of land and 1/24 part of Little River mill. (York Deeds, vol. 62, p. 141.)

Child by first husband (surname *Perkins*):

1. *Jesse*,* of Wells, a soldier in the War of 1812, b. at Wells in 1767; d. there in April 1850; m. (intention recorded at Wells 12 Oct. 1793) Eunice Taylor, daughter of Dea. Nathaniel Taylor of Wells.

---

*The children of Jesse and Eunice (Taylor) Perkins were:

i. VINCENT, b. 1 Jan. 1795; d. 25 Jan. 1796.
ii. JESSE, of Carthage, 1850 and 1860, a soldier in the War of 1812, b. at Wells 15 Oct. 1796; m. (intention recorded 6 July 1820) CHARLOTTE SNOWMAN of York, b. in 1796.

On 14 June 1823 John and Elizabeth Storer sold to Jesse Perkins, Jr., of Wells, land on the Post and Burnt Mill Roads in Wells. In July 1834 Jesse Perkins, Jr., and wife, Charlotte Perkins, then of Oxford County, sold this land to Samuel Curtis. (York Deeds, vol. 115, p. 21; vol. 152, p. 191.)

Children:

1. *Mary Louise*, b. 5 Dec. 1823.
2. *George Augustus*, b. 18 Aug. 1826; m. Malvina A———. Child: 1. *Charles LeForrest*, b. in 1858.

Dawes-Gates Genealogy by Mary Walton Ferris

(This follows the oldest son John Perkins Jr.)

PERKINS

JOHN^1 PERKINS* said[1] to have come from Hillmorton, co. Warwick with[1] his wife, Judith and their children John^2, Elizabeth^2, Mary^2, Thomas^2 and Jacob^2 came to New England in the famous "Lyon" with its more famous master, William^1 Peirce sailing from Bristol on December 1, 1630, and arriving at Boston on February 5, 1630–1. As has been told elsewhere (see Ford, p. 295) when Gov. John Winthrop arrived on the "Arabella," the flagship of the Fleet, in June, 1630, and learned of the shortage of foodstuffs in the colony and the need of scorbutics, he commissioned Master Peirce, who had just landed a load of emigrants, to return at once for supplies. This second trip of Peirce's within the year brought two hundred tons of provisions and but a few passengers — perhaps because of lack of space but more likely because of the discomfort and danger of a winter crossing of the Atlantic. Winthrop's Journal records[2] of the vessel that "she had a very tempestuous passage, yet, through God's mercy, all her people came safe, except Way** his son, who fell from the spritsail yard in a tempest, and could not be recovered, though he kept in sight near a quarter of an hour. Her goods also came in good condition."[2]

John^1 settled first at Boston where he and Judith soon[3] joined the First church[19] and he became[6] a freeman† on May 18, 1631. He had acquired a certain privilege probably as an aid to the community's food supply, for the Court of Assistants ruled[6] on April 2, 1632, that "noe p'son w^t soeuer shall shoote att fowle vpon

---

*Differing claims are made as to the English origin of this family but absolute proof seems to be lacking. John^1 is said, but without authority, to be *from*[22] Newent, Gloucestershire. He is also said to have come[1] from Hillmorton, Warwickshire and further, at Hillmorton and vicinity[23] are shown four generations[22,23] of ancestry that fit him nicely and are doubtless his. One of the items there is the marriage of a John Perkyns on October 9, 1608, to a Judith Gator (see below) said[20] to have been the daughter of Michael and Elizabeth Gator and to have been baptized[20] at Hillmorton on March 19, 1588. Since John^1 brought a wife Judith to New England, circumstantial evidence fits beautifully. And if the data from the Hillmorton parish register is bona fide, as it appears to be, the baptismal date[23] for our John^1 is December 23, 1583, son of Henry and Elizabeth; and the baptismal dates for his children are[23]

1. John^2, bap. Nov. 8, 1609 (see p. 000).
2. Elizabeth^2, bap. Mar. 3, 1611.
3. Mary^2, bap. Sept. 3, 1615.
4. Ann^2, bap. Sept. 5, 1617.
5. Thomas^2, bap. Apr. 28, 1622.
6. Jacob^2, bap. Sept. 12, 1624.

and Lydia in New England[23] (see also p. 486).

It may be an evidence[27] toward verification of "Gater" as the maiden name of Judith wife of John^1 Perkins that in 1669 an Elizabeth Gater was resident in the home of their youngest child Lydia^2 Perkins, wife of Henry^1 Bennet of Ipswich. A quarrel with a neighbor woman caused Elizabeth Gater to be ordered to spend a week in the house of correction but a plea to the court changed the sentence to a fine which Henry^1 Bennet engaged to pay.[27]

**This implies[2] the son of Henry^1 Way of Dorchester though it has been erroneously interpreted[4] as "Way, son of William Peirce, master." ✓ (our line) See Way

†This was the first time that the freeman's oath, as of Massachusetts Bay, was given and John^1 took it in the company[6] of John^1 Balch, Robert^1 Moulton, Thomas^1 Ford, Matthew^1 Grant, Henry^1 Herrick, Roger^1 Conant and John^1 Woodbury.

Pullen Poynte [Chelsea] or Noddles Ileland [East Boston] but that the s^d places shall be reserved for John Perkins to take fowle wth netts."[19] *

See note

On June 3, 1632, their youngest daughter Lydia^2 was baptized at the First Church of Boston and on November 7, 1632, John^1 with Roger^1 Conant and two others were appointed by the Court to set the bounds between Roxbury and Dorchester.

Before October 1, 1633, John^1 called "sergeant" had evidently, but temporarily, slipped from the "straight and narrow" for on that date he was ordered[9] to carry up forty turfs toward the completion of the earthworks of the fort on Corn or Fort Hill "as a punishment for drunkenness." This is the only hint of criticism found against him at any time. *

Late in 1633 John^1 removed with his family to Ipswich where the family home remained, and from that place he was sent as a representative[6] to the General Court in May, 1636. He served the town[16] in various ways, as on trial juries and grand juries as constable, lot layer, selectman, to lay out highways, to settle disputes, to administer estates, etc., being very often associated with John^1 Tuttle in these tasks.[16] He had various grants of land including a small island and about thirty acres at what was called[20] Moore's Point but his home was[4] "near the river, at the entrance to Jeffries neck, on what is now (1889) East Street" (see map, p. 487). In December, 1643, John^1 had three shillings due[16] him at the rate of twelve pence per day for service as a soldier, against the Indians and in 1648 had three shillings due him for killing three foxes.[16] In March, 1650, being above sixty years of age,* the court freed him from ordinary training. On March 28, 1654, he made his will and though he signed it with a mark there are extant many instances of long hand signatures by him which prove[5] him to have been an educated man. The document provided for wife Judith who was made executrix, made bequests to eldest son John^2, son Thomas^2, daughters Elizabeth^2, Mary^2 and Lydia^2, to several grandchildren and gave the home property to Jacob^2 after the death of wife Judith.

It is rather interesting to note that when Mr. William B. Weeden was writing his "Economic and Social History of New England," of all the families resident there in the mid-seventeeth century he chose the family and inventory[18] of John^1 Perkins as a symbol of the simple but "typical household economy." He said "We may comprehend this people better if we take a whole estate and consider it at a glance. John Perkins, of Ipswich, had a small estate, but he was a typical man; he held town offices and places of trust and was a responsible citizen. His inventory shows the small values and limited amounts of property sufficing to conduct ordinary living in the middle of the seventeenth century," and then he quoted that inventory totaling £250 in 1654. We can add to Mr. Weeden's summary that wife Judith reared a family of six children in that home, but considering the multiplicity of modern conveniences and possessions, it is quite staggering to try to imagine how she accomplished that task with such a paucity of equipment! The will of John^1 was proved on September 27, 1654, so his death had occurred at Ipswich between March 28 and September 27 when he was sixty-four to seventy-one years old.[11]

Of his children, Thomas^2 removed to Topsfield; Mary^2, resident in Salisbury, was unfortunate enough to have been accused and convicted of witchcraft. Her husband, two ministers and over one hundred of her neighbors testifying in her behalf were unable to clear her. Her imprisonment hung on, with execution delayed until the mania was somewhat allayed and she was finally discharged. Jacob^2, who inherited the homestead, occupied it until August 7, 1668, when it was destroyed by fire through the carelessness of a servant girl.[4] He soon built another house near the site of the first one. But on a Sabbath in 1671 while a gathering of neighbors were holding a religious service in his home[10,20] it was struck by lightning and Jacob^2 and many others "were struck down and his waistcoat was pierced with small holes and he was beaten down as if dead,"[20] yet he recovered and lived nearly twenty years longer.

---

*If the Hillmorton baptism of 1583 (p. 484) really pertains to our John^1, he was already sixty-seven in 1650.

* W. G. Davis believes the fowler & also the turf carrier were actually John Jr, the eldest son.

The children (see note, p. 484) of John^1 and Judith (Gater) Perkins of whom all but the last were born in England, were[1,3,4,5,23]

i. John^2, see following.
✓† ii. Thomas^2, b.[23] 1622 or abt. 1616; d. at Topsfield May 7, 1686; m. there abt. 1640 Phebe^2 Gould (Zaccheus^1).
iii. Elizabeth^2, b.[23] 1611 or abt. 1618; d. before[5] Sept. 18, 1670; m. as his second wife abt. 1640 William^1 Sargent.
iv. Mary^2, b.[23] 1615 or abt. 1620; d. at Salisbury Dec. 20, 1700 ae. 80; m. at Ipswich abt. 1636–7 Thomas^1 Bradbury. witchcraft
† v. Jacob^2, b. abt. 1624; d. at Ipswich Jan. 27, 1699–1700, aged 76; m. 1st abt. 1647–8 Elizabeth* who perhaps d. 1665; m. 2nd, Damaris (——) Robinson.
vi. Lydia^2, bap. at Boston June 3, 1632; d. prob. abt. 1672; m. abt. 1650 Henry Bennet of Ipswich.

JOHN^2 PERKINS (*John^1*) was born** in England and died at Ipswich December 14, 1686, having married about 1635 Elizabeth whose identity has not yet been (whipple) learned. He crossed the ocean with his parents at the age of about fifteen (or twenty-one?), lived a couple of years at Boston and removed to† Ipswich with them about 1633. Almost immediately a most exciting and responsible situation faced John^2 as is shown[21,28] by the Rev. Thomas Cobbet's (1608–1685) "Narrative of New England's Deliverances" for he wrote:

> "In the first planting of Ipswich, (as a credible man informed me, namely, Quartermaster Perkins,) the Terrateens or Eeasterly Indians had a design to have cut them off at the first, when they had but between 20 or 30 men, old and young, belonging to the place (and at that instant most of the men gone into the Bay about their occasions, not hearing of any intimations thereof.) It was thus one Robin, a friendly Indian, came to this John Perkins, then a young man, living then in a little hut upon his father's Island, on this side of Jeofrye's Neck, and told him that on such a Thursday morning, early, there would come four Indians, to draw him to goe down the Hill to the waterside, to truck with them, which if he did, he and all neare him would be cut off: for there were 40 burchen canoues, would lie out of sight, in the brow of the Hill, full of Armed Indians for that purpose: of this he forthwith acquaints Mr. John Winthrop, (junior) who then

---

*Called Lovell, daughter of Thomas, and may have been so.

**His birth has usually been supposed to have occurred about 1614 but if the record quoted (p. 484) is dependable as it seems to be, he was five years older than that, having been baptized on November 8, 1609, at Hillmorton, Warwickshire.[23]

†In October, 1631, before Agawam (Ipswich) was settled by the English, a company of the warlike Tarrantines, or Eastern Indians from the eastern coast of what is now Maine came,[21] under the cover of night, and attacked the tribe of Agawam Indians, killing some and taking others captive, in revenge for an earlier fracas between the tribes. So the episode discussed above was probably a follow-up against the local Indians and certainly an attempted elimination of the whites. Either[28] John^1 Perkins or his son[29] John^2 had been serving as sergeant of the Allied English and Friendly Indians under chief Masconomah of the Agawam tribe in 1631 in the war against the Tarratines. As is shown above in 1633 John^2 a young man was serving as sergeant.

> lived there, in a howse neare the water, who advised him if such Indians came, to carry it ruggedly towards them, and threaten to shoot them if they would not be gone, and when theyr backs were turned to strike up the drum he had with him, besides his two muskets, and then to discharge them; that those six or eight young men, who were in the marshes hard by a mowing, haveing theyr guns each of them ready charged, by them, might take the Alarme, and the Indians would perceive theyr plot was discovered: and haste away to sea againe: which was accordingly so acted and tooke like effect: for he told me, he presently after discovered 40 such canoes sheare off from under the Hill, and make as fast as they could to sea. And no doubt but many godly hearts were lifted up to heaven for deliverance, both in that deliverance at Salem, and this at Ipswich."

So in this earliest (known) test of initiative and courage John^{2} earned an enviable standing. Drake says[21] that "through the prudent Management of Sergt. John Perkins" the Tarratines did not dare to land.[21]

As early as 1634 he received a grant of land as well as subsequent grants[17] of which one was six acres of marsh land "lying upon the brook commonly called 'Labor-in-vain' " and near the great river. His house lot of one acre lay by the river and after building a house upon it, he enclosed it with a paleing.[17] Some of his land was beyond the great Chebacco River and he was granted permission to build a weir therein to take alewives beginning in 1636 which fish he agreed to sell to the colonists for fertilizer at five shillings per thousand. This privilege was to run for a seven year period but he soon disposed[4] of land, weir and permit to John^{1} Cogswell. In 1637 he acquired an island on the south side of the Chebacco River as his father had before him. They owned a cow apiece and each had a right to commonage.

It appears to have been John^{2} who became a freeman[6] on May 17, 1637. In 1639 he bought[17] a houselot of over one acre which was bounded on the northeast by his father's lot. In 1640 he received a tentative grant of seventy acres beyond Chebacco River, right against his island, with the understanding that if it were needed for another settlement within four years, he would give it up; and the further understanding that he would himself fence or secure it from trespass[17] by cattle or swine which fed on nearby commons. In 1648 John^{2} subscribed five shillings toward Maj. Denison's pay and killed two foxes for which he received four shillings; in 1649 he was on a committee of three to treat with Newbury and Rowley.[17]

In 1663 John^{2} was[15] chosen as Quarter Master of the military organization of Ipswich and retained the title until his death.[29] He established the first ordinary or inn at Ipswich in 1668 and had a license to draw liquor. He dealt heavily in real estate and was interested in coast fisheries,[10] using, as early as 1645, a part of Little Neck for curing his fish.

In June, 1673, John^{2} bound himself to the town in the sum of £100 for entertaining Matthew Hooker, a Jersie man who was to become a tenant on a farm belonging to John^{2}; and in November, 1673, he agreed to lay down to the town one-half of the thatch bank at his island — i.e. the bank next to the town.[15] This island ultimately passed to his son Abraham^{3}, who acted as his father's attorney in the later years.[26] John^{2} gave to Jacob^{3} a farm of one hundred acres in Chebacco Parish, gave land to Samuel^{3}, a farm in Chebacco to Nathaniel^{3} and gave considerable real estate to Luke^{3} on condition that he would supply the needs of his mother and of Thomas^{3} who was for some reason unable to care for himself.[26] As is shown, NEHGR 10:211 states that William Perkins, below, was a distant relative of our Perkins family. Whether or not that is true, he had an enormous influence on British Pilgrims and Puritans. He believed in witches and preached against them; thus a century later he was quoted by the "Salem witchcraft" persecutors. Mary (Perkins) Bradbury, age 77, sister of our Thomas and Jacob, was convicted in 1692. (Another heroine in our family.)

Below: Taken from book, The Pilgrim Way by Robert Bartlett (Pilgrim Press) – mostly about Rev. John Robinson, Pilgrim pastor, who died in Holland in the 1620s.

(p23)

William Perkins (1558-1602)—Cambridge University Puritan scholar

a serious setback under Mary Tudor, but revived with the accession of Elizabeth and entered a new period of development.

The break with the church in Rome reinforced the interest of scholars in religious discussion. The divorce from papal authority demanded fresh thinking, reexamination of tradition, and a careful study of the continental scholars who were formulating Protestant thought.

Cambridge students were routed out of their beds at five A.M. for morning prayers. Breakfast at six consisted of a ha'penny loaf, butter, and beer. Tutors then struggled to guide their neophytes in the intricacies of Latin, Greek, and Hebrew. Latin was still the language of the scholar, and lectures were in Latin and apt to be dull.

Hebrew and Greek were relatively new subjects. They had been introduced into English education by Erasmus and Paulus Fagius who brought them over from the continent. Thus, John Robinson was initiated into study of the Old and New Testaments in their original tongues. The old books began to live with fresh

(pp 32-3)

William Perkins, catechist at Christ's College and preacher at St. Andrews, was one of the distinguished Puritan scholars. He was expected to "read a lecture every Thursday in the term on some useful subject of Divinity." Robinson heard him lecture and preach because he indicated in later writings how much he owed to Perkins. Robinson published in Leyden, before 1624 for the use of his parish there, a catechism which his professor had developed, giving along with it his own ideas on the church and the Christian life. In the preface he spoke of Perkins' work as "fully containing what every Christian is to believe touching God and himself." Perkins emphasized conscience as the center of his theology:

> By study of the scriptures the individual can test his conscience and correct it if it is in conflict with the Word. God has endowed man with reason and conscience is a function of reason. The examination of scripture with reason sheds light on the open mind. Man's conscience is known to none, beside himself, but to God.[19]

The forthrightness of John Robinson's thinking was due in part to the teaching of the dynamic Perkins, who listed in a plainspoken and humorous manner some of the false notions about religion in the 1590s that revealed the shocking ignorance of the people:

> That God is served by the rehearsing of the ten commandments, the Lord's Prayer and the Creeds.
>
> That none can tell whether he shall be saved or no certainly.
>
> That it is safest to do in Religion as most do.
>
> That merry ballads and books are good to drive away the time, and to remove heart-qualms.
>
> That ye know all the Preacher can tell you.
>
> That drinking and bezeling in the ale-house or tavern is good fellowship, and shows a good kind nature, and maintains neighborhood.
>
> That it was a good world, when the old Religion was, because all things were cheap.[20]

Perkins continued:

> Religion hath been amongst us this thirty-five years; but the more it is published, the more it is condemned and reproached of many. Thus not profaneness nor wickedness but religion itself is a byword, a mockingstock, and a matter of reproach; so that in England at this day the man or woman that begins to profess religion and to serve God, must resolve with himself to sustain mocks and injuries even as though he lived amongst the enemies of religion.[21]

Robinson learned from William Perkins that

> every man must join the practice of his personal calling, with the practice of the general calling of Christianity. More plainly: Every particular calling must be practiced in and with the general calling of a Christian. It is not sufficient for a man in the congregation, and in common conversation, to be a Christian, but in his very personal calling, he must show himself to be so.[22]

Robinson also referred to his admiration for Laurence Chaderton, who served as the first master of Emmanuel College. He was one of the few Puritan representatives at the Hampton Court Conference called by James I in 1604. Years later, in 1618, the Pilgrim Press in Leyden, operated by William Brewster with Robinson as a consultant, published an edition of Chaderton's sermons. Robinson mentioned this project in his *Works*.

Paul Baynes was a third university figure who won the admiration of the student from Sturton le Steeple. He found guidance and inspiration in the "golden words" of "Holy" Baynes who succeeded Perkins as lecturer at Great St. Andrews. Silenced by the archbishop, Baynes continued to preach widely throughout England as the guest of Puritan sympathizers. With his income cut off by the hierarchy, he was forced to live in poverty, yet his letters reveal warm and friendly interest in the struggles of fellow reformers.

New England Historic Genealogical Register, Vol 10

"Hammett Papers" by Abraham Hammett

Isaac Perkins, was an inhabitant of Ipswich, and died before 1639; for in that year it is recorded that Alice Perkins, widow of Isaac Perkins, is possessed of a parcel of land, granted to the said Isaac, lying in Brook street.

start here } →

JOHN PERKINS 1. He is usually distinguished as the Elder, on the records, and he styles himself Elder in his will.

He took the freeman's oath at Boston, May 18, 1631.

Under the date, 1634, "Giuen and granted unto John Perkins, the Elder, forty acres of land, more or less, bounded on the East by Mr. Robert Coles, his land; on the South by a small creek; in the west unto the Town side; unto him and his heirs or assigns." This tract of land is now known as Manning's Neck. He sold this land in 1637 to Thomas Howlett, for £7, 10.

He was commoner, 1641.

His will is dated "ye 28th of ye first mo, called March, 1654;" and was proved 26, 7, 1654. The following are extracts:

"I do give and bequeath unto my eldest sonn John Perkins, a foal of my young mare, being now with foal, if it please the Lord to foal it well.

"Also, I give and bequeath unto my sonn John's two sonnes, John and Abraham:

"Also I giue and bequeath to my sonn Thomas Perkins one cow and one heyfer. / Dodge line

"Also I give and bequeath to his sonn, John Perkins, one ewe.

"Also, I give and bequeath to my daughter, Elizabeth Sarjeant one cow and one heyfer, to be to her and her children after her decease, if it may please the Lord, &c.

"Also I do give to my daughter Anna Bradbury, one cow and one heyfer or a young steere, to remain to her and her children, &c.

"Also, I give and bequeath to my daughter, Lidia Bennitt, one cow and one heyfer or steere, to be equally divided to her children, &c.

(Published posthumously - about 1840)

"I do give to my grandson, Thomas Bradbury, one cow.

I do give and bequeath unto my sonn Jacob Perkins, my dwelling house, together with all ye out houses, with all my lands of every kind, & according to a former instrument, after the decease of my wife and not before, and so to remain to him and to his heirs forever. ✓ Averill line

All the rest of my estate of one kind or other, I doe bequeath to my dear wife, Judeth Perkins, appointing and ordaining my said wife the sole executrix of this my last will and testament, desiring my said wife to dispose of ye chattels above mentioned, according to her discretion."

Witnessed by William Bartholmew, Thomas Harris.

The inventory of his estate presents curious examples of the relative value of property at that time:

His dwelling house and land and out houses are valued at £40; Land about the house about eight acres, £12; Land, about fourteen acres £21; Marsh, about forty acres, £20; one mare with a mare foal £25; Six milch cows £30; Four yearling heyfers and a steere, £11, 10. Other effects making a total of £250, 5.

He died at the age of sixty-four years.

John Perkins 2, son of John 1, an inhabitant, 1634.

Took the freeman's oath at Boston, May 17, 1637.

Commoner, 1641.

Subscribed five shillings towards Major Denison's allowance, 1648.

The inventory of his estate, not including land, amounting to £103, 8, 3, was taken by William Goodhue and John Dane, March 25, 1659.

In 1635, he purchased of John Cogswell a lot of land containing six acres, bounded by the river on south east.

In 1637, he is possessed of an Island, having on the south side thereof the great river, called Chebacco river; on the north side an arm of the same river, running between the said island and another island called Hog Island; bounded on the east by the great bay of Chebacco; on the west by the meeting of many creeks coming out of the marshes.

He had a house lot in High street, near Mr. Bartholmew in 1641.

line of father?

I have found no record of his children, excepting that in the will of his father, who mentions his sons John (Quartermaster) and Abraham.

John 3, son of John 2, has the title of Quartermaster in 1663 and 1665.

1673, June 5, he acknowledged himself to stand bound to the Treasurer of the Countye in the sum of £100, &c., he shall save the town harmless, by his entertaining Matthew Hooker, a Jersie man, to be inhabitant, by taking him for a tenant into a farm of his.

He agrees, November, 1673, to lay down to the town half the thatch bank at his island, viz., the thatch bank next the Town river, the remainder confirmed to him, &c.

1663, he was Selectman. 1664, he was commoner.

1679, voter in town affairs.

all line of John 2 (not sons)

1668, March 30. Quartermaster John Perkins is licensed to keep an Ordinary. 1677, March. Quarter M'r Perkins his license is renewed for a year: alsoe his license to draw liquor. 1678-84, renewed the same.

Elizabeth Perkins, wife of Q'r master John Perkins, died September 27, 1684.

1686, March. Abraham Perkins of Ipswich—his Brother—Attorney to Quarter master John Perkins his father unto sd Luke according as he, sd Luke, is engaged by sd articles of agree't, bearing date, November 18, 1684, made betwixt Abraham Perkins, Jacob Perkins, attornies to the sd father & Luke Perkins.

Abraham Perkins 3. son of John 2, was born 1640. He married Hannah Bemseley, October 16, 1661. Children:

Hannah, born March 7, 1662
Abraham, born August 15, 1665
John, born February 25, 1667

1669, April 20. Ordered that the constable shall destrain of Abrm Perkins forty shillings for felling or carrying away two trees—he being no commoner.

1672, February. Abraham Perkins complained against Wm Story, sen'r, 'for taking of a load of green timber about December last, oke timber, which he drew over my farme of the south side Chebacco river, either off the commons or my farme.

1673, Nov. Ordered—to distrain 20 shillings of Abraham Perkins for entertaining John Laveritt one week at his farme.

1688, May. Paid Corn't Abraham Perkins for entertaining ye Justices when ye rate was made £5. 11, 1.

Abraham Perkins inherited from John 2, the Island already described at Chebacco river, as it appears from a Town record, that, in 1697, he complains of the want of a way laid out to the island; and in 1698 it is recorded that he "hath a high way laid out to his Island through Labor-in-vain fields."

He was a voter in Town affairs in 1679; and had horses on the common in 1697, when he has the appelation Mr.

Cornet Abraham Perkins sworn constable of Ipswich, March, 1691.

The Committee appointed to allot the seats and pews in ye new Meeting house, January 16, 1700, assign to Mr. Abraham Perkins the first seat on ye so-west of ye great door, for his wife and family; one ye heads of sd family to sit in ye pew.

To himself was appointed the seat No. 2, with ten others who, with one exception, have the title of Mr,—Thomas Hart being styled Ensign.

Mr. Abraham Perkins died April 28, 1722, "being run over by a Trumbull, which broke many bones across his breast."

Here lyes ye body of
Mr. Abraham Perkins
aged 82 years
Died April ye
28th 1722

His will is dated April 5, and was proved June 11, 1722. He mentions Hannah, his wife; and his sons John and Stephen. His sons Beamsley, Nathaniel, Abraham, had died before him.

His wife, Hannah Perkins, survived him until October 16, 1732, when she died at the age of ninety-one years.

Her will is dated February 1, 1732, by which she gives the house her husband purchased of Deacon Jacob Foster of Ipswich, dec'd, unto the three children of her son Abraham Perkins, deceased, namely, Joseph, Nathaniel, Abraham. She provides that if "either of them should die before they arrive at the age of twenty-one years."

She bequeathes legacies to her son Stephen and Dr. John Perkins.

To Sarah, Hannah, Martha, daughters of her son Beamsley Perkins, deceased.

To Abraham and Sarah, children of her son Nathaniel.

To Hannah Staniford, daughter of her daughter Hannah, the late wife of Daniel Ringe, deceased.

To John and Mary, children of her daughter Brewer.

To Joseph and Elizabeth, children of daughter Elizabeth Eveleth.

To her grandson, Samuel Ingalls, son of Martha, my daughter.

Stephen Perkins executor.

In 1676, Twyford West payd for his daughter, the wife of Abra: Perkins, upon hir pr'st'ment, 3s & fees, 2s 6d. [Probably for wearing silk.]

November 14, 1698. At a legal meeting of the Inhabitants of Ipswich, the Committee appointed to consider the building and the builder of a new Meeting-house, reported a design of the house, and the sum for which Abraham Tilton would build it. "And Mr. Abraham Perkins stood up and said that he would build it for £900, five hundred to be paid in money, and four hundred to be paid in pay as money; and the meeting thereupon unanimously consented to his proposal."

[At this point Mr. Hammatt, gives a History of the edifices of worship on our Meeting-house Green. It will be printed with "Miscellaneous Papers."

all line
of John 2
(not sure)

Bemsley Perkins 4, son of Abraham Perkins 3, born April 7, 1673, and died July 23, 1720.

Here Lyes ye Body of
Capt. Bemsley Perkins who
Died July ye 23, 1720 in
ye 45 year of his age

The above inscription on the gravestone is probably erroneous respecting his age. The Town record gives it forty-seven years three months and sixteen days,—which may be inferred to be correct from being so very particular The gravestone had imbedded in it a tablet which probably ? represented the Family Coat of Arms, which, unfortunately, being secured by lead, did not escape the vandalism of the eighteenth century, which would not scruple to unplumb a father for the sake of procuring the means of killing a brace of ducks.

By his will, dated February 7, 1718-9, and proved July 29, 1720, Bemsley Perkins gave all his property to his wife Hannah, to be distributed to her children at her discretion. His children were 3 daughters: Sarah, Hannah, Martha.

Here lies ye
Body of Lucy
Perkins, Daugh
ter of Capt
Behmsly Per
kins & Mrs
Hannah his
wife who
Died Nouem'r
ye 3, 1712 be
ing 25 days
old

Doctor John Perkins 4, son of Abraham 3, was graduated at Harvard College, 1695. He had ye 4th pew next Mr. Boreman's, on ye west side, for his wife.

Nathaniel Perkins 4, son of Abraham 3, with Judith his wife had Nathaniel, born March 31, 1685, who probably died early. At the time of his mother's decease in 1732, there were living of his children, Abraham and Sarah.

Capt. Stephen Perkins 4, son of Abraham 3, was born in June, 1683. He was published with his first wife, Mary Eveleth, July 12, 1706. She was born October 15, 1683, and died January 17, 1718-19.

Here lies ye body of
Mrs. Mary Perkins, wife
of Mr. Stephen Perkins
aged 35 years 3 months
& 2 days Died Januy
ye 17th 1718-19

Capt. Stephen Perkins was published with his second wife, Margaret Blish, Sept. 25, 1719, who survived him. He died May 15, 1733.

By his will, dated April 23, 1733, he bequeaths to his wife, Margaret, £340, having received so much of her money when he married her. He styles himself shop keeper, and possessed considerable wealth. His mansion house and homestead, containing about nine acres are appraised at £750.

He left one son, Francis Perkins, a minor, and two daughters, Mary Norton, and Elizabeth, who married Capt. Elias Lowater, November 10, 1731.

Francis Perkins 5, son of Capt. Stephen 4, had Francis born Sept. 4, 1748.

Abraham Perkins 4, son of Abraham 3, was born in December, 1685, and died in 1718.

Here lyes buried ye
body of Abraham
Perkins son of Mr
Abraham Perkiens
who died February
ye 14 1718 aged
32 years

line of John 2

He married July 12, 1707, Esther Perkins, probably daughter of Matthew and Esther Perkins, who was born July 17, 1690. She married a second husband named Porter, before 1727. She was appointed the guardian of her son, Joseph Perkins, a minor, Feb. 27, 1726-7. The older children were Nathaniel Perkins and Abraham.

Thomas 2

Thomas Perkins 2, son John 1, was one of the soldiers who served to the Indians, December 14, 1643.

1648. He subscribed four shillings towards Major Denison's compensation.

At the time of his father's decease, 1654, he had a son,—John Perkins.

this leaves out 9 children including our Thomas

line of Jacob 2

Jacob Perkins 2, son of John 1, subscribed four shillings towards Major Denison's allowance, 1648.

He was confirmed a Serjeant of the Ipswich Company, 1664. Was Tythingman, 1679.

1664, Feb. 14. Agreed with Jacob Perkins in behalf of the widow Roberts to keep the sheep, &c.

1666. August. Serj't Jacob Perkins, Surveyor.

1678, Feb. 15, commoner. 1664, 1679, voter.

1691. Juryman.

Actual line

His wife died February 12, 1685.

He died February 5, 1699, and left sons Jacob and Matthew. His estate was inventoried £15, 16, 9.

His Children: This leaves out Elizabeth, [illegible]

Mary, born May 14, 1658 m John Annable
Jacob, born 1662, married Elisabeth Sparks
Matthew, born June 23, 1665 m. Esther Burnham
Hannah, born November 11, 1670 m. Ezekiel Woodward?
Joseph, born June 20, 1674 m Martha Morgan in CT
Sarah, born May 18, 1677 — ?
Jabez ~~Javis~~; born May 15, 1678 m x2 in CT

Jacob Perkins 3, son of Jacob 2, was born 1662, married Elisabeth Sparks, December 25, 1684.

Jacob Perkins
Died November
ye 12, 1705
in ye 44 year
of his age

The rest of the article is omitted. It follows Jacob 3 (James 2). Also omitted is the article on Rev. William Perkins, not related.

R906 P V2 19 1882 Essex Hist Coll.

Children of Thos. and Mary (Perkins) Bradbury were:

Wymond, b. Apr. 1, 1637.
Judith, b. Oct. 2, 1638.
Thomas, b. Jan. 28, 1640.
Mary, b. March 17, 1642.
Jane, b. May 11, 1645.
Jacob, b. June 17, 1647.
William, b. Sept. 15, 1649.
Elizabeth, b. Nov. 11, 1651.
John, b. Apr. 20, 1654.
Ann, b. Apr. 16, 1656.
Jabez, b. June 27, 1658.

our Averill line

6 Jacob (*John*[1]) was born in England in 1624. He married first Elizabeth Whipple;[7] her father's name is not known. The time of their marriage was probably in 1648; she died Feb. 12, 1685, her age being fifty-six years. He afterwards married for a second wife, Damaris Robinson, widow of Nathaniel Robinson, mariner, of Boston. She removed to Boston after the death of Jacob Perkins, and died there, leaving property by will to several children by her first husband. The date of her death was in 1716, and her age at that time was eighty years. At the time of his marriage with the widow Robinson he made a promise to support her during her life; later in life he gave all his property into the possession of his two sons, Jacob and Matthew, on condition that they support both himself and wife during their natural lives. This will appear evident from the following extract from the deed which he gave his sons Matthew and Jacob.

Whipple

20 March, 1693.

I, Sargt. Jacob Perkins, sen.

"Having grown old & decrepid and not able to manage my farm, I give the other portions of my land to my two sons Jacob and Mathew provided they support me & my now wife, with whom I made an agreement when we were married," etc., etc.

---

[7] Possibly the daughter of Matthew Whipple.

He mentions in his will the portions he had given each of his sons on their marriage.

He was the youngest son, and by his father's will was to come into possession of his homestead[8] and lands after his mother's death. His lands lay at the eastern part of the town near the river. He was chosen sergeant of the military company of the town in 1664, and was ever after known as sergeant, or as he wrote it "Sargent Jacob Perkins, se.," which distinguishes him from two others of the same name.

He was a farmer, and his name is often seen upon the records in the purchase and sale of farming lands. He appears also to have taken his share of the duties of a citizen. We give this facsimile of his autograph as it is found as foreman of a jury of inquest, held upon the body of a girl who was found drowned.

Sargent Jacob Perkins se

His house was struck by lightning on a Sunday in 1671, "while many people were gathered there to repeat the sermon, when he and many others were struck down, and had his waistcoat pierced with many small holes, like goose-shot, and was beaten down as if he had been dead for the present."

Sergeant Jacob Perkins died in Ipswich Jan. 27, 1699–1700, aged seventy-six years.

---

[8] The original house, built by the elder John, was destroyed by fire in August, 1668, through the carelessness of a servant, who knocked the ashes from her pipe upon the thatch of an outbuilding. Another house was erected at or near the same spot which is standing at this day, though in a miserably decayed condition. The well near by has been and is still called "Jacob's well."

1882 version

Perkins Family — Essex Hx Coll (over Vol 22?)

Genealogy Part I QM John - got

Part II Deac Thos "

Part III Sgt Jacob

(— could not find +

(need #28 Judith

m. Nath. Brown —

(her bros + sis are 26 thru 34)

other females did have a blurb.

The names and ages of his children, the death of his wife Elizabeth, and of himself, are taken from his family bible, now in the possession of H. N. Perkins, Esq., of Melrose.

The children of Sergeant Jacob Perkins, sen., and wife Elizabeth were:

26 Elizabeth, b. Apr. 1, 1649; m. Thomas Borman, Jan. 1, 1667.
27 John, b. July 3, 1652; m. Mary Fisk; d. in 1718, æt. 67.
28 Judith, b. July 11, 1655; m. Nath. Browne, Dec. 16, 1673.
Page 143 29 Mary, b. May 14, 1658; m. Thomas Wells, Jan. 10, 1669.
30 Jacob, b. Aug. 3, 1662; m. 1st, Eliz. Sparks, Dec. 27, 1684; 2d, Sarah Treadwell.
31 Matthew, b. June 23, 1665; m. Esther Burnam.
32 Hannah, b. Oct. 11, 1670.
33 Joseph, b. June 21, 1674; m. Martha Morgan, May 22, 1700.
34 Jabez, b. May 15, 1677; m. 1st, Hannah Lathrop, June 30, 1698; 2d, Charity Leonard, in 1722.

7 Lydia (*John*^{1}) was born in Boston, and was baptized June 3, 1632, as is seen upon the records of the First Church there. She married Henry Bennet, a farmer of Ipswich, at what date is not known, but it is supposed in 1651. She is mentioned as "Lydia Bennet" in her father's will. Little is known concerning her husband. His name is sometimes seen in connection with other members of the family.

"May 12, 1675. John Perkins, Henry Bennet and others have power to act in matter of Jer. Belcher and others of Ipswich." *Rec. Colony of Mass. Bay, Vol. 1, p. 36.*

Henry Bennet[9] bought a farm of two hundred acres in 1654 of Jonathan Wade, in the southeastern part of Ipswich, where he lived forty years or more. This removed the family to a considerable distance from the old homestead, and may account for the infrequent mention of the name in connection with the affairs of the family.

Lydia Bennet is supposed to have died about 1672, as Henry Bennet married a second wife not long after that time. She was Mary (Smith) Burr, widow of John Burr, who was her second husband, her first being Philip Call. She was the daughter of Richard Smith, of Shropham, Co. Norfolk, England. She died Jan. 12, 1707–8. He was living Oct. 3, 1707.

The names of five of his children are known, all by his first wife, Lydia. They were:

Jacob, b. 1651; m. Sarah ———; d. March 5, 1685–6.
John, b. in 1655; killed at Bloody Brook, Sept. 18, 1675.
William, b. 1657; living in Ipswich in 1685.
Henry, b. in 1664; m. 1st, Frances Burr; 2d, Margaret ———.
Thomas, b. ; m. Elizabeth ——— about 1692; d. in 1700.

NOTE.

The foregoing individuals constitute the first two generations; that is, of John Perkins, sen., and of his sons and daughters. In giving the descendants of the three sons, to whom only the name attaches, it is proposed to take them in order of their ages.

PART I, therefore, will be devoted to the descendants of Quartermaster John Perkins.

PART II, to those of Deacon Thomas Perkins.

PART III, to those of Sergeant Jacob Perkins. - See this [illegible]
#28 - Judith [illegible]

8 John (*John*,^{2} *John*^{1}) was born in Ipswich about 1636. He married Lydia ——— about 1658, and died in 1659. Very little is known concerning him, but after his death his widow applied for administration on his estate. The Record of the March term of the Court for 1659 gives us the following:

---

[9] We are indebted to the research of the late John M. Bradbury, Esq., of Ipswich, for about all that is now known concerning Henry Bennet.

Essex Historical Collections Vol 22

(our Dodge line)

THE FAMILY OF JOHN PERKINS OF IPSWICH.

BY GEORGE A. PERKINS, M. D.

PART II. DEACON THOMAS.

In the first part of this genealogy of the family of John Perkins^1, sen., of Ipswich, Dea. Thomas Perkins^2 was mentioned among his children as his second son and an account of him, such as has been collected from the old records, was there given at some length, to which we would refer the reader, as also for what could be learned concerning his father, John Perkins^1, senior.

We now commence the second part, or what relates exclusively to the *descendants* of Dea. Thomas Perkins^2. Before doing this, a short abstract will be here given, as an introduction, which will be of interest to those who may not have access to part one, but all who are descended from John, sen., would do well to possess part one as well as two.

Deacon Thomas Perkins^2, the second son and second child of John, sen., and Judith ——— Perkins, was born in England (probably in the town of Newent, in Gloucestershire) in 1616, and, with his parents and their entire family of four children beside himself, came to Boston in 1631. The family removed from Boston to Ipswich in 1633. He resided there only a few years, during which time he had received a grant of land in Ipswich from the colony; this he shortly after sold to his brother John and others, and removed to "New Meadows" or what is now the town of Topsfield,[1] where he engaged in farming.

---

[1] 1650. Topsfield incorporated and taken from Ipswich and Salem; called first New Meadows.

He married Phebe Gould about 1640. She was the oldest child of Zaccheus and Phebe Gould of Topsfield. She, like her husband, was born in England; her baptism is recorded at Hemel Hempstead, Sept. 27, 1620, and it is probable that her birth was only a few days before this date, as it was the custom of that time to baptize children within a week or two of the time of their birth.

At the time of the marriage of Thomas Perkins with Phebe Gould, her father gave them, by "deed of gift," a farm of 150 acres of land in the central part of Topsfield upon which he probably resided until July 6, 1660, when he purchased a farm of Richard Swain containing 227 acres, "more or less," and upon this farm it is probable he spent the last days of his life. This farm was bounded on the west by the land of Zaccheus Gould, his father-in-law. Other bounds fix this farm as being mostly to the eastward of the road now leading from Topsfield to Wenham and upon Ipswich river; upon a road passing through this farm many of his descendants have resided and do so to this day; old bricks are ploughed up upon the spot where his house is believed to have stood.

Thomas Perkins was a farmer during the whole of his life; he certainly had the respect and esteem of his fellow citizens who elected him to fill many honorable positions in the church and town.

He was chosen to be one of the selectmen of the town in 1656 and was also one of the "tything men" in 1677.

He was chosen Deacon of the Church in Topsfield about 1677 (the date of this choice is not exactly ascertained); after this he was known as "Deacon Thomas Perkins" upon the records of the town. He died in the year 1686.

We give a copy of his will, which was found in the probate office of Suffolk County, where it was recorded by order of Sir Edmund Andros.

WILL OF DEA. THOMAS PERKINS.

"The last Will and Testament of Deacon Thomas Perkins senior, In the name of God Amen. I Thomas Perkins senior, of Topsfield, living in the county of Essex in New England, being weak in body but perfect in understanding, do commit my soul unto the hands of God and Jesus Christ, my blessed Redeemer, hoping in and through his merits to receive a blessed resurrection: do dispose of my estate as followeth.—My Will and desire is that my Wife might dwell in my house along with my sons, either with Thomas or Timothy, if they can possibly agree, for I do think it will be best for them to carry on together: and if they cannot agree together, then I give to my wife, Phebe Perkins, six pounds a year, to be paid her by my two sons Thomas and Timothy, so long as they keep together, and when they part then Thomas and Timothy and Elisha is to pay, each of them, forty shillings a year to her for her maintenance so long as she continues a widow. And I also give my wife, Phebe Perkins, two cows which shall be kept by the charge of the Executors for their mother's use so long as she is a widow.

And I do also give to my wife, Phebe Perkins, a bed and all furniture thereunto belonging, and half the household stuff, to her and to be at her dispose.

I do give to my three sons, namely, Thomas, Elisha, and Timothy all the farm I do live on, to them and their male heirs together. I do give to my son Elisha the norwest end of my farm, bounded within two rods of the west and north side of the spring that is by my son Elisha's field, and the line to run from two rods of that spring, forementioned, upon a N. E. point, till it comes to my brother Reddington's land, and so two rods from the forementioned spring, his bounds is to run upon a S. W. Point till it comes to Jacob Towne Senior, his land. And I do give to my sons, Thomas and Timothy, all the rest of my farm, forementioned, to be equally divided between them except the meadow: And I do also give to my son Thomas two acres of meadow lying beyond the clay pits, next Mr. Bradstreet's hill. And I do give to my son Zaccheus four acres of Meadow, out of my forementioned farm, his lifetime, and if he hath a son it shall be his sons. And all the rest of my Meadow I do give to my three sons namely Thomas, Elisha and Timothy.

My thirty acre lot lying over the river I do also give to my grandchild, Thomas Perkins, my son Johns sone, or thirty pounds if he liveth till he marryeth or be of age. And Thomas and Timothy and Elisha is to pay him this Thirty pounds or the forementioned lot.

And I give to my son Zaccheus the farm which he liveth upon, which I had of my father, Gould, to be his and his male heirs forever, provided he pays sixty pounds to the Executors or their assigns, and if he will not pay, then he shall have but half of it.

I do also give to my daughters children forty pounds to be equally divided among them.—I do also give to my son, Joseph Towne, sixteen acres of land lying by Serg. Jacob (Towne's) land at the northwest end of the Long Hill, and sixteen pounds more which is to be paid him by the Executors.

I do also give to my daughter, Judith, forty pounds and a bed and all furniture belonging thereunto, and one Cow.

I do further give to my son Thomas all the housing after the death of his mother. And while she liveth a widow she is to have use of a room, which she pleases. And if Thomas and Timothy can not agree to live together in those housing which are already built, then Thomas shall pay to his brother Timothy three parts of four toward the building of Timothy an house of the same bigness as his brother Elisha's House. I also give to my son Timothy all my cattle except my two steers coming three, which the said steers I give to my son Elisha, only my son Elisha shall give to his brother Timothy one of his oxen when he puts them off for fatting.

And I also will and give to my wife Phebe Perkins the old white mare for use. And I also give to my son Timothy the young mare and colt, only his mother shall have the use of her if she stands in need of her. And my will is that all the sheep that I have shall be divided betwixt my wife and Timothy, and Timothy shall keep them, and when his mother marrieth or dies, then Timothy shall have them all.

I also give to my son Elisha's son Thomas one calf.—I do also give to my son Timothy and his mother all the swine for their provision for the year ensuing the date hereof.

My will is, if it may be, that Thomas and Timothy carry on the farm together, one to have half the improved land and one the other half, and likewise pastures without dividing, and orchards; and when Thomas and Timothy part then my will is that one quarter of the income of the orchard shall be my son Elisha's. Also my will is that my cart and ploughs and chains shall be for Thomas and Timothy's use for the carrying on of the farm.

And I do ordain and constitute my sons Thomas and Timothy, to be my lawful executors, for to receive all debts and to pay all debts. And my will is that my wife shall have her salary every year duly paid her, but the rest are not to have all their pay till four or five years be expired.

Date, the eleventh day of December, in the year of our Lord God one thousand six hundred and eighty and five.

Those four lines blotted and those words interlined on the other side of the paper was before assigning of it. The line dashed out on this side of the paper was before the assigning of it.

Thomas Perkins

Witness. Sam^l. Howlett. Dan^l. Reddington.
Proved before the pres'dt.
Boston 10 Sept^r. 1686.
Attest Daniel Allin Cler. H. M. Willis Reg."

The children of Dea. Thomas Perkins^3 and Phebe (Gould) Perkins were:

4 (17)[3] John, b. 1641; m. Deborah Browning Nov. 28, 1666; d. May 19, 1668.
✓ 5 (18) Phebe, b. ab. 1644; m. Joseph Towne 1665; d. after 1680. — Dodge line
6 (19) Zaccheus, b. about 1647; m. Rebecca —— about 1704; d. Dec., 1732.
7 (20) Martha, b. about 1649; m. John Lamson Dec. 17, 1669; d. after 1728.
8 (21) Mary, b. ab. 1651; m. Wm. Howlett, Oct. 27, 1671; d. 1728.
9 (22) Elisha, b. about 1656; m. 1st, Catherine Towne Feb. 23, 1680; 2nd, Wid. Elizabeth (Knight) Towne.
10 (23) Judith, b. 28 Jan., 1658; unmarried; d. before 1719.
11 (24) Thomas, b. about 1659; m. Sarah Wallis June 1, 1683; d. 1719.
12 (25) Timothy, b. June 6, 1661; m. 1st, Hannah ——; 2nd, Abigail ——; 3d, Ruth Dorman.

THIRD GENERATION.

4 John (*Thomas*^{3}, *John*^{1}) was the oldest child of Dea. Thomas and Phebe Perkins. He was born in Topsfield, Mass., 1641. He married Deborah Browning, Nov. 28, 1666; and died May 19, 1668. She was the daughter of Thomas Browning of Topsfield.

---

[3] The *numbers* in parentheses are the same as in Part I; the other numbers refer to Part II only.

Their only child was born a few months before his death. On the decease of her husband, his widow applied to the court for a letter of administration, when the following was given, as appears on record:

"Administration of the estate of John Perkins, deceased, is granted to his widow, Deborah Perkins."

The inventory of his estate amounts to £48, 15s.; guardianship of his only child was given to the mother, June 30, 1668.

Dea. Thomas Perkins, in his will, made a bequest of land or money to "Thomas, my grandchild, son of my son John, if he liveth till he marryeth or be of age," etc.

Child of John and Deborah (Browning) Perkins:

13 Thomas, b. May 4, 1667; m. Sarah Richards, 1694.

✓ **5 Phebe** (*Thomas*³, *John*¹) was born in Topsfield, Mass., about 1644. She married Joseph Towne, 1665. He was the son of William and Joanna (Blessing) Towne. He was their youngest son and was probably born in Salem, 1639, where his parents resided for a time. He removed to Topsfield, where he afterwards resided. His name appears as a member of the church there. He was made freeman March 22, 1690, and died 1713, at the age of 74 years.

She died after 1680. We copy the following from the Deeds of Essex County:

"William Towne (born in Yarmouth Engᵈ.) and Joanna (Blessing) his wife, in consideration of the natural affection which they bear their son Joseph, and his contemplated marriage with Phebe, daughter of Thomas Perkins, convey to him two thirds of the house where they dwell, with Barn and out-houses, yard, garden &c. &c. 1663."

Dea. Thos. Perkins does not mention his daughter Phebe in his will, she being then deceased, but makes a bequest of forty pounds, to be divided between the children of his daughters. He also gives to "my son, Joseph Towne," sixteen acres of land at the northwest end of Long Hill, and sixteen pounds in money, which is to be paid him by the executors of his will.

The children of Joseph and Phebe (Perkins) Towne were: Susanna Towne

Phebe, b. May 4, 1666; m. —— Newhall.
Joanna, b. Jan. 22, 1668; m. Thos. Nichols. (They were living in Sutton, Mass., 1736.)
Mary, b. March 27, 1670.
Susanna, b. Dec. 24, 1671.
Joseph, b. March 22, 1673.
Sarah, b. Dec. 30, 1675; d. Nov. 1, 1760; "an aged woman."
✓ John, b. Feb. 20, 1678; m. 1st, Eliz. Rea; 2nd, Abigail Stanley.
Martha, b. May 19, 1680; m. Isaac Larrabe of Salem, June 30, 1715.

ours thru Eliz Rea

6 Zaccheus (*Thomas*³, *John*¹) was born in Topsfield, Mass., about 1647. He married Rebecka ——? about 1704. He died Dec. 1, 1732. She died 15 May, 1747. Very little can be learned concerning his wife. She was living at the time of his decease, and he directs his sons, by his will, to pay her five pounds a year, as long as she should remain his widow.

The court records of 1680 show at one time he had disgraced himself and brought sorrow upon his aged father, who paid a very large sum of money to extricate him from his unpleasant condition.

In his will, his father gives him a farm and house and four acres of meadow land.

In the inventory of his father's property is "Zaccheus, his land,—conditionally given.—70 acres at 30s per acre." This farm was given to his father Thomas by Zaccheus Gould.

Xtra pages

Children of Zaccheus and Rebecka (———) Perkins were:

14 Zaccheus, b. Sept. 19, 1705.
15 Thomas, born March 30, 1707.
16 William, b. May 4, 1710.

7 Martha (*Thomas*^{3}, *John*^{1}) was born in Topsfield, Mass., about 1649. She married John Lamson Dec. 17, 1669. He was a resident of Ipswich, Mass., and their marriage is recorded there. He died 1684. The time of her death is not known, but it was after 1719.

In the last will of Mary (Perkins) Howlett, she devises "to my sister, Martha Lamson, of Ipswich, living and being with myself in the County of Essex, in New England," etc. This will was made April 16, 1719. She says in this will: "In case my sister, Lamson, shall not live till that time (Mary's decease), then her part shall fall to her eldest surviving daughter."

After the decease of Mary Howlett (1728), her oldest daughter, Phebe, claimed her mother's portion.

Children of John and Martha (P.) Lamson were:

John, b. ———.
William, b. ———.
Thomas, b. ———.
Samuel, b. ———.
Phebe, b. ———; m. —— Fiske.
Martha, b. ———; m. —— Bigsby.

8 Mary (*Thomas*^{3}, *John*^{1}) was born in Topsfield, about 1651. She married William Howlett, Oct. 27, 1671. He was a resident of Ipswich.

There is no evidence that she had any children at the time of her decease, as she gives all her property to her other relatives. Her will is valuable and also curious, and shows the attention given in such documents at that time to apparently trifling matters. We quote from it as follows:

> "My will is that my cousin, John Howlett, who lives hard by me, shall, at my decease, have my silver porringer, as also his daughter shall have my silver spoon. Also I give to my cousin, John Howlett Senr. ye bedstead which I now have the improvement of, as also my great chest and a cane with an Ivory head on it, at my Decease.
>
> My will is that my cousin, Joseph Cummings, aforesaid, and my cousin, Sarah Wilds, now Perkins, who hath lived with me some years, shall have, at my decease, what remains undisposed of otherwise, equally divided between them, only my bed which I now lie upon shall (and is already ordered to my cousin Joseph Cummings), not be any part divided between them, but shall be free and clear to said Cummings, but all the rest as yet undisposed of, shall be equally divided between them, only that I would have it noted that my little Iron Dish Kittle as also my little brass Kittle that contains about the quantity of a pailful, together with a coverlid, which was my sister Judith's, lately deceased, and fell to my part of her estate. These particulars, last mentioned, shall fall into and be accounted part of my cousin Sarah Wilds or Perkins, aforesaid, her share."

Mary (Perkins) Howlett resided in Ipswich during the lifetime of her husband, and at his death she removed to Topsfield, her birthplace, where she died about June or July, 1728.

It is singular that neither she nor any other married daughters are mentioned in her father's will: he mentions only Judith, who was unmarried.

9 Elisha (*Thomas*^{3}, *John*^{1}) was born in Topsfield, Mass., about 1656. He married first, Katherine Towne, Feb. 23, 1680. She was the daughter of Jacob and Katherine (Symonds) Towne, born Feb. 25, 1662; she died July 2, 1714.

He married, second, widow Elizabeth (Knight) Towne, April 4, 1715. She was the widow of Samuel Towne,—his first wife's uncle. She died May 17, 1752. He died Feb. 18, 1741.

He was a farmer and had from his father a part of the homestead. He held many of the public offices of the town and county: he was clerk of the selectmen for

1705-6-8; in 1708-11-17-20-23, was fence viewer; grand juryman in 1708-9-15-18-21-25 was one of the selectmen 1710-12-16-24; and was surveyor of highways in 1717.

Children of Elisha and Katherine (Towne) Perkins were:

17 Thomas, b. Oct. 15, 1681; m. Mary Wildes.
18 Elisha, b. May 27, 1683.
19 John, b. Aug. 12, 1685; m. Mary Easty; d. June 22, 1750.
20 Katherine, b. Feb. 3, 1688.
21 Phebe, b. Aug. 10, 1690; m. 1st, Thos. Goodhall, 1713; 2nd, Joseph How, 1729.
22 Jacob, bapt. Nov. 13, 1692; m. Hannah Borman.
23 Ruth, b. May 10, 1695; bapt. June 9, 1695.
24 Mary, b. March 30, 1699.
25 Joseph, b. May 10, 1702; m. Mercy Robinson.

10 Judith (*Thomas*^{3}, *John*^{1}) was born in Topsfield, Mass., January 28, 1658. She was never married and it is probable that she always remained at home.

She is singular as being the only daughter in her father's family who is mentioned by name in his will; he gave her by that instrument as follows:

"I do give to my daughter, Judith, forty pounds and a bed and all the furniture thereunto belonging, and one Cow."

She is also mentioned in her sister Mary's will as having lately died. This last will was made in 1719, which was not far from the time of the death of Judith Perkins.

11 Thomas (*Thomas*^{3}, *John*^{1}) was born in Topsfield, Mass., about 1659. He married Sarah Wallis, June 1, 1683.

He received, by will, a part of his father's farm, which he cultivated in connection with his brother Timothy for some years, it being his father's express desire that these two brothers should "carry on" this farm together; but, he adds, "if they can not agree to do so, then Thomas was to pay three quarters of the expense of building for Timothy a house like his brother Elisha's." They divided the property when they separated in 1718. Thomas gave his portion, by his will, to his three sons, which portion he describes as being land bounded by that of his brother Timothy.

Thomas Perkins was on a jury at Salem when those accused of witchcraft were tried, and many condemned and executed. He afterwards, with the other jurors, signed a very honorable declaration of regret for the part they had borne in these trials.[3] His wife, Sarah, was living at the time of his death, which occurred in April, 1722.

He was a weaver as well as a farmer.

The children of Thomas and Sarah (Wallis) Perkins were:

26 Sarah, b. Jan. 20, 1684-5; m. William Makittrick Jan. 28, 1722-3.
27 Thomas, bapt. Dec. 9, 1688.
28 Hannah, bapt. March 12, 1692; m. David Balch.
29 Martha, b. June 29, 1695; bapt. June 30, 1695.
30 Robert, b. Feb. 28, 1697; bapt. March 7, 1697; m. Elizabeth Towne.
31 Samuel, b. Nov. 22, 1699; m. Margaret Towne.

12 Timothy (*Thomas*^{3}, *John*^{1}) was born in Topsfield, Mass., June 6, 1661. He married, first, Hannah ———, about 1688-9. She died about 1693. He married, second, Abigail ———, about 1694. She died about 1710-11. He married, third, Ruth Dorman about 1712.

The dates of the several marriages of Timothy Perkins are very unreliable, as the early records are exceeding defec-

---

[3] See Upham's Witchcraft, Vol. II, p. 475.

Get part before p 18

1-3

CS 71 p45

Regular one is (1884)

bring 5x 10cm one

What is missing

PERKINS GENEALOGY

THOMAS ALLEN PERKINS

PERKINS GENEALOGY

CS
71
P45
1948

1655; Mary, born May 14, 1658; Jacob, born August 3, 1662; Matthew, mentioned below; Hannah, born October 11, 1670; Joseph, born June 21, 1674; Jabez, born May 15, 1677.

Rest not
our line

(III) Captain Matthew Perkins, son of Sergeant Jacob Perkins, was born June 23, 1665, in Ipswich, and died April 15, 1738. His will was proved April 27, 1738, and his widow was executrix. He married, 1685-86, Esther Burnham, daughter of Lieutenant Thomas and Mary (Tuttle) Burnham, born August 3, 1662, died October 6, 1749. Her will was dated June 5, 1743, and proved October 16, 1749. On March 23, 1665-66, Matthew Perkins received from his father, a deed of gift of "a house and one quarter of an acre of land within that ye gate that ye highway leads to Jeffrey's neck, on his marriage with Lieutenant Burnham his daughter." Children: Matthew, mentioned below; Esther, July 17, 1690; Joseph, June 15, 1695; Mary, December 3, 1696; Elizabeth, October 27, 1702.

(IV) Matthew (2) Perkins, son of Captain Matthew (1) Perkins, was born in Ipswich about 1688, and died May 28, 1737. His will was dated March 19, 1736, and proved July 27, 1737. His widow was executrix, and was given "the improvement of all his property, until his oldest son, Matthew, shall arrive at twenty-one years of age." Matthew received a double portion and the other children equal shares of the property. He married (first) intentions published May 14, 1709, Martha Rogers, who died September 30, 1720. He married (second) January 14, 1721, Mary Smith widow of Ebenezer Smith. She married (third) James Gerrish, of Berwick, Maine, where she moved, taking her younger children with her. Children by first wife: Martha, baptized about 1710; John, baptized March 28, 1712; Hannah, baptized December 20, 1713; Jonathan, baptized September 11, 1715; Sarah, baptized May 12, 1716. Children by second wife: Esther, baptized December 24, 1721; Ruth, baptized August 31, 1723; Matthew, baptized May 30, 1725; John, baptized November 19, 1727; Brewer, baptized June 7, 1730, died September 1, 1730; Stephen, baptized January 23, 1731, died February 21, 1735; Abraham, mentioned below; Stephen, baptized December 5, 1736.

(V) Abraham Perkins, son of Matthew (2) Perkins, was born in Ipswich, baptized April 6, 1735, and died August 16, 1804. He was aged five years when his mother married Mr. Gerrish and moved to Berwick, Maine, taking him with her. At one time he attended school six months to Master Sullivan, father of General Sullivan of revolutionary fame. At one time Master Sullivan was obliged to leave the school for a time, and he warned his pupils not to leave the room; six of them disobeyed and went to a brook to play, were surprised by Indians and scalped and murdered. Abraham obeyed the teacher, and in later years, when teaching himself, often related this episode as a warning to the disobedient. He moved from Berwick to Exeter, New Hampshire, and then to Sanbornton, New Hampshire, where he taught school for thirty years. It is said that he subjected his pupils to military discipline and never went to church himself for four years unless under arms. He was also a surveyor, and laid out the first roads in Sanbornton. He learned the trade of shoemaker in Berwick, and while teaching school followed his trade in the mornings and evenings. He also tanned sheepskins. The Saturday before he died he finished his last school work and returned home with the expressed presentiment that his work was done. His influence is said to have been equal to that of any minister ever in the town in forming the character of the Sanbornton people. He married Mary (Sanborn) Fogg of Sanbornton, widow, born January 6, 1733, and died May 25, 1823, daughter of Jeremiah Sanborn. Children: Anna, born November 8, 1758; Jonathan, mentioned below; Esther Jane, August 3, 1762; Ruth, July 21, 1764; Meribah Fogg, June 26, 1766; Lydia, April 17, 1768; Theodate, April 13; 1770; Matthew, November 18, 1772; Mary B., September 27, 1774, died September 15, 1775.

(VI) Jonathan Perkins, son of Abraham Perkins, was born in Berwick, Maine, October 17, 1760, and died July 25, 1852. He served in the revolution, enlisting in 1780, and was at West Point. He was a farmer on his father's estate and made shoes in the winters. He was ninety-two when he died, and before that time had never been kept in his bed a day by sickness. He is said to have been a great Bible reader. He married, October 7, 1782, Hannah Taylor, daughter of Chase Taylor, and she died September 15, 1837. Children: John Brewer, mentioned below; Chase, March 11, 1786; Matthew, June 17, 1788; Phebe, December 3, 1791; Sally M., March 31, 1804; Abraham, October 13. 1807.

(VII) John Brewer Perkins, son of Jonathan Perkins, was born in Sanbornton, May 16, 1784, and died February 2, 1880, aged ninety-five. He had unusual strength, and when seventy-seven is said to have held the plough of a breaking up team, and to have broken colts when ninety years old. He married, May 9, 1809, Comfort Sanborn, born 1789, died March 11, 1873, daughter of Dr. Benajah Sanborn. Children: Julian, January 15, 1810;

Genealogy of New England Families
by William Cutter R 929.3 C991
pg 745

PERKINS

The Perkins family is an ancient one in England. The first of the name of whom there is record, and from whom the family is descended, is "Peter Morley Esq., alias Perkins," who lived in the time of Richard II., and was an officer in the household, or steward of the court of Sir Hugh Dispencer, about 1300. ?? The name is spelled variously Peterkins, Parkins, Perkings and Perkins. Several of the name lived in the neighborhood of Newent, county Gloucester, England, and the immigrant John is said to have come from that part of England. ??

(I) John Perkins, the immigrant ancestor, was born in 1590, probably in Newent, county Gloucester, England. He sailed from Bristol, December 1, 1630, in the ship "Lion," with his wife and five children. He was in the company with Rev. Roger Williams, and after a stormy voyage of sixty-seven days they landed at Boston, February 6, 1631. He settled first in Boston and was admitted a freeman May 18, 1631. He was one of a committee of four to settle the bounds between Roxbury and Dorchester, November 7, 1632. He removed in 1633 to Ipswich, and had several grants of land. His house was near the river, at the entrance to Jeffrey's Neck, on what is now East street. He was deputy to the general court in 1636, and on the grand jury in 1648 and 1652. His will was dated March 23, 1654. He married Judith GATER?. Children: John, born 1614; Thomas, born 1616; Elizabeth, born 1618; Mary, born 1620; Jacob, mentioned below; Lydia, born 1632.

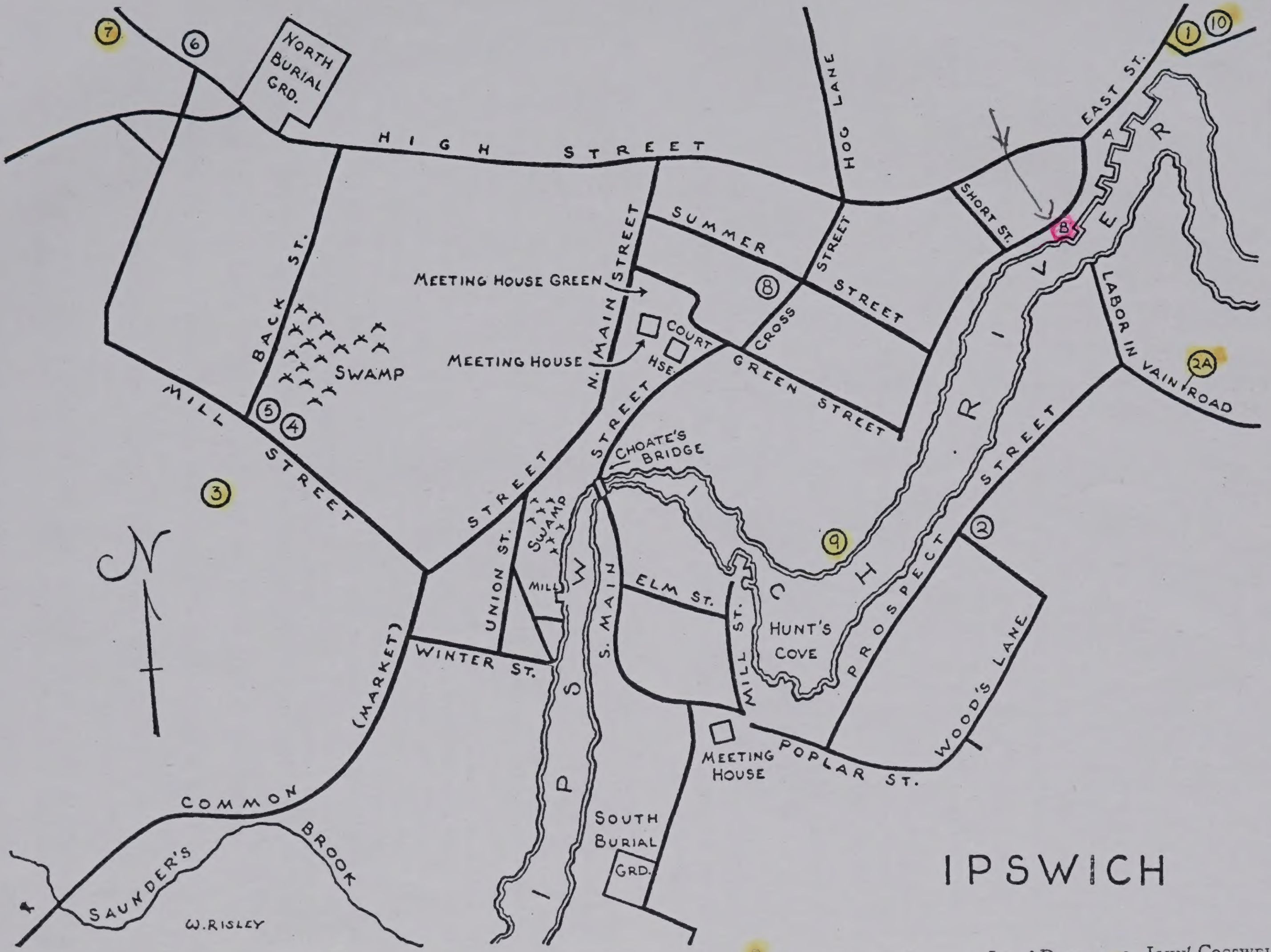
(II) Sergeant Jacob Perkins, son of John Perkins, was born in England in 1624, and died in Ipswich, Massachusetts, January 27, 1699-1700, aged seventy-six years. He was a farmer in Ipswich. His will was dated March 20, 1693. His house was struck by lightning on a Sunday in 1671, "while many people were gathered there to repeat the sermon, when he and many others were struck down, and had his waistcoat pierced with a small hole, like goose-shot, and was beaten down as if he had been dead for the present." He occupied the homestead, at the eastern part of the town, near the river. He married (first) Elizabeth Whipple (second) Damaris Robinson, widow of Nathaniel Robinson, mariner, of Boston. She died in 1716, aged eighty years. Children: Elizabeth, born April 1, 1649; John, born July 3, 1652; Judith, born July 11, ✓

Averill Line

after 1586

m. Nathaniel Brown

— over —



A. Stacy's Wharf B. Perkins' Wharf 2a. John^{2} Perkins bought land near here 1. John^{1} Perkins, Sr. 2. John^{2} Dane 3. John^{1} Cogswell 4. Simon^{1} Stacy 5. William^{1} Warner 6. Alexander^{1} Knight 7. Simon^{2} Tuttle 8. John^{1} Dane (near R. Muzzy) 9. John^{1} Tuttle 10. John^{2} Perkins the mother Elizabeth pre-deceased John^2 but the date of the death of Thomas^3 has not been found.

John^2 was a signer with others in February, 1681–2, of a petition to the King relative to clearing of colony lands from the claims of Robert Mason. His wife Elizabeth died on September 27, 1684. He had given farms to his sons before his death which occurred[4] at Ipswich on December 14, 1686, so left no will.

This family must have had a streak of the match-making propensity, for what is called[28] a "Romance of Cross Island" (which had earlier belonged to John^2) took place in his home and, as will presently be shown, our Isaac^3 at a later date conceived a very definite plan for one of his son's matrimonial affairs (p. 490).

> "Cross Island[28] is a gigantic formation near our eastern border, which guards our gateway to the sea. It is a runaway child of Cape Ann; a strayed fragment of the great granite peninsula. Yet it is a finished production of nature, graceful, independent, rising up out of its water bed north of the deep channel, thereby denying any connection with the ledges and quarries of the great cape.
>
> "Very early in the history of our town, in 1637, the town of Ipswich granted this island and the adjoining farm on the point to John Perkins, Jr."[28]

Cross Island also bore the name[28] of "Daffe Adowne Dille" and was often just "Dilly." About 1672, subsequent to its sale by John^2 and during the ownership of "Dille" by Robert^1 Cross, his son Stephen^2 Cross aspired to the hand of one Elizabeth^2 Cheney (John^1) of Newbury.[28] Perhaps the deed of gift had been lost, for thirteen years later (about 1685) John Kendrick* aged forty-two made a deposition as follows:

> "This Deponent testifyeth and saith that in the year 1672, I, the said Deponent, was at the house of Quartermaster John Perkins in Ipswich; where was Robert Cross, Sen'r, and widdow Cheney of Newbury, and Stephen Cross, ye sonn of said Robert Cross, and Elizabeth Cheney, daughter of the s'd widdow Cheney; the s'd Robert Cross then desired the s'd widdow to give her daughter Elizabeth in marriage to his sonn Stephen; the s'd widdow would not consent to the same except the said Robert would give his sonn Stephen sum land for to settle upon; the s'd Robert tould the s'd widdow that he had an island in Chebacco river, which he did intend for his sonn Stephen, which he valued to be worth two hundred pounds sterling or theire abouts; the s'd widdow then said unto the said Robert that if he would give his sonn, the s'd Stephen, all that island that shee would then give her dafter, Elizabeth, unto the s'd Stephen in marriage, which he, the said Robert did freely promise to doe and emmediately thereupon the s'd Robert Cross drew a deed of gift to his sonn Stephen of the s'd island and subscribed his hand to it; to the which deed I, the s'd deponent, was one witness, and Quartermaster John Perkins was the other witness, and upon these terms the said Robert Cross and widdow Cheney agreed and their sonn and daughter, in sum convenient time after, were joined together in matrymoney.
>
> "John Kendrick made oath to the truth of this in court in Ipswich, March 31, 1685."

And in less than a year after this assistance to "Dan Cupid," our Quartermaster John^2 Perkins died.

The known children of Quartermaster John^2 and Elizabeth (——) Perkins, all born at Ipswich were[3,4,10]

i. John^3, b. abt. 1636; d. at Ipswich in 1659; m. abt. 1658, Lydia (——).
ii. Abraham^3, b. abt. 1640; d. at Ipswich Apr. 27, 1722, in his 82nd year by being "run over by

---

*John Kendrick had married Lydia^2 Cheney, older sister of Elizabeth^2 above.[28]

JOHN PERKINS - JUDITH GATER
MARY PERKINS - Capt. THOMAS BRADBURY
JUDITH BRADBURY - CALEB MOODY
Rev. SAMUEL MOODY - HANNAH SEWALL
MARY MOODY - Rev. JOSEPH EMERSON
EDWARD EMERSON - MARY OWEN
EDWARD EMERSON Jr. - ABIGAIL LYMAN
CHARLES OCTAVIUS EMERSON - HARRIET JANE PHILLIPS
EDWARD OCTAVIUS EMERSON - LUCY HARRIET JOHNSON
CHARLES FRANCIS^9 EMERSON - BESSIE^9 BENSON

FIRST GENERATION

No. 1

1. JOHN^1 PERKINS (HENRY^A, THOMAS^B, HENRY^C?, THOMAS^D) was baptized 23 December 1583 at Hillmorton, county Warwick, England, and died after 28 March 1654 (the date of his will) and before 27 September 1654 (when it was proved), probably at Ipswich, MA. He was the 13th of 14 children and the ninth son of HENRY^A and ELIZABETH^A (SAWBRIDGE) PERKINS of Hillmorton and the grandson of THOMAS^B and ALICE^A (KREEBLE) PERKINS. JOHN^1 married 9 October 1608 at Hillmorton, JUDITH^1 GATER, daughter of MICHAEL^A AND ISABEL^A (BAYLIE) GATER. JUDITH^1 was baptized 19 March 1588 at Hillmorton and died after 1654 in Ipswich.

Three Presidents of the United States--Millard Filmore, the 13th; Stephen Grover Cleveland, the 22nd; and Gerald Rudolph Ford, Jr., the 38th--were descendants of JOHN^1 and JUDITH^1.

JOHN^1, his wife, three sons and two daughters sailed 1 December 1630 from Bristol, England, aboard the famous "Lion", arriving in Boston, MA, 6 February 1631. This was the second trip during that year for the "Lion" and master, Captain William^1 Pierce, brother of ancestor MICHAEL^1 PIERCE. Captain Pierce had just completed landing a group of immigrants in the Boston area in June of that year, when Governor John Winthrop arrived 30 June in the flagship of his fleet, the "Arabella". Winthrop quickly "learned of the shortage of foodstuffs and the need of scorbutics" (ref. 6) among his colonists and ordered Captain Pierce to immediately return to England for supplies. The return trip of the "Lion" brought 200 tons of provisions, but very few passengers other than the PERKINS family and Roger Williams. This was probably because people had learned to fear the discomfort and danger of an Atlantic winter crossing. It was a very rough trip, but there was only one fatality, a young seaman who fell from the "spritsail yard" (ref. 6) during a storm. The "Lion" arrived safely at Nantasket, MA, 5 February 1631, and then, with favorable winds and tide, sailed in to dock in Boston, MA, the next day.

JOHN^1 first settled in Boston. He joined the First Church of Boston with his wife and was among the first group of eight men (along with ancestors THOMAS^1 FORD of Dorchester, MA, and ROBERT^1 MOULTON of Charlestown, MA) to be elected to take the oath of a Freeman 18 May 1631. "He had acquired a certain privilege probably as an aid to the community's food supply, for the Court of Assistants ruled on April 2, 1632, that 'noe p'son w^t soeuer shall shoote att fowle vpon Pullen Poynte [Chelsea] or Noddles Ileland [East Boston] but that the s^d places shall be reserved for **JOHN PERKINS** to take fowle wth netts'" (ref. 6).

* ✓

In June of 1632 JOHN^1'S youngest daughter, Lydia^2, was baptized in the First Church of Boston, and 7 November of that year JOHN^1 and Roger Conant were appointed by the court to establish the boundaries between Roxbury and Dorchester. On 1 October 1633 JOHN^1, then "called 'sargeant' had evidently, but temporarily, slipped from the 'straight and narrow' for on that date he was ordered to carry up forty turfs toward the completion of the earthworks of the fort on Corn or Fort Hill 'as a punishment for drunkenness'. This is the only hint of criticism found against him at any time" (ref. 6).

see footnote *

Late in 1633 JOHN^1 and his family moved with John Winthrop "the younger" (ref. 6) to Ipswich, MA. John Winthrop was the founder of Ipswich and would later be Connecticut's first Gov. (see ancestor JOHN^4 LAKE for details). Here the PERKINS family remained for several generations. JOHN^1 served Ipswich in countless ways during his years there. For example, he was a representative to the General Court in Boston 25 May 1636 and on trial juries and grand juries as a constable. He was a lot surveyor, a selectman, a surveyor of highways, an administrator of estates and a settler of disputes. Doing these many public services, he was often associated with John^1 Tuttle. One interesting additional activity was his continued interest in hunting. In 1648, for instance, he was paid 3 shillings for killing three foxes.

JOHN^1 received grants of land from Ipswich in 1634, 1635, 1636 and 1639. One was "a small island and about thirty acres at what was called Moore's Point, but his home was near the river, at the entrance to Jeffries Neck, on what is now (1889) East Street" (ref. 6).

JOHN^1 served in the militia against the Indians. In one case in December of 1643 he "had three shillings due him at the rate of 12 pence per day for service as a soldier" (ref. 6). In March 1650, when he was nearly 60 years old, the court freed him from ordinary training. ✓

On 28 March 1654, JOHN^1 made his will. He had often in the past signed his name, indicating he was an educated man. However he signed his will with his mark, suggesting that he was very ill at the time. He appointed his wife, JUDITH^1, executrix and made bequests to all his children. He left the family homestead to his third son, Jacob^2, but only after the death of his mother, who had life-occupancy. The will was proved 26 July 1654, and Jacob^2 lived in this house until 7 August 1668, when it was destroyed by fire. ✓

JOHN^1 PERKINS, his family and his inventory were picked as the "typical household economy" of the 17th Century by William B. Weeden in his book *Economic and Social History of New England* (ref. 6). JOHN^1'S inventory clearly showed the small amounts of money and limited amounts of property that were needed for a hard-working, dedicated, well-respected and trusted family to raise children and enjoy a fruitful life during that time.

* Probably these events really apply to John Jr, the eldest son

JOHN^1'S net estate was worth 250 pounds at his death in 1654. Yet he and JUDITH^1 had brought up six children in their home and served their community in countless different, valuable ways.

The children of JOHN^1 and JUDITH^1 (GATER) PERKINS were:

I 2. John^2, b., bapt. 14 Sep, 8 Nov 1609 at Hillmorton, co. Warwick, Eng.; d. 14 Dec 1686 at Ipswich, MA; m. ca. 1635-6, prob. at Ipswich, MA, Elizabeth Westly?

II 3. Elizabeth^2, b., bapt. 25 Mar 1611 at Hillmorton, co. Warwick, Eng.; d. by 18 Sep 1670, Amesbury, MA; m. as 2/wf ca. 1640, William^1 Sargent who m. 1/wf Judith Perkins/Shatswell, m. aft. d. of Elizabeth^2 3/wf Joanna (Pinder) Rowell.

III 4. MARY^2, b. bapt. 3 Sep 1615 at Hillmorton, co. Warwick, Eng.; d. 20 Dec 1700 at Salisbury, MA. age 80; m. 1636 at Ipswich, MA, Capt. THOMAS^1 BRADBURY (see BRADBURY); tried and falsely condemned as a witch in the trials in Salem in 1692, not executed (see THOMAS^1 BRADBURY for details of trial).

IV 5. Ann^2, b. bapt. 5 Sep 1617 at Hillmorton, co. Warwick, Eng.; d. bef. leave Eng., prob. at Hillmorton.

✓ V 6. Thomas^2, b. bapt. 28 Apr 1622 at Hillmorton, co. Warwick, Eng.; d. 7 May 1686 at Topsfield, MA; m. ca. 1640 at Topsfield, Phebe^2 Gould (Zaccheus^1). Dodge line

✓ VI 7. Jacob^2, b. ca. 1624, bapt. 12 Sep 1624 at Hillmorton, co. Warwick, Eng.; d. 27 Jan 1699-1700 at Ipswich, MA, age 76; m. 1/wf ca. 1648 at Ipswich, Elizabeth Whipple who d. 12 Feb 1685-6, m. 2/wf aft. 2 (12) Feb 1686, Damaris (----) Robinson, wid. of Nathaniel. Averill line

VII 8. Lydia^2, bapt. 3 Jun 1632 at Boston, MA; d. ca. 1672, by 20 May 1685, prob. in Ipswich, MA; m. as 1/wf ca. 1650-1 at Ipswich, Henry Bennett who m. 2/wf aft. 1673, by 20 May 1685 at Ipswich, Elizabeth (Goodell) Smith/Mary (Smith) (Kelp) Burr, wid. of Philip, wid. of John.

REFERENCES

1) Banks, C. E., op. cit., I:94-5.
2) Bragdon, L. B., op. cit., THOMAS^1 BRADBURY and JOHN^{1}PERKINS.
3) Colket, M. B., op. cit., 236.
4) Davis, W. G., op. cit., *Wildes*, 81-91.
5) Emerson, J. L., op. cit., BRADBURY LINE and PERKINS LINE.
6) Ferris, M. W., op. cit., *Dawes-Gates*, I:483-7, 491.
7) Hammatt, A., op. cit., 244-5.
8) Holman, M. L., op. cit., *Pillsbury*, I:131-3.
9) Holman, Mary L., "The Bradbury Family (Concluded)", TAG, 19(1942): 36-41.
10) Noyes, S., et. al., op. cit., 104.
11) Roberts, G. B., op. cit., 193.
12) Savage, J., op. cit., I:229-30; III:396.
13) Torrey, C. A., 63, 90, 571-2, 651.
14) Weis, F. L., op. cit., 205.
15) Whittlesey, M. op. cit., Henry Perkins Family (ID=433).

WILLIAM PARRY/PERRY - ANNA (----)
OBADIAH PARRY/PERRY - ESTHER/HESTER HASSELL

Massachusetts and Maine Families in the Ancestry of Walter Goodwin Davis

(Anc. of Franklin Merriam Peabody, pp 14-5 CS 571 P35 (1929)

PERKINS

1. JOHN[1] PERKINS, "Sr.," born, probably, at Newent, Gloucestershire, England, 1590; sailed from Bristol, England, 1 December 1630, in the "Lyon," William Pierce, master, bound for Boston in New England with his wife and five children. He lived for two years in Boston, where the youngest child, Lydia, was baptized at the First Church, 3 June 1632. He was freeman 18 May 1631. In 1634 he was granted land in Ipswich, and ten acres of meadow at Chebacco in 1635. He was deputy to the General Court and on the Grand Jury 1648 and 1652. John Perkins of Ipswich, being above 60 years, was freed from training (drill) 1651. He died in 1654, aged 64. His will (Essex Probate, Salem) is dated 28 March 1654; proved 27 (7) 1654. Inventory 26 (7) 1654.

Children:
2. i. John,[2] b. 1614; d. 14 Dec. 1686.
✓ ii. Thomas, b. 1616; d. 7 May 1686. our Dodge line
iii. Elizabeth, b. 1618.
iv. Mary, b. 1620.
✓ v. Jacob, b. 1624. Our Averill line
vi. Lydia, b. 1632; bp. 3 June 1632, First Church, Boston.

2. JOHN[2] PERKINS (John[1]) was born in England in 1614; came with the family to Boston in 1631; next year was granted land at Ipswich and six acres of marsh near "Labor-in-vain"; married Elizabeth, about 1635. Being advised by a friendly Indian, named Robin, of an impending attack by Indians, he notified the authorities in time to prevent a disaster. He was quartermaster of the military organization, and exhibited his accounts as such to the General Court 1 June 1677. He was engaged in the coast fisheries in 1645. (Co. Recs. VIII: 61.) He died 14 December 1686.

Children:
i. John,[3] b. 1636.
3. ii. Abraham, b. 1640; m. Hannah Beamsley; d. 27 April 1722.
iii. Jacob, b. 1646.
iv. Luke, b. 1649.
v. Isaac, b. 1650.
vi. Nathaniel, b. 1652.
vii. Samuel, b. 1655.
viii. Thomas.
ix. Sarah.

3. ABRAHAM[3] PERKINS (John,[2] John[1]) was born at Ipswich 1640; married 16 October 1661, Hannah, born December 1643, daughter of William and Hannah Beamsley of Boston. Abraham Perkins figures in conveyances of land; representative to the General Court in 1710; ✓ owned Perkins Island. He died suddenly, 27 April 1722, having been run over by a tumbril (cart) which "broke many bones in his breast." By a hurried will, he left all real and personal estate to his wife with instructions to provide for his children. He had made a former will dated 20 November 1684, which bore an autograph signature. No record of birth of his daughter, Dorothy, has been found. She named a child "Bimsley" (Beamsley) and another Stephen, with other suggestive names.

Copied from "Cogswell - Haldeman Genealogy"

THE PERKINS FAMILY

PERKINS:

Arms: or, a fess dancette between 10 billets ermine.
Crest: pinecone ppr
Ref.: *Matthews' American Armoury and Blue Book*, 1908, London, Eng.

The Perkins family descends from Pierre de Marlaix, a Norman ✓ knight in the time of William the Conqueror, according to legend. Since the motto is in French, not Latin, would seem to prove this. Toujours loyale — forever faithful. The arms are first found here, however, around 1400.

The name Perkins was first known in Berkshire, England, having been derived from Pierre (Peter) de Morlois. This Peter de Morlois (living 1300-1332) had a son Henry (son & Heir) living 1380. This Henry took the name Perkins (kin being the Anglo Saxon suffix denoting the junior or cadet branch of Peter, shortened to Per). This Peter de Morlois is said to be a descendant of "Pierre de Morlois," one of the barons opposed to King John at Runnymede.

From 1380 the Perkins held the post of Seneschal (secretary) to the House of Lancaster in their service of the Duke of Lancaster, Humphrey Plantagenet, brother of King Henry V of England. Later, became Secretary to the Despencer family (Hugh Despencer, Earl Marshall).

The table of Descent of the family of Perkins of Ufton is found in The *History of Ufton Court*, of the Parishof Ufton, in the County of Berks, *and of the Perkins Family*, compiled from *Heralds Visitations* and other ancient records by A. Mary Sharp. "Rassemblons les

✓ See Marley in Normanpeople pg 323

Perkins

about Mary^2 (Perkins) Bradbury, sister of our Jacob^2 & Thomas^2 Perkins. (John^1) More about her is in our "Witchcraft" binder to save space here.

Capt. THOMAS BRADBURY - MARY PERKINS
JUDITH BRADBURY - CALEB MOODY
Rev. SAMUEL MOODY - HANNAH SEWALL
MARY MOODY - Rev. JOSEPH EMERSON
EDWARD EMERSON - MARY OWEN
EDWARD EMERSON Jr. - ABIGAIL LYMAN
CHARLES OCTAVIUS EMERSON - HARRIET JANE PHILLIPS
EDWARD OCTAVIUS EMERSON - LUCY HARRIET JOHNSON
CHARLES FRANCIS EMERSON - BESSIE BENSON

FIRST GENERATION

No. 1

1. Capt. THOMAS^1 BRADBURY (WYMOND^A, WILLIAM^B, MATTHEW^C, WILLIAM^D, ROBERT^E, WILLIAM^F, ROBERT^G) was baptized 28 February 1610-1 at Wicken Bonhunt, county Essex, England, and died 16 March 1694 (1695) at Salisbury, MA. He was the son of WYMOND^A BRADBURY of Wicken Bonhunt and Whitechapel, county Middlesex and London, England, and ELIZABETH^A WHITGIFT, daughter of WILLIAM^B WHITGIFT and MARGARET^A (BELL) WHITGIFT. He was also the grandson of WILLIAM^B BRADBURY and ANNE^A EDON, daughter of HENRY^B and ELIZABETH^A (HEIGHAM) EDON. THOMAS^1 BRADBURY married in 1636 in Ipswich, MA, MARY^2 PERKINS, daughter of JOHN^1 and ELIZABETH^1 (GATER) PERKINS (see PERKINS) of that town. MARY^2 was baptized 3 September 1615 (1620) at Hillmorton, county Warwick, England, and died 20 December 1700 at Amesbury, MA, age 85 (80) years.

Mary Perkins

THOMAS^1 came from a noble family and was highly connected with landed and ecclesiastical gentry. It is generally agreed among professional genealogists (i.e. Threlfall and Weiss in refs. 14 and 16) that THOMAS^1 had royal ancestry dating back through his EDON-HEIGHAM-MARMION-NAMUR lineage to CHARLEMAGNE, Emperor of Rome from 800 to 814 A.D. through LOUIS IV and other Kings of the Franks. However, Anderson (in refs. 1 and 2) still questions the main line illustrated in these books.

THOMAS^1 emigrated in 1634 at the age of 23 aboard the ship "Agamentius". He came from St. Mary Matfellon, Whitechapel, county Middlesex, England, where he was living at the time. He landed in York, ME, with authority to act for Sir Ferdinand Gorges, because he may have been a kinsman of Anne Bell, first wife of Sir Gorges. While in York, THOMAS^1 lived in the Lord Proprietor's Manor House at Christian Point (later called Gorges Point). (See HENRY^1 SEWALL, map of the Georges and Ferry Necks, later part of York, ME). As agent for Sir Gorges, THOMAS^1 made some of the earliest land deed transfers in ME.

THOMAS^1 moved to Ipswich, MA, by 1636, where he was married. He did not remain in Ipswich long, but with his wife settled in Salisbury, MA, by 1638 (the birth-year of their first child). Here he was an original proprietor and was made a Freeman in 1640 and a constable in 1641. Later he was a schoolmaster, town clerk and a representative to the General Court from 1651-1666. He also was a recorder and associate justice, and an Ensign and later Capt. of the Salisbury Train Band.

THOMAS^1 and MARY^2 suffered a series of personal tragedies in 1677-8. Three of their sons and one of their daughters-in-law died in this short span. Jabez^2, age 19, died in April of 1677 and John^2, age 24, died 24 November of 1678. Less than two weeks later, on 4 December, William^2 died at the age of 29. William^2's widow then died two weeks after her husband, leaving three small boys, ages two, four and six. MARY^2 took her grandchildren into the BRADBURY house and she and her husband brought them up. On 8 April 1679 THOMAS and son-in-law CALEB MOODY, at their own request, were named administrators of William^{2}'s estate. The two men put up a 200-pound performance bond, took an inventory of his estate and in 1680 the will, containing their sworn statements, was probated. Later, when THOMAS passed away, he left a significant portion of his estate to William^{2}'s two youngest sons.

MARY^{2} was tried for witchcraft during the "witchcraft delusion" (ref. 7) of 1692. Much "foolish testimony" (ref. 7) was given, including, as an example:

> "'The deposition of William Carr, who testifyeth and saith, that about thirteen years ago, presently after some difference that happened to be between my honored father, Mr. George Carr and Mrs. Bradbury, the prisoner at the bar, upon a Sabbath at noon, as we were riding home by the house of Capt. Thomas Bradbury, I saw Mrs. Bradbury go into her gate, turn the corner of, and immediately there darted out of her gate a blue boar and darted at my Father's horse's legs which made him stumble; but I saw it no more. And my father said, "Boys, what did you see?" And we both said "A blue boar"'" (ref. 7).

She was convicted despite her husband's prominence, her social position (she was called "Mistress" Bradbury, the equivalent of the equally rare title of "Mr.") and a great deal of testimony concerning her excellent character. This included a signed petition of 118 of her neighbors and a glowing tribute by her minister, the famous Rev. James Allen of Salisbury. She herself testified in her own behalf, but her most poignant defense was made by her aged husband, THOMAS, who said in her behalf:

> "'Concerning my beloved wife, Mary Bradbury, this is what I have to say: We have been married fifty five years, and she hath been a loving and faithful wife unto me unto this day. She hath been wonderful laborius, diligent and industrious in her place and employment about bringing up our family which have been eleven children of our own and four grandchildren. She was both prudent and provident, of a cheerful spirit, liberal and charitable. She being now very aged and weak, and grieved under afflictions, may not be able to speak much for herself, not being so free of speech as some others might be. I hope her life and conversation among her neighbors has been such as gives a better or more real testimony than can be expressed by words'" (ref. 7).

How she escaped execution is unknown.

The children of THOMAS^{1} and MARY^{2} (PERKINS) BRADBURY, all born in Salisbury, MA, were:

I 2. Wymond^{2}, b. 1 Apr 1637; d. by 1671, prob. at Salisbury, MA; m. 7 May 1661, Sarah^{2} Pike (Robert^{1}), who m. 2/hs 10 May 1671, prob. at Salisbury, John Stockman.

II 3. JUDITH^{2}, b. 2 Oct 1638; d. 24 Jan 1698-9, prob. at Newbury, MA; m. 9 Nov 1665 at Newbury, CALEB^{2} MOODY (see MOODY).

III 4. Thomas^{2}, b. 28 Jan 1640-1; d. aft. 1662; prob. unm.,

IV 5. Mary^{2}, b. 17 Mar 1642-3; m. 17 Dec 1663, John^{2} Stanyan (Anthony^{1}).

V 6. Jane^{2}, b. 11 May 1645; m. 15 Mar 1667-8, Henry^{2} True

Perkins

Essex County Quarterly Courts

Ipswich May 1670 (pg 244-256)

Mr. Thomas Gilbert was presented for suspicion of being overtaken with drink. Court saw cause to counsel and admonish him and ordered him to pay the witnesses returned by the jury.*

---

*On 30 : 1 : 1670, William Averell,† late constable of Topsfield, addressed the court, he having been charged with base carriages openly in the congregation for doing no more than he apprehended was his duty: "About the 14th of the 9th mo last Mr. Gilbert being about to publish an order from the gen court for a day of thanksgiving as afterwards apeared: hee was pleased to say that one the 4th of the next month the last generall court at boston had agreed upon|| or given order for|| a day of thanksgiving wherupon one that was present Replyed Sir you mean the 4th day of the next week I being present saw there was a mistake in boath I acounted it my duty in conscience to my oth to endevor to prevent furder inconnevience at that time and place: made bold to say it is the 4th day of this week as I had ben informed to which mr gillbert Replyed I blesse god I am not drunk: o base base unworthy cariages to catch at a minastars words let them that are more godly and judicious speke that are church members If I haue desarued Justly to be soe villifyed in the face of an asembly for this cause I desire freely to leaue it to the court to determin."

†Autograph.

Isaack Comings, sr., and John Goold testified to the same. Sworn in court.

Thomas Baker deposed that one day in the summer, on a sacrament day the people waited a long time in the afternoon for Mr. Gilbert to come and many went away. When he prayed deponent perceived that he was distempered in his head for he repeated many things many times over and lisped. Then he went to singing and read the psalm so that it could not be well understood, then he went to prayer again. When he had done he was going to sing again, but being desired to forbear used these expressions, "I bles god I find a great deall of comfort in it," and came out of the pulpit. He said to the people "I give you notis That I will preach amongst you no more." Sworn in court.

Isaacke Cummings, sr., deposed that Mr. Gilberte was not as composed as he used to be, and after praying said "lett us singe the 153 psalme," but both in singing and reading was very much out of order so that the people could not follow. When the psalm was about half done, deponent stood up and saw three or four laughing, and he said, "Sir, I intreete you to forbare and proscede no further for we are very much out of order, for in thus doeinge we shall but take the name of god in vaine." Mr. Gilberte stopped, said he found much comfort in singing and bade deponent hold his tongue and to sit down and they would sing without him. Deponent sat down and Mr. Gilberte prayed again and when he began to sing the second time, deponent stood up and said, "Sir, you went first to prayer and then you did singe and then you went to prayer againe and now would you goe to singe againe certeynly you nether knowe what you say nor what you doe." Then Mr. Gilbert was very angry and ran away without giving the blessing. Sworn in court.

Phebe Perkins, wife of Tho. Perkins, deposed that on sacrament day she was at dinner at Mr. Gilbert's and there was a cup with wine in it which was offered to Mr. Gilbert. He refused to take it at first, but afterward put the cup to his mouth, but she knew not whether he drank or not. Three more had the cup besides himself, and after he had dined he drank what was left in the cup. Immediately after dinner he sang a psalm, and in reading it she thought his voice was lower than it used to be. Sworn in court.

Sarah Gould deposed that being at Mr. Gilbert's house after sacrament at dinner time, she saw her brother Perkins bring the wine, empty it into the golden cup and ask Mr. Gilbert to drink. "Mr Gilbert did drinke to my Brother Perkins and bad him drinke to ould Goodwife Townes shee did put the cope to her mouth and set the cope doune and Mr Gilbert take et the seckond time at diner and dranke et up for hee torned up the cope and my bother Perkins tould mee the Golden Cope was about three quarter full I did see the cope offered to noe more then is aboue menened and emedatly upon this I did see Mr Gilbert eyes groe very dim and hee did sinke doune in his chare Lenig bake and after he had sat a while hee toke his psalme books to sing and his wife told him hee had not returned thankes o said he I haue for goot: he did returne thankes and sing a psalme after the same maner as hee did in the pulpit Clepping his words very short so as I could not understand him as soone as dener was don my sister Perkins and I went into the tother rome and presantly wee hard him vomit A: said my sister Perkins I wonder my Husban would aske him to drinke for I thinke hee had noe need of et: for sd my Sister Perkins the forst time hee toke the Cope I saw him drinke a good draft and as he went to the meting hous hee had Like to fale down and when hee Came into the pulpit, he went to prayer and prayed so brokenly clepping of the King Engliss as wee ues to say soe as I could not understand him and after prayer hee went to sing a psalme and named the hundred and fiufty thurd psalme and after a uery broken maner did sing," etc. He said he would never preach more in Topsfeild and desired the people to provide for themselves. Sworn in court.

Johanna (her mark) Towne, aged about seventy-five years, deposed that in the forenoon of that day, Mr. Gilbert administered the "sacrement swetly unto us," and after sacrament at dinner was very temperate, she sitting next to him. If he were drunk, she believed it was with his distemper and not with drinking too much strong liquor, "as sum so uncharitabely surmise against him."

John Gould deposed concerning what he heard his sister Perkins say, etc. Sworn in court.

Four of our ancestors are mentioned above: Constable William Averill Jr, Deacon Thomas Perkins, and his wife, Phebe (Gould) Perkins. (John Gould was her brother.) Also the elderly and charitable Joanna Towne.

The court found against Rev. Gilbert & fined him for drunkenness, though modern doctors believe he had a "nervous disorder" treatable with modern medicine.

Constables in those days were not paid. The public spirited Averill earned his living as a successful carpenter & building contractor. We inherit his genes, also those of uncharitable gossip Phebe and those of sweet and wise grandmother Johanna. For better or worse, all those traits are part of us.

Below – mostly misc. entries in Essex Co. Quarterly Court Records

Dawes-Gates Genealogy pg 188 (Cogswell) says John Cogswell Sr sold a six-acre lot in Ipswich to John Perkins and acquired from him a 45-acre tract "beyond the great Chebacco River" and the weir built there with the 7-year monopoly of catching alewives therein for sale as fertilizer. (Quoting Ancient Records of Ipswich 1634-50 – published 1899

Essex Co. Quarterly Courts (Ipswich 28: 7 (Sept) 1647. Thomas Perkins, Jacob Perkins + others testified in the case of John Tuttle v Robert Elwell regarding a boat that was lost.
(Same day) Thomas Perkins v. Mathias Button + others (facit) Debt.

History of Ipswich pg 158

1654, Sept. 26th. John Perkins d. l. Æ. 64. He left a wife, Judith, and children, John, Absalom, Thomas, Elizabeth Sarjeant, Anna Bradley, Lydia Bennet, and Jacob. He was, probably, the one who came over with Roger Williams 1631, and was freeman 1633. He held town offices, and was Deputy to the General Court 1636. His estate was £250 5s.

Essex Co QC (Ipswich) Nov 1659

Administration on the estate of John Perkins, jr., of Ipswich, granted to widow Lidia. Amount of the inventory of the estate, 73li. 10s. 1d. He left one young child, new born. The widow to hold the estate until the child was eighteen years old, and then pay the child 14li., or at the day of her marriage, with her mother's consent.

?!? (date does not fit!)

" Ipsw Sep 1670

Quartermaster Perkins had his license to keep ordinary renewed for a year, also his license to draw liquors.

John Jr.

" Salem Dec 1661 Jury of Trials included John Perkins, Jacob Perkins at trial of Isaac Estrich (Esty)

" Ipswich QC Sep 1676

Tho. Perkins of Topsfield was released from training, paying 6s. yearly to the use of the company.

" Sep 1671

Quartermaster (John Jr) Perkins had his license renewed for a year, also his license to draw liquors, provided he let no townsme drink liquors in his house.

John Perkings, aged sixteen years, and Sarah Perkings, aged between fourteen and fifteen years, made choice of their father Mr. Wm. Perkings to be their guardian.

Mr William may have been a minister, not related.

(Quartermaster" John Perkins Jr – bro. of Thos + Jacob)

" Ipswich QC Sept 1684

‡Robert Anable and Joseph Ayers testified that being sent to Quartermaster Perkines house by Goodman Annable to speak with Mr. Mattockes. "Coming to the hous we Knoct quartermaster" cold out who thar" we sd frinds he sd what wold you have we sd we wold specke with Mr Mattucks he answered he thought he was abed in the Princes armes we knockt and cold but non answered. then we went Round the

("cold out" = called out: They knocked on the door.)

(Mary Perkins, b 1658 daughter of Sgt Jacob (Annie's line) married John Annable (1649-1718) about 1677/8) This was probably he, for his (father died 1672 – John Sr. actually)

Zaccheus³ (Deacon) Thomas² (Serge) John¹ Perkins
brother of Phebe (Perkins) Towne. Zaccheus acquitted himself well and bravely in this terrible battle in which his captain was slain.

Perkins

Clippings + References

Perkins

Founders of American Families - Meredith Colket

PERKINS *Perkins families in United States* (pamph.) 1911.

ABRAHAM Hampton (N.H.) 1639. d. Hampton 31 Aug 1683. Clerk of the market. Innkeeper. Yeoman. Freeman. *Register* 10:215 (desc), 12:79, 50:34 (desc); Pillsbury, v 1; *Maine &; Ancestry of Dudley Wildes* p 89 (clue), 1959.

EDWARD Born ca 1625. New Haven (Conn.) 1648. Living 25 Jan 1687/8. *Descendants of Edward Perkins* 1914;** *Register* 17:63 (some desc); Jacobus, *New Haven; Branch of Edward Perkins of New Haven*, loose-leaf 1982.

ISAAC Hampton (N.H.) 1639. d. Nov 1685. Constable. *Maine &; Ancestry of Dudley Wildes* p 89 (clue), 1959.

✓ JOHN Bapt. at Hillmorton, co. Warwick, Eng., 23 Dec 1583. Came with family on "Lion" 1630, Boston (Mass.) 1631, Ipswich 1633. d. Ipswich by 27 Sept 1654. Deputy. *John Perkins of Ipswich* 1889;** *Ancestry of Dudley Wildes* 1959; Pillsbury, v 1; *Jacob Perkins of Wells, Me. and descendants* (Jacob b. 1685, was great-grandson of John), 1947.

NICHOLAS Va. 1641, Charles City Co. d. Charles City Co. probably in 1656. *Descendants of Nicholas Perkins* 1957.

REV. WILLIAM Born 25 Aug 1607. Came on "William and Francis" 1632, Roxbury 1634, Weymouth 1643, Gloucester 1648, Topsfield ca 1655. d. Topsfield 21 May 1682. Schoolmaster. Pastor. *Register* 10:211 (desc), 76:223 (anc); Hoyt, *Salisbury and Amesbury*.

Directory of Ancestral Heads 1620-1700 - Frank R Holmes p clxxxvi

PERKINS

From *Peir* or *Peter* and the patronymic or diminutive termination *ins*—little Peter or the son of Peter. Pierre de Morlaix sometimes written Peter Morley alias Perkins was high steward of the estates of Sir Hugo Despencer 1380-81. The family was seated at Upton, County Berks, Eng.

ABRAHAM, b. Eng. 1611, settled Hampton, N. H., 1640.

EDMUND, married Boston, Mass., 1678.

ISAAC, brother of Abraham, XI generation from Pierre de Morlaix, bapt. Hillmorton, Warwickshire, Eng., 1611. Came to N. E. 1630-34, located Ipswich, Massachusetts 1637, removed Hampton, N. H., 1638.

✓ JOHN, b. Newent Gloucestershire, Eng., 1590, came with Roger Williams to Boston, Mass., 1631, removed Ipswich, Mass., 1633. — error in place of birth

JOHN, resident New Haven, Conn., 1688.

JONATHAN, inhabitant Norwalk, Conn., 1671-77.

LUKE, living Charlestown, Mass., 1666.

THOMAS, born Eng. about 1600, was at Dover, N. H., 1665.

WILLIAM, minister, son William P. a merchant tailor of London, Eng., b. Eng. 1607, came Boston, Mass., 1632, removed Weymouth, Mass., 1643, preached Gloucester, Mass., 1651-55, second minister Topsfield, Mass.

WILLIAM, took oath of allegiance Dover, N. H., 1662.

Virkus Abridged Compendium of American Genealogy - Vol 1 p 987

PERKINS, Abraham (1613-83), from Eng. to Hampton, N.H., 1639; *m* Mary – (1618-1706).

PERKINS, Edmund (*d* 1693), from Eng. with his widowed mother, to Salem, Mass., ca. 1650; *m* Susannah, dau. of Francis Hudson, and widow of John Howlett.

✓**PERKINS, John** (ca. 1590-1654), from Eng. in the "Lion," with Roger Williams, to Mass., 1631; freeman, 1631; went to Ipswich with John Winthrop, the younger, 1633; rep. Gen. Court, 1636; sgt. in war with the Tarratines, 1631; *m* Judith Gater.

Pioneers of Massachusetts - Charles Henry Pope (1900 - Repr. 1991 GPC) pages 354-5

PERKINS, PERKEINGS, PERKUS, PARKINS,

Isaac, yeoman, Ipswich, propr. 1637. His widow Alice sold land and house 15 (4) 1639. [Ips. Rec.] Ch. Isaac, (rem. to Hampton,) Jacob, (sold land recd. from his father, 23 (2) 1674, after removing to Holmes Hole).

✓ John, Boston, adm. chh. with wife Judith in 1631. Frm. May 18, 1631. One of the com. to settle bounds between Roxbury and Dorchester in 1632. Rem. to Ipswich; propr. 1634; deputy, 1636; town officer. Freed from training in 1651. Ch. John, Lydia bapt. at Bo. 3 (4) 1632, (m. Henry Bennett,) Thomas, (paid in 1643 by the town of Ipswich for service against the Indians,) Elizabeth, (m. William Sargent,) Mary, (m. Thomas Bradbury).

Will dated 28 (1) prob. 26 (7) 1654. Wife Judith; eldest son John and his two sons John and Abraham; son Thomas and his son John; son Jacob; daus. Elizabeth Sargent, Mary Bradbury, Lydia Bennett and their ch.; gr. ch. Thomas Bradbury. Genealogy. [Reg. X, 211-216.]

Rev. William, son of William, of London, merchant tailor; [see copy of an ancient manuscript in Topsfield town records,] embarked March 7, 1631; came to Roxbury. Frm. Sept. 3, 1634. Deputy, 1644. Captain. Was one of the first to plant at Agawam or Ipswich, mentioned in Gen. Court rec. April 1, 1633. Propr. 1635. Res. at Weymouth from 1643 to 1648; selectman 1647, schoolmaster 1651. Had deed from Zaccheus Gould, of land at Wey. April 2, 1645. Rem. to Gloucester. Capt. Perkins lot mentioned in 1648. Land given to him by the town in 1650. He bought house and lands which had been occupied by his predecessor, Mr. Obediah Bruen. Was schoolmaster; pastor afterwards. He sold 5 Oct. 1655, and rem. to Topsfield, whose first minister he then became. In 1641 he had a grant of 400 acres of land from the Court, "for his fathers fifty pounds." See reference to him in the will of Samuel Purchas. [Reg. XXXVIII, 320.] He deposed 26 (7) 1671, ae. about 64 years. He m. at Roxbury, Aug. 30, 1636, Elizabeth Wooton; ch. William b. and d. 1639, William b. Feb. 26, 1641, Elizabeth b. June 18, 1643, (m. John Ramsdell,) Tobijah, Katharine b. Oct. 29, 1648, (m. John Baker,) Mary b. Feb. 17, 1650-1, "baptized by my ministry," says the father, (m. Oliver Purchis,) John b. April 2, 1655, Sarah b. March 2, 1656-7, (m. John Bradstreet,) Timothy b. 11 Aug. 1658, Rebecca b. May 4, 1662, (m. Thomas Fiske).

He d. May 21, 1682, ae. 75.

Felt - History of Ipswich pg 200 regarding lightning incidents

1671, May 18th. The house of Serjeant Perkins was struck on the Sabbath, while many people were there to repeat the sermon delivered that day. The fluid made several holes in his waistcoat, and knocked him and others down, but they were revived. The timber work of the building was injured

NEHGR 16:212-5

We are told by Scott in the *Fortunes of Nigel* that in the time of James the 1st, King of England, it was the custom in London for men in trade to send out their clerks into the street, and cry out to the passers by, "*What d'ye lack? What d'ye lack?*" Should some of our merchant-princes, or millionaires put to our Society a similar question, our answer is ready:

1. We lack a Fire-proof room to secure our rare books and manuscripts.
2. We lack a Lecture room, where the readings at our monthly meetings could be heard and better appreciated by a larger audience.
3. We lack a room for the storage of duplicates and documents, whose worth will be better known at a future day.

In a word we need a Fire-proof building; it would cost probably $20,000. One tenth or one twentieth of this amount has been already offered by a member, if nine or nineteen will join him. Who will aid in this noble undertaking?

* * *

LIST OF MEMBERS OF THE OLD CHURCH, TOPSFIELD.

[Compiled by H. G. Dunnel.]

To the Editor of the *Register:*

Sir—In the summer of 1861, while pursuing my searches among the records of the town of Topsfield, Essex county, Mass., I had an opportunity of copying the list of members of the old church, and as I have been gratified myself by it, I thought it might be of like pleasure to some of your readers, whose ancestors once resided in this county or town, and have, therefore, sent a true copy to you, for publication.

The Church of Topsfield Parish.

Mr. Knight and Mr. Perkins preached here before the formation of the church.

The church was formed, and Mr. Thomas Gilbert ordained, Nov., 1663. He was dismissed 1671, and died at Charlestown, Oct. 28, 1673.

Jeremiah Hobart ordained Oct. 2, 1672; dismissed Sept. 21, 1680, and died at Haddam, Conn., Nov. 6, 1715. Mr. Perkins also died here, May 21, 1682.

Joseph Capen ordained June 11, 1684; died June 30, 1725.

Daniel Brush ordained Nov. 17, 1779; dismissed May 26, 1788.

Asahel Huntington ordained Nov. 12, 1789; died April 22, 1813.

Radney Gove Dennis ordained Oct. 4, 1820; dismissed May 6, 1829.

James F. McEwen installed May 5, 1830; dismissed May 5, 1841.

The book kept by Rev. Joseph Capen, from 1684, heads his list thus:

A List of members in full communion at Topsfield when I was ordained, or were admitted afterwards.

MALES.

Francis Pabody, d. d
John Reddington
Abraham Reddington Senr
Joseph Bixby Senr
John Gould Senr
Thomas Baker
Thomas Perkins Deacon
d d May 7, 1686
John Pabody
Thomas Dorman
Ephraim Borman
Samuel Howlet
Isaac Cumins
John French
Daniel Hovey
Isaak Estie
James How Senr
Samuel Purley
Nehemiah Abbot
John Cummins
Dec 7, dismissed to Church
at Dunstable
Robert Stiles d d
Thomas Perkins Junr

Since my ordination,
were admitted of
Daniel Reddington
Tobijah Perkins
Jacob Foster Junr
William Pabody
John How
Ephraim Curtise
Sergeant Jacob Towne
Timothy Perkins
Daniel Wood
Daniel Clarke Senr d d
Samuel Simons
Thomas Haffen
John Stiles
Mr William Perkins
Samuel Stanley
Abraham How
Benjamin Foster
John Estie
Thomas Reddington
Philip Knight
Abraham Reddington
John Gould Junr
John Perley Senr
John Wilds Senr
John French Senr
Zacheus Curtis
Joseph Hail
John Kenney
Luke Hovey
Isaac Estey

John Andrews

FEMALES.

1. Deacn Perkins Wife
2. Lieutenant Goulds "
3. Tho Dorman "
4. Isaac Easties "
5. Jacob Towns "
6. Joseph Towns "
7. Widow Mary Towne
8. Ephraim Dorman's Wife
9. John Wilds his "
10. James How his wife Senr
11. Michael Dunnels Wife
12. John Nichols wife
13. Daniel Bormans "
14. Isaak Cummins "
15. William Howletts "
16. Abraham Reddington "
17. Joseph Bixby's "
18. John Pabody's "
19. Samuel Simon's his wife
20. Robert Smith's wife
21. William Smiths "
22. Widdow Andrews
23. Nehemiah Abbots wife
24. Widdow Perley
25. William Watson his wife
26. { John French his wife
    { John Cummin his wife
27. Benjamin Bixby's wife
28. Tobijah Perkins "
29. My own Wife
30. Thos Andrew his wife
31. The Wife of Mathew Stanley Senr
32. The Wife of John Curtis
33. Martha Reddington
34. Sarah Bisn r
35. Ye Wife of Daniel Wood
    Sarah Wood
36. a Wife of John Town Mary
37. a Wife of Samuel Howlet Sarah
37. Deliverance Wife of John Stiles
38. Wife of Jacob Foster
39. Martha Foster dismissed
    to Concord
40. Joanna Stanley Wife of Samuel
41. Sarah Bixby wife of Joseph
42. Wife of John Gould Junr
43. Wife of John Ramsdell
44. Elizabeth Sties
45. Hannah wife of Timothy Perkins
46. Hannah wife of Wm Pebody
47. Margaret Knight
48. Perkins
49. Lucy Wife of Nathanl Wood
50. Sarah Wife of John Andrews
51. Grace Wife of Ichabod
    Endicott
52. Widow Mary Hale from
    Newberry
53. Margaret French

Refrances

So many of the Topsfield church members were either our ancestors or close relatives, or married into our families that I cannot pick all of them out! rjg

MALES.

Joseph Andrews
Jacob Smith
John Cummings
Jonathan Bixby
Isaac Burton
Joseph Esty
Daniel Clarke
Thomas Robinson.
Joseph Peabody Junr

Zacheus Gould
Samuel Foster
Amos Dorman
Joseph Towne
Nehemiah Abbott.
Abraham Foster
John Robinson Senr
John Hovey. Senr
Joseph Towne Senr
Wm Chapman
Elishe Perkins
Timothy Perley
Benjamin Bixby Senr

Thomas Gould
John Howe
Thomas Howlitt
Thomas Perley
Thomas Dorman
Job Averill
John Curtiss
John Nichols
John Hovey
Michael Duinnel Junr
Seth Dorman

Timothy Perkins
Samuel Smith.
Samuel Stanley
Paul Averill
Joseph Borman
Wm Bixbey
Ivory Hovey
Jesse Dorman
Joseph Towne
John Perkins
John Perley

FEMALES.

54. Judith Dorman
55. Dorotha Robinson
Wife of John
56. Mary Perley Senr
57. Sarah Foster
58. Mary wife of Joseph Hail
59. Wife of John Kenney
60. Susanna Hovey
61. Abigal Esty
62. Wife of Jacob Foster
63. Elizabeth Curtis
64. Widdow Sarah Gill
65. Susanna wife of John "
66. Sarah Wife of Jonathan Bixby
67. Hannah Foster
68. Ruth Simons
69. Rebecca Simons
70. Hannah Burton
71. Jane Ely wife of J. E.
72. Hannah Clark
73. Hannah Robinson
74. Widdow Cooper
75. Mary Peabody
76. Elizabeth Wife of
Zacheus Gould
77. Elleanor Porter
78. Mary Averill
79. Content Nicholls
80. Elizabeth French
81. Dorotha Dorman
82. Mehitable Nichols
83. Corp^{l} Joseph Towne's wife
84. Wife of Nehemiah Abbott.
85. Phebe Towne
86. Jane Perley

87. Sarah wife of John Bradstreet
88. Sarah wife of Ephraim Wilds
89. Elizabeth Chapman
90. Priscilla Capen
91. Mary Capen
92. Elizabeth Perkins
93. Catherine Perkins
94. Deborah Perley
95. Mercey Wife of Thos. Gould
96. Elizabeth Perkins
97. Mrs Baker
98. Widdow Avril
99. Abigal wife of Thos Perley
100. Abigal W of Tim^{ty} Perkins
101. Sarah (W) of John Hows Junr
102. Rebecca W of Thos Howell
103. Susanna W of Job Averill
104. Priscilla W. of John Curtis.
105. Mary Waters
106. Sarah W of Josiah Peabody
107. Deborah W of Thos Dorman
108. Mary W of John Hovey
109. Judith Perkins
110. Hannah Howlett
112. Hannah W. of Michael Dunnell

FEMALES.

113. Mary Grant wife of Samuel
114. Sarah H tle
115. Prudence wife of Joseph Borman
116. Phebe Foster
117. Wife of Samuel Towne
118. Wife of William Hollet
119. Jane wife of Ivory Hovey
120. Martha How
121. Ruth, w. of Jessie Dorman

A List males now belonging to the Church in Topsfield, May 18, 1751.

Daniel Reddington Deac*
Daniel Clark
Zacheus Gould*
Nehemiah Abbot*
Abraham Hotter*
Elisha Perkins*
Thomas Gould
John How of Middletown
John Curtis*
John Hovey
Michael Duinnel
Timothy Perkins*
Samuel Smith of Ipswich
Paul Averil Middletown
Joseph Borman*
William Porter Norton.*
Deac Ivory Hovey
Jesse Dorman
John Perkins, Middleton
John Howlett Deac^{n} *
Joseph Gould
Caleb Potter Ipswich
Tobijah Perkins

Benj^{n} How†
Jacob Towne*
Abraham How Ipswich
Thos Potter Ips.
Isaac Commings Ips
Edmond Towns*
Sam^{l} Potter Ips.
Daniel Reddington Junr.
John Gould, Boxford.
John Abbot Ips
Richard Towne
Mark How Ips

Joseph Commings† Ips
Mathew Peabody
Joseph Hovey
Jacob Bixby†
John Prichard
Daniel Nelson dismissed to Lancastor
Ivory Hovey Junr†
Nathan Bixby†
Deacon Jacob Peabody

Reverend Mr If there be any mist that were in ye church before your coming it is Jonah Andrew and I cannot tell whether he belongs to us or Boxford church.

Luke Averill
Ebeneser Lake
John Wildes
Phineas Reddington†
Wm Reddington
John Lompson Junr Ips
Nathan Hood
George Bixby
Stephen Peabody, Boxf.
Wm Perkins
Thomas Howlett
Joseph Peabody
Jacob Robinson
Jacob Peabody Junr
Jacob Averal

John Andrews Boxf.
Joseph Edwards
John Symonds
Ezekiel Foster, Ips
Abraham Foster Junr. Ips
Sam^{l} Howlett Junr.
John Wood.
Amos Duinell
Doctor Dexter
Zacheus Gould
Aaron Hovey
Nehemiah How, Ips.
Pomp a negro Servant man Ips.
David Balch.
John Perkins

Rev^{d} Mr. Capen was settled in Tops. 1684.

---

* Dead. † Dismissed,

Below - from History of Ipswich
By Joseph Felt - written 1834

Pg 200 - about cases of LIGHTENING

1671, May 18th. The house of Serjeant Perkins was struck on the Sabbath, while many people were there to repeat the sermon delivered that day. The fluid made several holes in his waistcoat, and knocked him and others down, but they were revived. The timber work of the building was injure

---

Pg 209

Deliverances. * 1633, Sept. The Tarrentines had designed to cut off the people of Ipswich, "when they were between 20 and 30 men, old and young, and when most of the men had gone into the bay, about their occasions, not hearing of any intention thereof. It was thus, one Robin, a friendly Indian, came to John Perkins, a young man, living then in a little hut upon his father's island, on this side of Jeffrey's Neck, and told him, that, on such a Thursday morning, early, there would come four Indians to draw him to go down the hill to the water-side, to truck with them; which if he did, he and all near him would be cut off; for there were forty birch canoes, which would lye out of sight, under the brow of the hill, full of armed Indians for this purpose. Of this, Perkins forthwith acquainted Mr. John Winthrop, who advised him, if such Indians came, to carry it roughly towards them, and threaten to shoot them, if they would not be gone, and, when their backs were turned, to strike up the drum he had with him, besides his two muskets, and to discharge them; so that six or eight young men, who were in the marshes hard by a mowing, having their guns ready charged, might take the alarm, and the Indians would perceive their plot discovered, and haste away to sea again. This was accordingly so acted, and took like effect; for he (Perkins) told me, he presently after discovered forty such canoes sheer off from under the hill, and make as fast as they possibly could to sea; and no doubt but many godly hearts were lifted up to heaven for deliverance." *

* John Perkins, Jr.

---

intended him to have as his portion and debarred him from claiming any further part.

George Bunker who bought the Whittingham grant of six hundred acres from Capt. Brian Pendleton, was drowned in 1658. About a year later, his widow, who was Jane Godfrey, married Richard Swain of Hampton, later of Nantucket. In July, 1660, the Swains sold the land that was formerly Mr. Bunker's in Topsfield, in various lots. The house, barn, orchards, etc., with about 227 acres was purchased by Thomas Perkins. At the same time John Redington, who was living nearby, bought one hundred acres of the Bunker farm. Others who purchased the remainder of this land were John Wildes, one hundred acres; Thomas Browning, thirteen acres; Jacob and Edmund Towne, twenty-six acres.[37] It is probable that George Bunker sold, before his death, the balance of the six hundred acres of the original grant which he bought of Capt. Pendleton and the deeds were not recorded. In one instance William Howard states in a deed that he sells the right "I have or ought to have" in land he bought of George Bunker.[38]

Jacob² (John¹) Perkins (Dodge lines)

— contains 2 Towne lines. Thos Browning was Edmund's fa-in-law.

Ed's bro John Towne married Phebe Perkins

The Bunker-Perkins house is believed to be one that stood on Perkins Street, not far from the junction of High and Central Streets, which was taken down in 1887. It adjoined the farm of his brother-in-law, John Redington.

Thomas Perkins was about fifteen years old when he came from England with his family and settled in Ipswich in 1633. He was one of the earliest settlers in Topsfield and a commoner in 1661. He married in 1640, Zaccheus Gould's daughter, Phebe, and probably came to Topsfield about the same time as his father-in-law. September 25, 1662, Thomas Perkins and his wife "Phebe" sold Robert Pearce of Ipswich, for £50, one quarter part of a tract of land containing 600 acres belonging to Rowley "which we have by deed of gift of our father Zaccheus Gould."[39] It was on the east and southeast of Fishing Brook.

These ages & marriage dates are a little off, but the land records are accurate

Thomas Perkins was a farmer and was a deacon of the church there many years. The descendants of Deacon Thomas Perkins were numerous and were frequently confused with the line of Rev. William Perkins. No near relationship has been found between these two families who were both living in Topsfield at an early date and were men of prominence.

Thomas Perkins died in 1686 and his will was probated at

Reference

---

[37] Ipswich Registry of Deeds, book 1, pages 242-245.
[38] Ipswich Registry of Deeds, book 3, page 58.
[39] Ipswich Registry of Deeds, book 2, page 12.

by Clarence Almon Torrey

PEPPERELL, William (1646, 1641-1733?, 1734?) & Margery [**BRAY**] (?1660-1741), w Joseph **PIERCE**; b 1685, b 1681, ca 1678, ca 1680?; Kittery, ME
PERSEVALL/PERCIVAL, James (-1692) & Mary (**RAINSFORD**) [**BASSETT**], w William; [1670], ?Jun 1671?; Sandwich
PARSEUAH, James (1671-1728) & 1/wf Abigail **ROBINSON** (1674-); 27 Feb 1695/6, 18 Feb 1695/6; Falmouth, MA/E. Haddom, CT/Sandwich/Barnstable
PERCIVAH, Theodore & Elizabeth **MORSS**; 12 Jan 1698; Boston
PERCY, Marmaduke & Mary _?_; in Eng, b 1637; Salem
PERCY, [?Robert], New London & Ruth (**CROOKE**) **READ**, w William; b 7 Jun 1681; ?New London, CT
PERDUE/PURDUE, Nathaniel & Hannah _?_; b 1694; Boston/Milton
PERUM, John (-1721, ae 88) & Lydia **SHIPLE/SHEPLEY** (-1710); 15 Dec 1664; Chelmsford
PERRAM, John & Lydia **FLECHER**; 27 Dec 1692; Chelmsford
PIRHAM, Joseph (1669-) & Dorothy [**HYDE**] (1675-); b 1694; Chelmsford/Groton
PARUM, William & Frances _?_ (-1695); b 1657; Boston
PERRAM, William & Mercy/Martha **PENEWELL**, w Joseph; 16 Nov 1693; Boston
PERIE, Daniel & Johanah **COTTLE**; 9 Feb 1687; Newbury
PERIGO, Robert (-1683) & Mary _?_ (-1701+), m/2 Henry **PETERSON** 1685; by 1659, b 1674, b 1667; Boston/Lyme, CT
PERKINS, Abraham (?1603-1683) & Mary [**WYETH**] (-1706, ae 88); b 1639; Hampton, NH
PERKINS, Abraham (1640-1732) & Hannah **BEAMSLEY** (1643-1732), Boston; 16 Oct 1661; Ipswich/Gloucester/Weymouth
PERKINS, Abraham (1639-1677) & Elizabeth **SLEEPER**, m/2 Alexander **DENHAM**, m/3 Richard **SMITH**; 27 Aug 1668; Hampton, NH
PERKINS, Abraham & _?_ [**WEST**]; b 1676; Ipswich
PERKINS, Beamsley (1673-1720) & Hannah (**EMERSON**) **GLAZIER**, w Zechariah; Sep 1697?, 1698?
PERKINS, Benjamin & Hannah _?_; b 1684; Newbury
PERKINS, Caleb (-1724+) & Bethia **PHILBRICK** (-1724+); 24 Apr 1677; Hampton, NH
PERKINS, David (-1736) & 1/wf Elizabeth [**BROWN**]; b 1677; Beverly/Newbury/Bridgewater
PERKINS, David & Deliverance **BLISS**; 8 Jun 1682; New Haven
PERKINS, David & Martha **HAYWARD**/[**HOWARD**]; 1 Feb 1698/9; Bridgewater
PERKINS, Ebenezer (1659-1703) & Mercy _?_; b 1683, b 1685; Hampton, NH/DE
PERKINS, Edmund (-d in Eng) & Alice _?_; 1624, 1625
PERKINS, Edmund (-1693) & Susanna (**HUDSON**) [**HOWLETT**] (±1645-), m/3 Christopher **SLEG**; b 1678; Boston
PERKINS, Edward & Elizabeth **BUTCHER**; 20 Mar 1649; New Haven
PERKINS, Elisha (1656±, 1654-) & 1/wf Catherine **TOWNE** (1662-1714); 23 Feb 1680; Topsfield/Newbury
PERKINS, Francis (1672-1706?) & Elizabeth [**EVELETH**] (1670-), m/2 George **GIDDINGS** 1706; b 1698; Ipswich/Gloucester
PERKINS, George & _?_; ca 1690; Isles of Shoals
PERKINS, Humphrey (1661-) & Martha [**MOULTON**] (?1666, ?1668-); b 1688; Hampton, NH
PERKINS, Isaac[1] (-bef 1639) & Alice _?_ (-1639+); Ipswich
PERKINS, Isaac & Susanna _?_; b 1639; Hampton, NH
PERKINS, Isaac (ca 1650-1726) & Hannah [**KNIGHT**]; ca 1669; Ipswich
PERKINS, Jabez (1671-) & 1/wf Hannah **LATHROP** (1677-1721); 30 Jun 1698; Norwich, CT
PERKINS, Jacob (1624-1700) & 1/wf Elizabeth [**WHIPPLE**] (ca 1629-1686); ca 1648; Ipswich
PERKINS, Jacob (-1719) & 1/wf Sarah [**MAINWRIGHT**] (-1688); [1667]; Ipswich
PERKINS, Jacob & Mary **PHILBROOK**; 30 Dec 1669; Hampton, NH
PERKINS, Jacob (1662-1705) (calls Thomas **TREADWELL** "brother") & 1/wf Elizabeth **SPARKS** (-1692); 25 Dec 1684, 27 Dec, ?15 Oct; Ipswich
PERKINS, Jacob (1624-1700, ae 76) & 2/wf Damaris (_?_) [**ROBINSON**] (-1716, ae 80), w Nathaniel; aft 2 Feb 1685/6, aft 12 Feb 1685/6, aft Feb 1685; Salisbury
PERKINS, Jacob (1641-1719) & 2/wf Sarah [**KINSMAN**] (1659-); b 1690; Ipswich
PERKINS, Jacob (1662-1705?) & 2/wf Sarah [**TREADWELL**] (1673-1738); ?5 Jan 1693, aft 1692; Ipswich
PERKINS, James (1647-) & 1/wf Mary _?_; [1675], b 1675

PERKINS, James (1647-1731?) & 2/wf Leah **COX** (1661-1749, ae 88); 13 Dec 1681; Hampton, NH
PERKINS, John[1] (1583±, 1590-1654) & Judith **GATER** (-1654+); 9 Oct 1608, Hillmorton, Warwick, Eng; Boston/Ipswich
PERKINS, John (?1609-1686) & Elizabeth _?_ (-1684); b 1636; Ipswich/Salisbury
PERKINS, John (1636-1699, 1659?) & Lydia _?_; ca 1656; Ipswich/Newbury/Salisbury
PERKINS, John & Keziah _?_; b 1662; Boston
PERKINS, John (-1668) & Deborah **BROWNING** (1647-1704), m/2 Isaac **MEACHAM** 1669; 28 Nov 1666; Topsfield
PERKINS, John (1652-1718) & 1/wf [Mary **FISKE**]; ca 1677?; Salisbury
PERKINS, John & [Mary] _?_; 16 May 1677, b 1679; New Haven
PERKINS, John (1655-1712) & Anna **HUCHASON/HUTCHINSON** (-1717); 29 Aug 1695; Lynn
PERKINS, John (-1717) & 2/wf Elizabeth **PRYTHATCH/PRYTHOLD**?; m int 18 Sep 1696, 13 Oct 1696; Wenham/Salisbury
PERKINS, John & 1/wf Mary (**CHECKLEY**) **MACKFARLAND/McFARLAND** (1613-), w Duncan; 11 Dec 1697; Boston
PERKINS, John & Mary [**CHECKLEY**?] (1673-); b 1699; Ipswich
PERKINS, Jonathan & Mary **ELLCOCK/ALCOCK/ELCOCK/ELLIOT**; 14 Jun 1682; New Haven
PERKINS, Jonathan (1650-1689) & Sarah _?_, m/2 Josiah **SANBORN** 1690; Exeter?, 20 Dec 1682; Hampton, NH
PERKINS, Joseph (1661-1707) & Martha _?_; b 1689; Hampton, NH/DE
PERKINS, Joseph (1674-1726) & Martha **MORGAN** (1680-1754), m/2 Joseph **LOTHROP** 1727; 22 May 1700; Norwich, CT
PERKINS, Luke (ca 1641-1710) & Hannah (**LONG**) **COOKERY/COOKEY**? (-1715), w Henry; 9 Mar 1663; Charlestown/Hampton, NH
PERKINS, Luke (1649?-1694+) & 1/wf Elizabeth **JAGO/JAQUITH?/JAQUES** (-1690+); 26 Apr 1677; Ipswich
PERKINS, Luke (1667-) & Martha **CONANT** (1664-); 31 May 1688; Salem/Beverly/Plympton
PERKINS, Luke & 2/wf Sarah _?_; b 1693, ca 1692; Ipswich
PERKINS, Mark (-1739) & Mary _?_; ca 1685/88?; ?Stow
PERKINS, Matthew (1665-1755) & Esther [**BURNHAM**]; b 1687, ca 23 Mar 1685/6; Ipswich
PERKINS, Nathaniel & Hannah [**TIBBITTS**] (1651-); bef 1680, ca 1676; Dover
PERKINS, Nathaniel (1652-) & Judith _?_; b 1685; Ipswich
PERKINS, Samuel (1655-1700) & Hannah [**WEST**] (-1732); 1677; Ipswich
PERKINS, Stephen & Elizabeth **FORD**; 27 Aug 1700; New Haven
PERKINS, Thomas & _?_; in Eng, b 1628; Scarborough, ME/Cape Porpoise, ME
PERKINS/PERKS, Thomas (1623, 1616-1686) & Phebe [**GOULD**] (1620-); ca 1640; Topsfield
PERKINS, Thomas (?1622, ?1628-) & Frances _?_, m/2 Miles **GILES** 1680; b 1660; Dover, NH
PERKINS, Thomas (-1722) & Sarah **WALLIS**; 6 Jun 1683; Topsfield
PERKINS, Thomas (1667-) & Sarah [**RICHARDS**]; b 1694; Enfield, CT
PERKINS, Thomas & Remember **WOODMAN** (1673-); 26 Jul 1694; Boston
PERKINS, Thomas & Mary [**BANFIELD**]; b 1701?; Arundel, ME
PERKINS, Timothy (1658-1728±) & Edna **HAZEN** (1667-1727+); 2 Aug 1686; Topsfield
PERKINS, Timothy (1661-1738) & 1/wf Hannah _?_ (-1690); ca 1688; Topsfield
PERKINS, Timothy (1661-1738) & 2/wf Abigail _?_; ca 1694?, ca 1692; Topsfield
PERKINS, Tolyah (1646-1723) & Sarah **DENISON**; 5 Nov 1680; Topsfield
PERKINS, William (1607-1682) & Elizabeth **WOOTTON**; in Eng?, 30 Aug 1636; Roxbury/Weymouth/Gloucester
PERKINS, William (?1639-1732?) & Elizabeth [**AULT**], dau John; b 28 Jan 1669; Dover, NH
PERKINS, William (1641-1695) & Elizabeth **CLARK**; 24 Oct 1669; Topsfield
PERKINS, William & _?_
PERKINS, William & ?Ann _?_; Southampton, LI
PERKINS, _?_ & Frances _?_, m/2 Mark **PERKINS**
PERKINS, _?_ & [Mary **REED**]; b 1688?; Salem
PERLEY, Allan/Allen (1608-1675) & Susanna [**BOKESON?/?BOKENSON/?BOLDERSON**] (-1692); b 1636?; Ipswich
PERLY, Jacob & Lydia **PABODY/PEABODY** (1673-); 3 Dec 1696; Topsfield/Boxford
PERLEY, John (ca 1635/6-1729, Boxford) & Mary [**HOWLETT**] (?1642, 1644-1718); ca 1661; Boxford

faits pour avoir des idees." Buffon. London; Elliot Stock, 62 Paternoster Row. Reading: Miss Langley; Newbury; J. W. Blacket, 1892.

I. PETER MORLEY

PETER MORLEY alias Perkins of Co. Salop was living 1380/81. He married Agnes Teylor and was servius to Lord Hugh Despencer, Lord of Shipton, Co. Oxen.

II. HENRY PERKINS

III. JOHN PARKYNS

JOHN PARKYNS was seneschall (secretary) to Thomas Despencer, Earl of Gloucester, and was living 1397-1400.

IV. WILLIAM PARKYNS

WILLIAM PARKYNS, Lord of Ufton, married Margaret .... He was Baillie (or agent)to Humphry, Duke of Gloucester, and was living 1411-1447.

V. THOMAS PARKYNS

THOMAS PARKYNS was living in 1452 and died in 1478. He had four sons:

1. John Parkyns liv. 1495; m. Margaret Collee, heiress of Finchempstead and Padworth
2. Thomas Parkyns of Madresfield; m. Ellen, sister of John Tompkins of Nappond, Herefordshire (Reference: Page 226 of Miss Sharp's book under heading, Of the Family of Parkyns of Madresfield and Nottinghamshire)
3. William Parkyns, married (he was perhaps trustee of Ufton Settlement 1495) and was ancestor of Marstan Jabet family of Warwickshire.
4. Humphrey Parkyns (no doubt this son was named for Humphrey Plantagenet)

Note: Thomas, William and Humphrey Parkyns are called of Madresfield and Nottinghamshire.

John Parkyns living 1495, married Margaret Collee and had a son Thomas Parkyns who was living in 1495 and died 1524. Thomas

married Dorothy, daughter of Edward More of Wichwood, Co. Hants. Francis Parkyns married Anne .... and lived at Padworth. Arthur Perkins married Elizabeth, daughter of Nicholas Kymball of Bedfordshire. This is the line of Nicholas Perkins who came to Virginia in 1641.

Heraldic crest made in 1559 to Richard Parkins, in it styled of Madresfield in Berkshire.

"William Harvey Esquire, also Clarencieux states: beinge required of Richarde Parkyns of Madresfield in the county of Berks, gentleman, sonne & heire to Richard Perkins, sonne & heire to William Parkins, sonne & heire to Thomas Parkins of Madresfield aforesaid, gentleman, to make searche in the Registers & Recordes of myne office for the ancient armes unto hym descended from his auncestors . . . could not but allow the same accordinglie & . . . I have ratified & confirmed unto the said Richarde Parkins gent. & his posteritie & to all the posteritie of the said Richarde Parkins, his father: That is to say, *Argent, an eagle displayed sables, in a canton golde, a fess dauncette between seven billettes sables, on each an erminey.* And for as much as I found no creaste unto the same (as comotie to all auncient armes there belongid none) . . . I have given unto hym by way of increase *for his creaste & cognisaunce*, on a wreath argent & sables a pine aple braunche verte, the aple in his propor couller, mantled gules, doubled argente.

"Here it is stated that Richard Parkins, the receiver of the grant, was descended from a great-grandfather, Thomas Perkins of Mattisfelde in Berkshire. This appears to be an error, as there is no place now in Berkshire of that name. However, in a pedigree of early date, preserved in the College of Arms which is added to Richard Mundy's copy of the Worcestershire Visitation, the same descent if found traced from Thomas Parkyns of Mattisfelde in Worcester, which place may be supposed to be the same now called Madresfield in that county.

"The allusion to Berkshire may be explained by the fact that a descent from the family of Ufton was always accepted as authentic by the Nottingham branch, and that Thomas their immediate ancestor was in other deeds styled of Ufton as well as of Madresfield, suggesting the idea that he may have been one and the same person with Thomas Parkyns of Ufton, Robert who died in 1478.

"It may be remembered that John Parkyns had in 1390 acquired

a small property in Madresfield, and if, as there seems no reasonable doubt, he was the same as John, the grandfather of Thomas of Ufton, he (Thomas) inheriting his grandfather's estate would be rightly styled of Ufton in Berkshire and of Madresfield in Worcestershire . . . the Worcestershire pedigree here gives the clue that the same Thomas had other sons, and that to his next son he bequeathed his land in Madresfield, who thereupon became the founder of another branch of the family."

From this same book we also learn that Thomas Parkyns(brother of John and William and Humphrey, married Ellen, sister of John Tomkins of Nappond, Herefordshire. Their son William Parkyns of Madresfield married Joan, daughter of ______ Reade of near Coventry. They had a son Richard Parkyns who was granted the crest and to whom the arms were confirmed.

"In 1390 John Parkyns, as we learn from the Madresfield Court Roll (before referred to) had held one messuage and 18 acres of land there, for which he did homage to the lady of the manor, Johanna Bracey, showing that he had then only recently acquired the property.

"William Parkyns, the sone of John, was the first of the family who was Lord of Ufton, Robert. From 1411 he is named in the dioceson registry as patron of the living, etc. He was attached to the service of Humphrey Plantagenet, Duke of Gloucester as baillious, or agent. Thomas Parkyns, Armiger, etc. . . . John Perkins son of Thomas, was 28 years old when he inherited his father's manor of Ufton Robert (this would place time of his birth as 1450).

Note: The above three paragraphs were taken from pages 39, 42, 43, and 226 of the aforementioned book.

The line of descent continues, taken from Lichfield Wills and Hillmorton Parish Register, Warwickshire p. 78 of *The Perkins Family in Ye Olden Times*, by Mansfield Parkyns, Esq. of Woodborough Hall, Nottinghamshire, Eng. edited by D. W. Perkins, Utica, N.Y., U. S. A., No. CS 429.P48 (1916) Library of Congress, Washington, D. C.

VI. WILLIAM PERKINS

WILLIAM PERKINS was of Warwickshire, 1495. He married and had the following sons:

1. John
2. THOMAS PERKINS, of Hillmorton, d. 1528; m. Alys, who died 1538
3. William Perkins, of Marston, Parish of Buckington, d. 1536; m. Agnes, had 2 sons: John and Thomas

VII. THOMAS PERKINS

THOMAS PERKINS of Hillmorton, died in 1528. He married Alys who died in 1538. (Hillmorton is near Rugby.)

VIII. HENRY PERKINS (d. 1547)

IX. THOMAS PERKINS

THOMAS PERKINS died in 1592. He married ALICE KEBBLE.

X. HENRY PERKINS (d. 1609)

XI. JOHN PERKINS

JOHN PERKINS was baptized December 23, 1583, in Hillmorton, Co. Warwickshire, England. He emigrated Dec. 1, 1630, and arrived in New England Feb. 5, 1630/31. He died in 1654 at Ipswich, Massachusetts. On October 9, 1608, he married JUDITH, daughter of Michael Gater. She died at Ipswich, Mass.

Children of John and Judith Perkins:

1. John, bp. Nov. 8, 1609, Hillmorton, Warwickshire, Eng., came to New England with parents
2. Elizabeth, bp. Mar. 23, 1611, Hillmorton, Warwickshire, Eng., came to N. E. with parents; m. Wm. Sargent
3. Mary, bp. Sept. 3, 1615, Hillmorton, Warwickshire, Eng., came to N. E. with parents; m. 1636 prob. Thomas Bradbury
4. Ann, bp. Sept. 5, 1617, Hillmorton, Warwickshire, Eng., author Savage does not say she came to N. E.; is not named in father's will
5. THOMAS, bp. April 28, 1622, married and was a Deacon; of Ipswich in 1648; had a daughter Judith b. Jan. 28, 1658; settled in Topsfield in that part formerly Ipswich; d. May 7, 1686; his will dated Dec. 11 preceding, probated Sept. following, leaving a large estate. No wife mentionel which indicates she pre-deceased her husband. Dau. Judith, b. Jan. 28, 1658; m. Dec. 16, 1673, NATHANIEL BROWN, b. 1652. (See p. 111).

6. Jacob Perkins, bp. Sept, 12, 1624, Hillmorton, Warwick, Eng.
7. Lydia Perkins, bp. June 3, 1632, Boston, Mass.

The N. E. Gen. & Hist. Reg. Vol. 3, p. 408, concerning marriages and deaths, states: "Jacob Perkins (the well-known inventor) Regents Square, London, died at the home of his son July 30, aged 83 yrs, 21 days. He was born in Newburyport. He was a descendant of that branch of the Perkins family early seated at Ipswich. His emigrant ancestor was named John, born at Newent Co. of Gloucester, England, in 1590. He came with his family to New England in 1631 in the same ship which brought over Roger Williams . . . His wife's name was Judith and names of the children were: John, Thomas, Elizabeth, Anna, Lydia, and Jacob, all born between 1613 and 1625, probably."

PERKIN'S ARMS: or, a fesse dancette between 10 billets ermine. Crest: pinecone ppr. (proper) (Pineapple seems to be correct.) Given as arms of John Perkins b. 1590, freeman of Newent, Glo. 1630, settled in Ipswich, Mass. 1654.

ROLL OF ARMS #223 PERKINS, Edmund of Boston before 1677, Arms: gold billety and a dancee counter-ermine. Crest: pineapple with stalk and leaves, proper.

References

Genealogical Dictionary of New England Families by Savage
Matthews' American Armoury and Blue Book, 1908, London, England
New England Hist. & Gen. Reg. V. 106, Oct. 1952, p. 261

Note: The editor states the Hillmorton Register begins with the year 1534. All dates previous to that (in the early part of this pedigree) have been knitted together from the Lichfield wills. The records of John Perkins, immigrant to New England and his family are taken from the register verbatim.

XII THOMAS PERKINS

THOMAS PERKINS, bp. April 28, 1622, d. May 7, 1686; m. circa 1650, PHEBE GOULD, daughter of Zaccheus and Phebe ____ Gould, b. 1630/31, County Bucks, England. Their daughter, JUDITH PERKINS, b. c. 1655, m. Dec. 16, 1673, Nathaniel Brown and they became the parents of Hannah Brown, who m. 1708 Edward Cogswell. (See pages 66, 78, 97, 102.)

THE HERRICK FAMILY

HERRICK, HENRY, from Leicestershire, England; of Salem 1629, later Wenham, still later, Beverley, Mass.:
Arms: argent a fess vaire or and gu.
Crest: a bull's head couped argent horned and eared sable gorged with a chaplet of roses ppr.
Motto: Virtus omnia nobilitat.
Ref.: *Crozier's Gen. Armory*
Burke's Armory 1884

Henry Herrick of Salem, Ref. (Leicester) Crozier's General Armory. Arms: Argent a fess vaire or and gu. Crest: A bull's head couped argent horned and eared sable gorged with a chaplet of roses. Motto: Virtus omnia nobilitat.

The ancient family of the Ericks or Herricks derive their lineage from Erick, the Forrester, a great Scandinavian commander who raised an army to oppose the invasion of William the Conqueror. Erick is derived from German *ehr* honor, and *rick*, rich, rich in honor. The name had undergone many modifications, from Eiricks, Eric, to the form of Herrick, which was assumed in the middle of the seventeenth century. The English family is traced from Eric or Eyryk of Great Streton and of Houghton, Leicestershire, England. HENRY, son of Sir William Herrick of Beau Manor Park, parish of Loughborough, Leicestershire, England, the tenth generation from Eyryk of Great Streton, born Beau Manor, 1604, came first to Virginia. Then he was a member of the Church at Salem, Massachusetts, 1629. He removed to Wenham, Massachusetts, and finally to Beverly.

From book, Burke, "The Landed Gentry - American Families" p 2863 plate L11

Take this with a grain of salt!
I suppose some people still take this seriously.

Lineage.—PETER MORLEY, *alias* PERKINS, living 1351, Sergeant to Hugh de Spencer, of Shipton Manor, Oxon, *m.* Agnes Taylor, and was father of

HENRY PERKINS, whose son,

JOHN PERKINS, Seneschal to Thomas, Duke of Gloucester, was father of

WILLIAM PERKINS, living 1420, who by Margaret his wife, had a son,

THOMAS PERKINS, who *d.* before 1470, leaving a son,

WILLIAM PERKINS, *d.* 1495. His son,

THOMAS PERKINS, of Hillmorton, Co. Warwick, *d.* 1528, leaving by Alys his wife (who *d.* 1538), a son,

HENRY PERKINS, *d.* 1547, leaving a son,

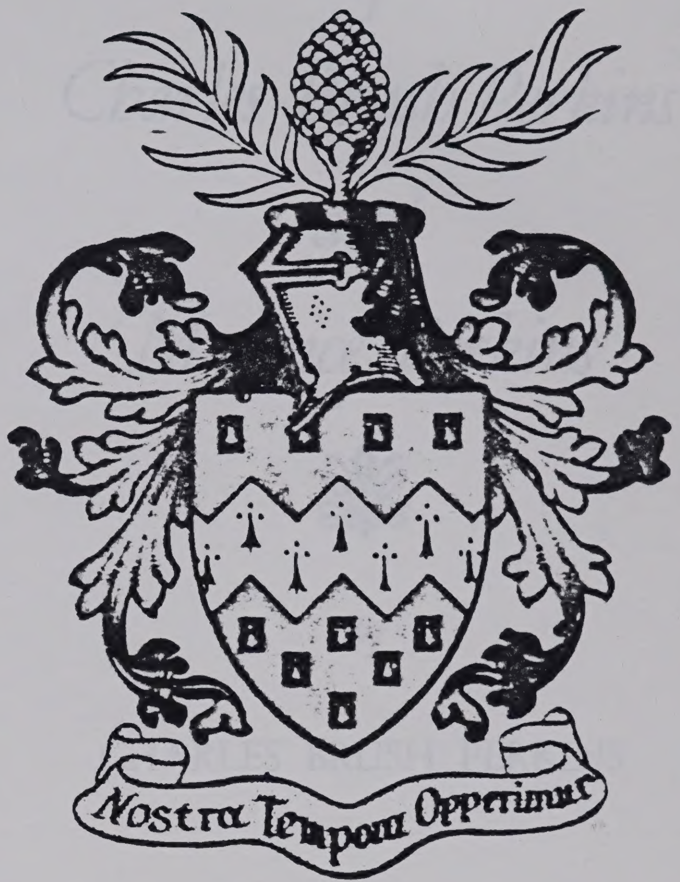
THOMAS PERKINS, *m.* Alice Kebble, and *d.* 1592, and was father of

HENRY PERKINS, of Hillmorton, who *d.* 1609, leaving a son,

JOHN PERKINS, of Hillmorton, Co. Warwick, and afterwards of Ipswich, Mass., representative of the General Court 1636, sailed from England 1 Dec. 1630, and arrived in New England 5 Feb. 1631, *bapt.* at Hillmorton 23 Dec. 1583; *m.* 9 Oct. 1608, Judith, dau. of Michael Gater, and *d.* 1654, leaving a son,

JACOB PERKINS, *b.* 1624; *m.* 1st, Elizabeth Lovell; and 2ndly, Damaris Robinson, and *d.* 1699-1700,

Arms.—Or, a fesse dancettée ermine between ten billets ermines four, three, two and one. *Crest.*—A pineapple stalked and leaved ppr. *Motto.*—Nostra tempora opperimur.



PERKINS *FORMERLY* OF HILLMORTON

This follows our Averill ancestor, Jacob Perkins, and his Connecticut descendants. These who moved to Preston CT were our many-great uncles, not ancestors, but this is interesting to us because our ancestor Isaac' Averill (William^2 William^1) also migrated there, as did our uncle John^3 Brown (Nathaniel^2 John^1) and our ancestor Edward Cogswell.

This book tells about Benjamin^6 Perkins of Camden S.C. (Joseph^{5,4,3} Jacob^2 John^1) but not the two men below:

NEHGR vol 122 (Jan 1968)

Queries

Birthplaces of brothers Timothy and Joseph Perkins, historical Loyalists and Tories of late pre-Revolutionary area of present Wythe, Grayson and Carroll Counties, Va., and old Wilkes and Ashe Counties, N. C., i.e., old 14th State of Franklin, said to have been born, married, with children in N. E. See Draper's manuscripts and book *Kings Mountain and Its Heroes*, Arthur's *History of Western North Carolina*, and Sturgill Genealogy. First official record entry #55 and N. C. grant #1725 in Wilkes County records, 1778. See also: *The Land of Wilkes and Ashe County: A History*. These brothers said to have had sisters: Phebe, Miriam and one other. Appear to have left N.E., 1774-75. One married a Couch, another a Skretch. Wife of Timothy may be Frances Sturgis or Sturgill, whose children, some or all, born in N.E., were: Jabez, 1766; Arad, 1769; Timothy, Jr., 1771 (married in 1795 Tabitha Anderson); Levi, 1772; Stephen, 1774; Lighteral; Jaraz; Gordon; and Lucy (married in 1796 Joseph Young). Needed for historical purposes. Traditions of descent from John Perkins of Ipswich. Maybe Isaac of Hampton, N. H., or Newent settlement in Norwich, Conn. Tradition: ancient brewers to Kings of England and Mass. Crown Tax Collectors.—Dow W. Perkins, 1293 S. E. 5th Avenue, Pompano Beach, Fla. 33060.

if they were tax collectors for the Crown that could explain having to leave New England in 1774/5.

ANCESTORS
of
Charles Brush Perkins
and
Maurice Perkins

By

CHARLES BRUSH PERKINS

GATEWAY PRESS, INC.
Baltimore 1976

was buried at Laurel Hill Cemetery.

In 1774, Robert's Patterson parents, ROBERT and JANE, came to Philadelphia from Ireland with four children, Joseph having come the previous year. ROBERT and JANE bought a small farm at Milestone, Abington Township, about seven miles north of Philadelphia, where they lived until his death in 1778. JANE died in 1781 and was buried in Shippen Street Cemetery, Philadelphia. They arrived in America just in time to begin a new period of strife in the Revolutionary War.

Of the four children who came with them, we know something about AGNES (Ann) PATTERSON and her sister, Martha Patterson, b. 1745-7, who married a Mr. Boyd upon arrival after emigrating with her parents in 1774. The Boyds settled near Camden, South Carolina. Tories surrounded their house and killed Mr. Boyd. However, Martha and a female servant succeeded in escaping, later returning to inter the dead. Martha is quoted as saying, "The pattern of my chequered web would not have been complete without those two red stripes." She later married a Mr. Norton.

The Pepper Genealogy by Royal (pg 12) claims that Dr. Robert Pepper m. Sarah Patterson in Ireland & settled in Lancaster Co PA ca 1730. They later settled in SW VA, where descendants established a famous ferry at Radford. Sarah died there in 1800. Many Boyds also lived in that vicinity & nearby N.C. A son [illegible] killed at Kings Mountain SC in the Rev. War. That isn't far from Camden S.C.

PERKINS

The name Perkins was quite common under various spellings in England long before the immigration of JOHN PERKINS, Sr., and his family in 1630, there being several branches of the family, among which the most important were:

The UFTON branch

The WORCESTERSHIRE branch

The GLOUCESTERSHIRE branch

Our immigrant ancestor was JOHN PERKINS, Sr., who with his wife, JUDITH GATER, and six children, John, Elizabeth, Mary, Ann, Thomas and JACOB, left Bristol, England on the Lyon (Lyon of Bristow), William Pierce, Master. The parish records of Hilmorton, Warwickshire contain the records of JOHN PERKINS' baptism, marriage and the births of his six children. These records are now in the Shirehall in Warwick. He was possibly born in Newent.

The tentative pedigree of JOHN PERKINS, Sr. herewith is, I believe, the best we have and is probably reasonably correct. (See APPENDIX). In view of the descent shown from THOMAS of HILMORTON and ALYS in the early 1500s, the family is doubtless from a Warwickshire branch. Apparently, JOHN and his descendants made no claim to bearing arms or to having a coat of arms. Other branches, however, did have coats of arms.

There were a large number of the name of Perkins among the early settlers of New England. Many of them lived near or next to each other in America and there is reason to believe that in many cases, at least, they were related or came from the same stock in England. However, all this seems circumstantial.

FIRST GENERATION

JOHN PERKINS was born in Hilmorton, Warwickshire or Newent, Gloucestershire in 1590. He married JUDITH GATER, born about 1588, daughter of MICHAEL GATER, on October 9, 1608 at Hilmorton, Warwickshire. He died in Ipswich, Massachusetts in 1654.

JOHN PERKINS, Sr. and his wife, JUDITH GATER, and six children probably left Hilmorton and traveled by boat down the river, Severn. At Bristol, they embarked on the Lyon or Lyon of Bristow, 250 tons. The Lyon

brought Governor Winthrop and family members on her next voyage. This ship arrived in Nantasket, Massachusetts on February 5, 1631, having sailed from Bristol, England on December 1, 1630

The passenger list was:

Mr. Roger Williams (later founder of R.I.)
Mrs. Mary Williams, his wife
Mr. John Throgmorton
JOHN PERKINS, age 47
JUDITH PERKINS, his wife, age 42
John Perkins, Jr., son of JOHN and JUDITH, aged 22
Elizabeth Perkins, daughter of JOHN and JUDITH, aged 20
Mary Perkins, daughter of JOHN and JUDITH, aged 15
Ann Perkins, daughter of JOHN and JUDITH, aged 13
Thomas Perkins, son of JOHN and JUDITH, aged 9
JACOB PERKINS, son of JOHN and JUDITH, aged 3 (?
______________Onge
Frances Onge, his wife
Simon Onge, son of ________and Frances, aged 6

Jacob Onge, son of________and Frances, aged 3

Thomas Harris

Elizabeth Harris

and nine more passengers whose names we have lost.

It seems as if all these children who survived a sixty-seven day trip in a small vessel in the North Atlantic in December and January would have become great friends; however, we do not find mention of any marriage to an Onge in later years. We may try to picture the Christmas party in the middle of that journey.* P

From Governor THOMAS DUDLEY's* letter to the Countess of Lincoln, March, 1631:

> ...."Upon the fifth of February arrived here Mr. Pierce with the ship Lyon of Bristow with supplyes of victualls from England and who sett forth from Bristow the first of December before. Hee had a stormy passage hether, and lost one of his saylors** not farr from our shore who in a tempest having helped to take in the spirit saile lost his hold as he was comeigne downe and fell into the sea, where after long swimming he was drowned, to the great dolour to those in the shipp, who beheld so lamentable a spectacle, without being able to minister help to him. The sea was soe high and the shipp drove so fast before the wind, though her sails were taken down."

---

*THOMAS DUDLEY, 1576-1653, Gov. of Plymouth Colony and father of MERCY DUDLEY, who married Rev. JOHN WOODBRIDGE.

**The lost sailor was the Captain's son, Way.

* Puritans did not believe in celebrating Christmas! They passed a law against it.

"And by the reports of those who cam hether in this shipp to abide with us (which were about 26) and those who went discontentedly from us last yeare,.... have raised many false and scandalous reports against us."

Perhaps we see here the beginning of discontent leading to the colony's move to Ipswich. The original settlers had arrived the previous June or July.

An idea of the condition of the colony may be gained from the following extract from Prince's Annals of New England, (Vol. I, p. 341).

> "As the winter (1629-30) came on provisions are very scarce (in the Massachusetts Bay) and the people necessitated to feed on clams and mussels, and on ground nuts and acorns; and these got with much difficulty in the winter season. Upon which people became much tired and discouraged; especially when they hear that the Governor himself has the last batch of bread in the oven. And many are the fears of the people that Mr. Pierce, who has sent to Ireland for provisions, is either cast away or taken by the pirates. Upon this a day of fasting and prayer to God for relief is appointed (to be on the sixth of February). But, God, who likes to appear in the greatest straits, works marvelously at this time; for on February 5, the very day before the appointed fast, in came the ship LION, Mr. William Pierce, master, now arriving at Nantasket laden with provisions. Upon which joyful occasion the day is changed and order to be kept (on the 22nd) as a day of thanksgiving."

> "February 8. The Governor goes aboard the LION riding at Long Island; the next day the ship comes to anchor before Boston (to the great joy of the people) where she rides very well, not withstanding the great drifts of ice. And the

> provisions are by the Governor, distributed to the people proportionate to their necessities."

This is possibly the origin of Thanksgiving Day in America.

For about two years after their arrival, the family of JOHN PERKINS remained in Boston, where their last child, Lydia, was born, her baptism being recorded upon the parish books of the First Church in Boston, June 3, 1632.

The following extract is from the Records of the General Court, Nov. 7, 1632.

> "Capt Traske, Willm Cheeseboro, Mr Conant and John Perkins are appointed by the Court to sett downe the bounds betwixt Rocksbury and Dorchester. Ralfe Sprague is chosen vmpire." (Records of Col. Mass. Bay, Vol. 1, p. 102)

We also find the following concession made to him by the "General Court", April 3, 1632.

> "It was ordered that noe person wtsoeuer shall shoote att fowle vpon Pullen Poynte or Noddles Ileland, but that the sd places shall be reserved for John Perkins to take fowle with netts." (Rec. of Col. of Mass. Bay, Vol. 1, p. 103)

On the 18th of May, 1631, he took the oath of freeman, admitting him to all the civil rights of the colony. He removed from Boston in 1633 to the colony then newly founded by John Winthrop, and others at Ipswich. Here he was largely engaged in agriculture, and had several grants of land; the location of his house was near the river, at the entrance to Jeffries neck, on what is now East street, where he had considerable land granted him.

The following is from the Ipswich book of Land Grants or "Commoner's Records".

> 1634. "Given and granted unto John Perkins the elder 40 acres of land, more or less, bounded on the east by Mr. Robert Coles his land, on the south by a small creek, on the west unto ye town side."

> 1635. "Granted Jn. Perkins Sr. 3 acres of upland and 10 of meadow lying toward the head of Chebacco creek, also a little island* called More's point about 50 acres on the south side of ye town river. Also 10 acres on part whereof he hath built an house, having Wm Perkins on S.W. ---Also 6 acres of meadow and 6 upland joining to the former 10 acres, all 3 lying at east end of the town having Wm White's land on N.E. and a highway to Jeffries neck on N.W."

> 1636. "John Perkins Sr. was granted 40 acres of meadow and upland at Chebacco, which he sold to Thomas Howlet 1637."

> 1639. "Granted to John Perkins 6 acres planting ground on South side river." (Vol. 1, p. 174).

*This island contains by measurement 30 acres, and upon it is now seen the cellar of a house. The Island has been lately (1882) purchased by a namesake and descendant of John Perkins, Sen.,--Mr. John Perkins, shoe manufacturer of Ipswich.

He was Deputy to the General Court and among those present at its session holden in Boston, May 25, 1636.

JOHN PERKINS was on the Grand Jury in 1648 and 1652, and his name is also found on trial juries.

He was appraiser to the estate of Sarah Dillingham in 1645.

> "John Perkins, sen., of Ipswich, being above 60 years of age, was freed from ordinary training by the Court in March, 1650."

JOHN PERKINS, besides holding town offices and occupying other places of trust, appears to have been one of the leading men of Ipswich, and was highly esteemed by his fellow townsmen. He died in 1654 at the age of 64 years. His will (which is of importance as settling the names of his wife and children and some of his grandchildren) and inventory are on file in the Probate Office in Salem. (See APPENDIX)

The children of JOHN PERKINS and his wife, JUDITH were:

John Perkins, b. 1614, d. Dec. 14, 1686
Thomas Perkins, b. 1616, d. May 7, 1686
Elizabeth Perkins, b. 1618, d. 1700, m. Sargent
Ann Perkins, b. ca. 1618 (before 1634)
Mary Perkins, b. 1620, d. 1700

JACOB PERKINS, b. 1624, d. Jan. 27/29, 1699-1700
Lydia Perkins, b. 1632, d. about 1672; bapt. 1st Ch. Boston, June 3, 1632, m. Henry Bennet ca. 1650

SECOND GENERATION

JACOB PERKINS (John) was born in Hilmorton, Warwickshire England in 1624 and died in Ipswich, Massachusetts, January 27/29, 1699-1700, aged 76. He was seven years old when he landed with his parents in Boston in 1631. Two years later, he moved with his family to Agawam or Ipswich where he probably helped his father build his house. The earliest mention of JACOB after arrival in America was in his father's will made about the time of his death in 1654.

After the death of his father and mother, he came into possession of the homestead, stated in the will as "dwelling house and all the outhousing and landes of one kinde and another together with all improvements thereupon".

This house was located in the extreme Eastern Part of the Town of Ipswich, very near the river side and also near to Manning and Jeffries' necks where much of his farming land was situated.

The house he occupied until the seventh of August, 1668, when it was destroyed by fire through the carelessnes but she was convicted in spite of vigorous denials by herself and her husband and the signatures of one hundred and seventeen of her neighbors and friends, many of whom were influential citizens. (For more information in this connection, see APPENDIX).

The children of JACOB and Elizabeth ~~Lovell~~ PERKINS were:

Elizabeth Perkins, b. April 1, 1649, m. Thomas ✓
  Borman, Jan. 1, 1667
John Perkins, b. July 3, 1652, m. (1) Mary Fiske,
  (2) Elizabeth Pryhatch, (3) Mary Hooper, d. 1718
  at 67 years
ours ✓ Judith Perkins, b. July 1, 1655, m. Nathaniel
  Browne, Dec. 16, 1673
Mary Perkins, b. May 14, 1658, m. (1) Thomas
  Wells, Jan. 10, (?) 1669, (2) John Annable
Jacob Perkins, b. Aug. 3, 1662, m. (1) Elizabeth
  Sparks, Dec. 27, 1684, (2) Sarah Treadwell
Mathew Perkins, b. June 23, 1665, m. Esther Burnham To Preston CT ①
  (but back to Ipswich)

* The children of JACOB and DEMARIS ROBINSON PERKINS were:

Hannah Perkins, b. Oct. 11, 1670
JOSEPH PERKINS, b. June 21, 1674, m. MARTHA MORGAN, to Preston CT

* C. A. Torrey "New England Marriages" says he married Demaris after Feb 1685, — Elizabeth's death (not 1665). He believes she was a Whipple, not a Lovell.

May 22, 1700
Jabez Perkins, b. May 15, 1677, m. (1) Hannah To Preston CT ②
  Lathrop, June 30, 1698, (2) Charity Leonard, 1772

THIRD GENERATION

Deacon JOSEPH PERKINS (Jacob, John) was born in Ipswich, Massachusetts, June 21, 1674. He removed to Norwich, Connecticut and there married MARTHA MORGAN, daughter of JOSEPH and DOROTHY MORGAN, on May 22, 1700. She was of Preston, Connecticut, and was born in 1680 ③ and died in October, 1754.

JOSEPH died in Norwich, September 6, 1726.

At the time of his removal from Ipswich, he was accompanied by his brother, Jabez and his half brother, Mathew. Mathew soon returned to Ipswich, but JOSEPH and Jabez purchased a large tract of land (800-1200 acres) for seventy pounds. This land was situated in the forks of the Quinebaug and Shetucket Rivers, in that part of the town of Norwich which later became the town of Lisbon and was known as "Perkins' Crotch". This land remained in the family, 1804-1820.

JOSEPH PERKINS was an influential man, both in town and church; by the latter he was elected a deacon and is of a servent girl. She was imprisoned and afterwards brought up before the magistrate to answer for her deed. As it will be of interest to know the manner of the destruction of this house, we give the account of her examination at some length, as it is found upon the court files of 1668, from which it is copied. (See APPENDIX, "Burning of Jacob Perkins' House")

JACOB's new house was struck by lightning on a Sunday in 1671 while many people were gathered there to repeat the sermon, and he and many others were struck down, and he had his waistcoat pierced by a small hole, "like goose shot and was beaten down like as if he had been dead for the present".

In about 1647-48, judging from the date of the birth of his oldest child, Elizabeth, on the first of April, 1649, he first married

Elizabeth Whipple ~~Lovell~~, who according to the family Bible, died February 12, 1665. After the death of his first wife, he married DEMARIS ROBINSON of Boston, the widow of Nathaniel Robinson, mariner. He lived with her until his death, January 27, 1699-1700. After his death, she returned to Boston where she died in 1716. By her will, she left her property to her children by her first husband.

JACOB was chosen Sergent of the Ipswich Military Band in 1664.

In his old age, JACOB gave his property to his two sons, Jacob and Mathew, who engaged to support their stepmother "as long as she should live" according to an agreement he had made previous to his second marriage. There is little upon the record concerning him. He, like all his neighbors who were farmers, lived a quiet and uneventful life. His name is sometimes found upon the "deeds" in the transfer or purchase of land or as witness to a will or deed, and, in one instance, as foreman of a jury of inquest.

JACOB's sister, Mary, married Thomas Bradbury, and in 1692 was convicted of witchcraft along with a number of others. She was at that time a resident of Salisbury. Mr. and Mrs. Bradbury were prominent citizens of Salisbury,

TENTATIVE PEDIGREE OF JOHN PERKINS, SR.

WILLIAM OF WARWICKSHIRE, 1495

John, - THOMAS OF HILMORTON, m. ALYS, d. 1538 -William of Marston, m. Agnes of Bulkington

---

HENRY, d. 1547 John - Emmett - Thomas

William -THOMAS, d. 1592, m. ALICE AMBER

HENRY, d. 1609 -John -William -Edward -Thomas -Luke -Issac

Thomas
Margaret
Edward
Anne
Sarah
Francis
William
Lucy
Elizabeth
James

-JOHN PERKINS, Bap. Dec. 23, at Hilmorton Cty., Warwick. Emigrated Dec. 1, 1630, arrived New England Feb. 5, 1630, d. Dec. 31, 1654

m. JUDITH GATER, dau. of MICHAEL GATER, m. Oct. 8, 1608

---

* John, Bap. Nov. 8, 1609, Hilmorton
Elizabeth, Bap. Mar. 3, 1615,? Hilmorton
Mary, Bap. Sept. 3, 1615, Hilmorton
Ann, Bap. Sept. 5, 1617, Hilmorton
Thomas, Bap. Apr. 28, 1622, Hilmorton
JACOB, Bap. Sept. 12, 1624, Hilmorton ✓
Lydia, Bap. June 3, 1632, Boston

Above from The Perkins Family in Ye Olden Times, by, D.W. Perkins, Utica, New York, printed 1916.

*These dates do not correspond exactly with those listed from the Parish Record of Hilmorton hereafter.

PERKINS ANCESTORS OF

CHARLES BRUSH PERKINS and MAURICE PERKINS

Condensation

JOHN PERKINS b. England, Bap. Dec. 23, 1583
Hilmorton County, Warwickshire
d. Ipswich, Dec. 31, 1654
m. JUDITH GATOR, October 8, 1608

JACOB PERKINS b. Hilmorton, Warwickshire, England, 1624
d. Ipswich, Massachusetts, 1654
m. ELIZABETH ~~LOVELL~~, ca. 1647-8 Whipple
d. Feb. 12, 1665 dau. Matthew

Deacon JOSEPH PERKINS
b. Ipswich, Mass., June 21, 1674
d. Norwich, Connecticut, September 6, 1726
m. MARTHA MORGAN, May 22, 1700
b. Preston, Conn., 1680, d. Oct., 1754

Dr. JOSEPH PERKINS
b. Norwich, Conn., Oct. 25, 1704)
d. July 7, 1794
m. MARY BUSHNELL (2) July 23, 1730,
b. ca. 1710 in Norwich, Conn.

JOSEPH PERKINS b. Norwich, Conn., August 10, 1733
d. Lisbon, Conn., May 5, 1775
m. JOHANNA BURNHAM, May 10, 1757
b. 1734, d. November 16, 1811

Judge ELIAS PERKINS
b. Lisbon, Conn., Apr. 5, 1767
d. Sept. 27, 1848, New London, Conn.
m. LUCRETIA SHAW WOODBRIDGE (1) on March 14, 1790,
b. Aug. 7, 1773
d. March 6, 1802

THOMAS SHAW PERKINS
b. New London, Conn., Aug. 10, 1793
d. Oct. 14, 1844
m. MARIAN GRISWOLD
b. 1801
d. Sept. 21-22, 1869

Dr. MAURICE PERKINS
b. Schenectady, N.Y., April 14, 1836
d. Schenectady, N.Y., June 18, 1901
m. ANNIE DUNBAR POTTS, b. Natchez,
Mississippi, Feb. 7, 1835
d. Schenectady, N.Y., July 19, 1922

Dr. ROGER GRISWOLD PERKINS
b. Schenectady, N.Y., March 17, 1874
d. Providence, R.I., March 28, 1936
m. EDNA BRUSH, b. Cleveland, Ohio, 1880
d. Cleveland, Ohio, Oct. 11, 1930

Cmdr. CHARLES B. PERKINS
b. Cleveland, Ohio, March 30, 1907
m. (1) Maria Elizabeth Bush, b.
(2) Elizabeth Howland Nowell,
b. June 10, 1904
d. Aug. 28, 1958
(3) Adeline Hazard, b. Dec., 1913

MAURICE PERKINS
b. May 21, 1912
m. Virginia Geroux, 1974

WILL OF JOHN PERKINS, SR.

"Will of John Perkins, senior, of Ipswich 28th of yee first mo called March, 1654. I John Perkins the elder of Ipswich being at this tyme sick and weake in body yet through the mercy and goodness of the Lord retaining my understanding and memory: doe thus dispose of and bequeat my temporall estate as Followeth.

"First, I do give and bequeath unto my eldest sonn John Perkins a foale of my young mare now with foale if it please the Lord she foale it well also I give and bequeth to my sonn John's two sonnes John and Abraham to each of them one of my yearling heyfers: also I give and bequeath to my son Thomas Perkins one cow and one heyfer also I give and bequeath to his son John Perkins one ewe & to be delivered for his use at the next shearing time also I doe give and bequeath to my daughter Elizabeth Sargent one cow and an heyfer to be to her and her children after her decease as it may please ye Lord they may increase, the proffits or increase to be equally devided amongst the sayde children: also I do give to my daughter Mary Bradbury one cow and one heyfer or a young steer to remain to her and to her children in theyr increase or proffits as it shall please the Lord to bless them and to be equaly devided to ye children: also I doe give and bequeath to my daughter Lidia Bennitt one cow and one heyfer or steere to be equally devided to her children in theyr increase or proffits after her decease: I doe also give unto my grandchilde Thomas Bradbury one ewe to be sett apart for his use at ye next shearing tyme: also I do give and bequeathe unto my sonn Jacob Perkins my dwelling house together with all the outhowseing and all my landes of one kinde and other together with all improvements thereupon to be his in full possession according to a former covenant after the decease of my wyfe and nott before and so to remaine to him and to his heires forever: all the rest of my estate of one kinde and other I do wholy leave my deare wife Judith Perkins appointing and ordaining my saide wife to dispose of the cattell above mentioned according to her discresion as they shall prove steeres or heyfers, also to dispose of some of the increase of the sheep to ye children of my sonn Thomas and my three daughters at the Discresion of my sayde wife and this I doe ordaine as my Last will and Testament subscribed with my own hand this twenty eight day of ye first month 1654.

Signed in presence of   John Perkins
William Bartholmew
Thomas Harris

Proved in court held at Ipswich 27 (7) 1654 by the oath of William Bartholmew and Thomas Harris per me. Robert Lord, cleric."

"An Inventory of the Estate of John Perkins Senior deceased.

It.	the Dwelling house and barn with outhousing	40.00.00
It.	Land about the house about eight acres	12.00.00
It.	More land unbroake up about fourteen acres	21.00.00
It.	a parcel of Marsh about six at 40^{s} per acre	12.00.00
It.	a parcel of upland and Marsh being much broken about 20 acres at 20^{s} per acre	20.00.00
It.	12 acres of improved land 50 per acre	24.00.00
It.	one mare with a foal at	25.00.00
It.	six milch cows at	30.00.00
It.	four yearling Heyfers and a Steere at	11.10.00
Item	six ewes at 35.s	10.10.00
It.	5 ewe lambs at	05.00.00
It.	one yearling weather and two weather lambs	02.00.00
It.	one young Calf	00.15.00
It.	one cow at the pasture a sow & 3 piggs all	08.00.00
It.	one feather bed with bed & furniture	04.00.00
It.	Coverlid with other small thinges linen most	02.10.00
It.	left in mony at his decease	10.00.00
It.	a Cart, plows, a harrow with several goods od lumber as casks tubbs cheares axes hoes etc. valuable	05.00.00
It.	Severall ketles pottes & Dishes in the Kitchin	02.00.00
It.	his wearing aparell	05.00.00
		250.05.00

Witnesses & Appraisers
William Bartholmew

rcd in the Court held at Ipswich the 26 of the (7) 1654.
Robert Lord, cleric"

JOHN PERKINS' silver headed walking cane is now (1973) at the Whipple House in Ipswich.

BURNING OF JACOB PERKINS' HOUSE*

"The examination of Mehitable Brabrook** aged about 16 years taken on the 15 day of August 1668.

"This examinate saith that on Thursday last was seavennight her master Jacob Perkins and his wife being gon to Towne she was left at home alone. about 2 or 3 a clock in the afternoon she was taking tobacco in a pipe and went out of the house with her pipe and gott upon the owen on the outside and backside of the house to looke if there were any hogs in the corne and she layd her right hand upon the thatch of the house to stay herself and with her left hand knocked out her pipe over her right arme upon the thatch of the eaves of the house not thinking there had been any fire in the pipe and imediately went down into the corne field to drive out the hogs she saw in it, and as she was going toward the railes of the field toward Abraham Perkins house she looked back and saw a smoke upon her Mrs. house in the place where she had knocked out her pipe by which she was much frighted and went into the sd Abraham Perkins house to intreat her to helpe me about a kettle of clothes and goodwife Perkins sent her to the barne to call her mayd to come and look to the child whilst she went to help this examinate and when I came with the mayd the sd goodwife Perkins and this examinate went toward Mr. Jacob Perkins. in the way we saw the smoake from the house and then ran and coming to the house found the fire in the place above the owen where I had knocked out my pipe. I ran for a paile of water but before I could get out of the well the thatch flamed and for want of ladders and helpers being ready the house was burned down. being demanded why upon her first seeing the smoake she did not aquaint goodwife Perkins, she said she was loath to fright her, and asked why when fir she saw it she did not go back to quench it. she answered she was so frighted she durst not. she further said as she was coming with goodwife Perkins towards the house she said to sd goodwife Perkins why do the woods look so blew beyond our house, and so there was a great smoake behind the house.

---

*From FAMILY OF JOHN PERKINS by George A. Perkins, M.D., 1884, Part III

**Mehitable Brabrook m. John Downing, 2, 9, 1669.

mark
Mehitable X Brabrook

This confession was taken made and signed the day and year above written before me

Daniel Denison

This examinate further addeth that about an hour before the fire kindled on the house the chimney was on fire a little above the wing at which she was frighted, but she quenched it with Lye she had upon the fire in a kittle of cloathes.

This addition was made the day above written before me --- Daniel Denison."

"Goodwife Perkins" (Hannah the wife of Abraham Perkins) gives substantially the same facts. After some search she found the fire and attempted to quench it, but it gained upon them so rapidly that they ceased their efforts.

Abraham was JACOB's nephew, son of his brother, John. He built the Ipswich meeting house, was an Inn Holder and a representative to the General Court in 1710. He owned and cultivated PERKINS Island. He married Hannah Beamsley of Boston, October 16, 1661. His death was sudden "he being run over by a tumbril which broke many bones across his breast" on April 27, 1732.

Several other witnesses were called, but only one could offer any testimony that the fire was set designedly.

(This paper is in a very bad condition and some of the words are nearly illegible.)

"The deposition of John Williston aged 20 years or thereabouts saith that one morning a little a fore Jacob Perkins house was burnt Mehitable Brabrook, as I was Going into the meddow to make hay and Mehitable Brabrook toald me her dame was angry with her but she (   ) she had (   ) her now for she had put a Great toade into her kittle of milk, which she toald me the next morning after she had put the toade in the milk. it was about the latter end of last July, and further saith not.

Sworn in Court held at Ipswich the 29 of Sept. 1668. attest Robert Lord cleric."

Such is the account which comes to us of the destruction of the house of John Perkins, Sen.

MARY BRADBURY - Convicted Witch

Mary Perkins was born in 1620 in England and died in Salisbury, Massachusetts in 1700. The daughter of JOHN and JUDITH PERKINS, she came to America with her father and mother in Lyon, arriving at Boston in February, 1631, at the age of fifteen. She and her husband, Thomas Bradbury, were for many years prominent citizens of Salisbury, Massachusetts, he being a magistrate and deputy. She is described in one document (the indictment against her) as, "wife of Captain Thomas Bradbury, of Salisbury, in the County of Essex, gentleman".

In 1692, Mary was charged with witchcraft, and testimony against her was given by Richard Carr and one Zarubabel Endicott to the effect that they had seen a "Blue Boar" come from her yard and re-enter the yard and window. The boys were about twenty and fifteen at the time this occurrence is supposed to have taken place.

Richard Carr's father, George Carr, had had a disagreement of fifteen years standing with Mary Bradbury and had influenced his son and his son's friend in their testimony. Samuel Carr, a brother of Richard, also testified that he had seen Mary perched on the capstain

of a ship at sea when things were going badly. It is of interest to note that all but one of the depositions against Mary were recorded in his own handwriting by Sergent Thomas Putnam, whose wife was Ann Carr of Salisbury. One Carr, William, however, testified that there was nothing he knew against Mary and referred to a broken love affair between the families.

Mary's reply to the indictment follows:

> "I plead 'Not Guilty'. I am wholly innocent of any such wickedness through the goodness of God that hath kept me hitherto. I am the servent of Jesus Christ, and have given myself up to him as my only Lord and Saviour, and to the diligent attendance upon him in all His holy ordinances, in utter contempt and defiance of the Devil and all his works, as horrid and detestable, and, accordingly, have endeavoured to frame my life and conversation in accordance with His holy word: and, in that faith and practice, resolve, by the help and assistance of God, to continue to my life's end.
>
> "For the truth of what I have to say, as to matter of practice, I humbly refer myself to my bretheren and neighbors that know me, and unto the Searcher of all hearts, for the truth and uprightness of my heart therein. (Human frailties and unavoidable infirmities excepted, of which I bitterly complain every day).
>
> Mary Bradbury"

Mary's husband, Thomas, also made affidavit as to her character as follows:

"June 28, 1692____Concerning my beloved wife, Mary

> Bradbury, this is what I have to say: We have been married fifty five years and she has been a loving and faithful wife to me. Unto this day, she hath been wonderful laborious, diligent and industrious, in her place and employment, about the bringing up of our family (which have been seven children of our own and four grandchildren). She was both prudent and provident, and of cheerful spirit, liberal and charitable. She being now very aged and weak, and grieved under her affliction, may not be able to speak much for herself, not being so free of speach as some others may be. I hope her life and conversation have been such amongst her neighbors as gives a better and more real testimony of her than can be expressed by words.
>
> Owned by me, THO. BRADBURY"

The Rev. James Allin also made similar affidavits as did Robert Pike, a magistrate, Justice for Norfolk, and one of the council that succeeded to the House of Assistants, when, under the new charter, Massachusetts became a royal province. In addition to these statements, one hundred and seventeen of her neighbors, mostly heads of families, signed the following statement:

> "Concerning Mary Bradbury's life and conversation, we, the subscribers, do testify, that it was such as became the gospel: she was a lover of the ministry, in all appearance, and a diligent attender upon God's holy ordinances, being of a courteous and peacable disposition and carriage. Neither did any of us (some of whom have lived in the town with her above fifty years) ever hear or ever know that she ever had any differences of falling-out with any of her neighbors,—man, woman or child,— but was always ready and willing to do for them what lay in her power night and day, though with

> hazard of her health, or other danger. More migh be spoken in her commendation, but this for the present."

The above information is from Witchcraft at Salem Village, History of Witchcraft in Massachusetts and Salem Witchcraft.

It is difficult for us to understand the climate thought that could allow for such actions as the Salem Witchcraft trials, although Congress has approached suc hysteria at various times. According to Sally Smith Booth in Witches of Early America:

> "Colonials charged their neighbors with witchcraft for many different reasons, some based on simple financial gain----some allegations were a subtle form of blackmail."

Mary Bradbury escaped from custody, perhaps with the connivance of some of her many friends. On Decembe 17, 1711, after Mary's death, the governor and council authorized payment to twenty-three persons condemned at Salem. Her descendants received twenty pounds, and a petition to reverse the attainder of twenty-two of the thirty-one citizens convicted was passed by the Massach setts General Court in 1711. In 1957, the Commonwealth of Massachusetts reversed the stigma of all those not covered by previous orders.

Dr. ELISHA PERKINS

It is of interest here to note a well known and controversial relative, the brother of JOSEPH PERKINS, 1733-1775.

Dr. Elisha Perkins (Joseph, Joseph, Jacob, John) was born in Norwich, Connecticut, January 16, 1741. He married Sarah Douglass of Plainfield, Connecticut, September 23, 1762. She was a sister of his brother Simon's wife. She died of consumption August 10, 1795. He died of yellow fever in the city of New York, September 6, 1799.

"Elisha Perkins was a physician, whose residence was in Plainfield, Connecticut. He was widely known, having a very extensive practice in the surrounding country.

"He was well fitted by nature for his work by a strong and vigorous constitution, which enabled him to endure great fatigue. It is said that he was often obliged to ride horseback sixty miles a day to see his patients. He used no spirituous liquors or stimulants, though they were in common use at that time; three or four hours' sleep daily sufficed him.

"He was a man of the kindest and most sympathizing nature, always ready with a helping hand and a kindly word; taking the sick into his own home and family, and, when restored to health by his skill and kindness, they were loud in his praises.

"Dr. Perkins became more widely known by his invention of the 'metallic tractors', which he used in the treatment of various painful diseases, as neuralgia,

rheumatism, etc.

"These tractors were two pieces of metal, about three inches in length and of dissimilar kinds, each being pointed at one end. In use they were drawn over the painful part, from above downwards, for about twenty minutes at a time.

"This method of cure was recommended by physicians of three institutions in the United States. In Copenhagen, twelve physicians in the Royal Frederick Hospital used and recommended them. In London, the tractors were introduced by a son of Dr. Perkins', and a hospital was opened in that city, under the presidency of Lord Rivers for the benefit of the poor. An almost incredible number of cures were recorded; eight professors, forty physicians and surgeons and thirty clergymen testifying to their efficacy.

"Dr. Perkins also brought forward an antiseptic remedy which he used with success in the treatment of ulcerated sore throat (diphtheria ?) and typhoid dysentery. Anxious to try the efficacy of this new remedy in yellow fever which was prevailing in New York at that time he visited the city, and after four weeks of unremitting toil he died of the disease in September, 1799.

"After the decease of Dr. Perkins the tractors fell into disuse and were ridiculed. It should be stated that he had been expelled from the Connecticut Medical Society in 1797, for advocating the use of his tractors. His antiseptic was not heard of again at that time; but the world moves on. Dr. Elisha Perkins was seventy-five years in advance of his age, and we cannot fail to see in his tractors the germ of the use of electricity, so extensively employed in our day for the cure and alleviation of disease; and in his antiseptic, the dawn of one of the most important improvements of modern medicine; particularly in surgery.

"Let us give honor to whom honor is due, even if it be but a tardy post-mortem honor."

The American Medical Association cites as one of its prime examples of medical quackery, Dr. Elisha Perkins and his metal protractors. A few years ago, I actually saw the AMA exhibit. It seems, however, that the protractors are, at least for the time being, discredited.

CAMDEN, SOUTH CAROLINA BRANCH

SIXTH GENERATION

Benjamin Perkins (Joseph, Joseph, Joseph, Jacob, John) was born in Connecticut (probably in Lisbon) in 1763. He moved to Camden, South Carolina shortly after the Revolution and was admitted to the Carolina Bar in 1787. In the following year, he was one of the first attorneys to hang up his shingle in Camden. He married Sarah Kershaw, daughter of Joseph Kershaw, and through her acquired a considerable area of lands, The Westerham Place across the river from Camden, and a large tract at Hyco on Pine Tree Creek, where he died in 1841. Family tradition says that he came to South Carolina as an **abolitionist**, but that after his marriage and the acquisition of considerable property, he changed his point of view considerably.

The book, Historic Camden by Kirkland and Kennedy, says he was somewhat eccentric in his later years and among other things, "At church he would get up from his seat, stroll about the aisles with his hands behind his back, stop and stare at the preacher, sometimes with evident disapproval of his doctrine, go to the door and examine the weather, sit for a while on the pulpit steps, and seemed always unable to keep still."

Benjamin and Sarah Kershaw Perkins had ten children:

Charles W. Perkins, died young
Charles Perkins, b. 1799, d. 1872, unmarried
Benjamin (II) Perkins, 1803-1868
Mary Kershaw Perkins, 1807-1846
Rebecca B. Perkins, d. July 27,1840
Henrietta L. Perkins, m. Rev. Urias Powers,
  June, 1834
__________ Perkins, m. Johnson ("Aunt Johnson")
Henry Perkins
Ellen Perkins
Lucretia Perkins

SEVENTH GENERATION

Benjamin (II) Perkins (Benjamin, Joseph, Joseph, Joseph, Jacob, John), was born in Camden, South Carolina in 1803. He died in 1868. He lived in or near Camden. He married Priscilla Bryan Jumelle, 1819-1881, daughter

of Pierre Larent Jumelle, one of the wealthy proprietors of Santo Domingo, who was cast upon the world by the storm of the French Revolution. Here, driven from affluence to poverty, he resorted to his skills in the polite arts for a living and taught fashionable French dances accompanied by his own music on the violin. Jumelle Hill in Kirkwood derives its name from him. According to the inscription on his grave, he was born in 1768 in the Parish of La Petite Riviere de L'Artibonite, Santo Domingo. He died in Camden, S.C. in 1824.

Benjamin (II) and Priscilla Jumelle Perkins had two children:

Caroline Jumelle Perkins, 1843-1898, m. 1859
  Roger G. Perkins
Benjamin Elias Perkins, 1844-1867

EIGHTH GENERATION

Benjamin Elias Perkins III, 1844-1867, was a gallant Confederate soldier and married Maria Carter Wormley of Virginia, who died in 1873. Their son was Laurence Jumelle Perkins, who also died in 1873.

Caroline Jumelle Perkins was born in 1843 and died February 13, 1898. In 1859, she married her cousin,

EXTRACTS FROM THE ORIGINAL PARISH REGISTER

of

HILMORTON PARRISH - WARWICKSHIRE, ENGLAND

BAPTISMS

1565,	April 20,	Frauncis, son of Thomas Perkins
1583,	Dec. 23,	John, son of Henry and Elizabeth Perkins
1598,	Jan. 13,	William, son of Henry Perkyns
1604,		Francis Perkins
1605,	Mar. 23,	Jacob, Son of Isaake Perkins
1606,		Edward Perkins
1607,	April,	Edward, son of Thomas Perkins
1607,	July 26,	Jacob, son of Henry Perkins
1608,		Judith Perkins
1611,	Jan. 26,	Isaacke, son of Isaacke Perkins
1611,		Elizabeth Perkins
1613,		Alice Perkins
1622,		Mary Perkins
1623,		Edward Perkins

MARRIAGES

1579,	Nov. 29,	Henry Perkyns and Elizabeth
1586,	Oct. 16,	Thomas Perkyns and Casia Smyth
1608,	Oct. 9,	John Perkyns and Judith Gater
1616,	Oct. 6,	Edward Perkyns and Mary Watkin
1621,	Aug. 2,	Luke Perkyns and Marjorie pur____
1637,	Sept. 14,	Edward Perkyns and Alice Harding

BURIALS

1587,	Nov. 10,	John Perkyns
1590,	May 20,	Edward Perkins
1591,	Mar. 23,	Thomas Perkins
1599,	May 19,	Thomas Perkins
1602,	Nov. 25,	Elizabeth, dau. of Thomas Perkins

1603,	June 22,	Alice, wife of Isaacke Perkins
1608,	March 2,	Henry Perkyns
1610,	Dec. 3,	John Perkyns
1611,	Oct. 23,	Alice, dau. of Edward Pyrkins
1613,	Aug. 20,	Alice Perkins
1618,	Mar. 27,	Elizabeth, dau. Edward Pyrkins Junic
1622,	Apr. 2,	Mary, wife of Thomas Pyrkins
1629,	Dec. 7,	Thomas Perkins

From Perkins Families in the United States in 1790, by D. W. Perkins, Utica, New York, 1911.

ANCESTORS
OF
CHARLES
BRUSH
PERKINS
AND
MAURICE
PERKINS

PERKINS

CS
71
P45
1976

(Dodge Ancestors)

Family No.

Gould
Surname

Family Record

Father – Zaccheus GOULD

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth			1589	Bovingdon	Hertfordshire	England		○
Death	7	May	1686	Topsfield	Essex	Massachusetts		○
Buried								○
Married	bef		1619	Great Missenden	Buckinghamshire	England	Hunt's Green near Potter's Row	○

Occupation "husbandman" farmer　Military　Church Puritan ○

Places Lived ○

Other Wives ○

His Father's Name ○

His Mother's Maiden Name ○

Mother – Phebe DEACON

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth bp.	3	Apr	1597	Hemel Hempstead	Hertfordshire	England		○
Death	20	Nov	1663	Topsfield	Essex	Massachusetts		○
Buried								○

Occupation　Military　Church Puritan ○

Places Lived ○

Other Husbands ○

Her Father's Name Thomas Deacon ○

Her Mother's Maiden Name Martha Field ○

Children

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
+	1. (Phebe Gould	Birth			1620		Bucks.	Eng	○
		Death			16[illegible]			MA	○
	Spouse - Thomas Perkins (7 May 1616 – 7 May 1686)	Married	14	Oct	1640	Ipswich		MA	○
+	2. Mary Gould	Birth			1621		Bucks.	Eng	○
		Death		ca	1687?			MA	○
*	Spouse - John Redington	Married		ca	1647			MA	○
	3. Martha Gould	Birth			1623		Bucks	Eng	○
		Death			1699	Ipswich		MA	○
	Spouse - John Newmarch (–1697)	Married		ca	1650			MA	○
	4. Priscilla Gould	Birth			1625		Bucks	Eng	○
		Death			1663	Topsfield		MA	○
*	Spouse - John Wildes (1618 – 1705)	Married		ca	1645			MA	○
	5. (Captain) John Gould (King Phillips War)	Birth			1635		Bucks.	Eng	○
		Death			1710			MA	○
	Spouse - Sarah Baker (–1708) dau. John	Married	14	Oct	1660	Ipswich		MA	○
	6.	Birth							○
		Death							○
	Spouse -	Married							○
	7.	Birth							○
		Death							○
	Spouse -	Married							○

In the circles, identify by number your sources of information -- then list each on the reverse side.

For descendants of Thomas and Phebe (Gould) Perkins, see Perkins Family

* This family, though some of them were dead by then, were deeply involved in the 1692 "Salem" witchcraft hysteria. Mary was the "Goodie Reddington" who harassed Sarah (Averill) Wildes, executed (hung) for witchcraft. After her death John m.② ca 1689 Sarah ____ who m② Edward Briggs in 1691.

John Wildes, Priscilla Gould's widower, married the unfortunate Sarah Averill (who was probably targeted to get at him). After her execution he m③ Mary (　　) Jacobs, on 26 June 1693. Her husband, George Jacobs, was crushed to death under stones as punishment for supposed witchcraft.

☐ Additional children listed on the reverse side.

Family Record

(Dodge Ancestors)

Family No.

Gould
(in England) Surname

Father – Richard GOLD, Jr.

Event	Day Month Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth	ca 1555					○
Death	(before 1 July 1597) estate settled	of Bovingdon	Hertfordshire	England	Est. settled Berkhampsted	○
Buried					(St. Peters)	○
Married						○

Occupation Military Church Puritan ○

Places Lived ○

Other Wives ② Elizabeth ○

His Father's Name Richard Gold ○

His Mother's Maiden Name Joan (   ) Weeden, a widow ○

Mother – (   ) not learned

Event	Day Month Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth						○
Death						○
Buried						○

Occupation Military Church ○

Places Lived ○

Other Husbands ○

Her Father's Name P ○

Her Mother's Maiden Name ○

Children

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day Month Year	Town County State	Source No.
	1. Richard Gold ○	Birth	1578		○
	Spouse – Mary Golden ○	Death	1629	of Missenden Parva & Chesham, Buckinghamshire	○
		Married	16		○
	2. X Jeremy Gold ○	Birth	1581	(to Weymouth MA)	○
	Spouse – Priscilla Grover (3 June 1582 – 16) (dau wm. + Margaret) ○	Death	16	Newport Rhode Island	○
		Married	27 Nov 1604	of Ashton Abbotts, Bucks.	○
	3. John Gold ○	Birth	1585		○
*	Spouse – Judith ( )(– 1630) (she m② Simon Gold – his cousin ○	Death	1633	Kings Langley, Herts.	○
		Married	16		○
	4. Priscilla Gold ○	Birth	1587		○
	Spouse – John Putnam (1579/80 – 1662) ○	Death	16	Salem Massachusetts	○
		Married	27 Nov 1604	of Ashton-Clinton, Bucks.	○
+	5. Zaccheus Gold ○	Birth	1589		○
	Spouse – Phebe Deacon (1597 – 1663) ○	Death	7 May 1688	Topsfield Massachusetts	○
		Married	1615	Great Missenden	○
	6. Sara Gold ○	Birth	15		○
	Spouse – Nicholas Ware ○	Death	16	of Chesham	○
		Married	by 1612		○
	7. ○	Birth			○
	Spouse – ○	Death			○
		Married			○
	8. ○	Birth			○
	Spouse – ○	Death			○
		Married			○

* Their son, Nathan Gold, emigrated to Fairfield, Connecticut
" " Zaccheus Gold also emigrated – he was probably the Lynn, MA man.

X Jeremy (Jeremiah) Gold above went to Weymouth MA, and settled in Newport Rhode Island. After Priscilla died he buried her and returned to England where he died, but his son Daniel Gold and daughter Mary (Gould) Jeffery stayed and left many descendants here.

Source: New England Register 119:174-6

☐ Additional children listed on the reverse side.

○ In the circles, identify by number your sources of information — then list each on the reverse side.

Family Record

Family No. ______

Surname ______

Father — Thomas DEACON

Event	Day	Month	Year		Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth			15	○				His New England great grandson wrote in	○
Death	after 8	Dec	1642 will	○	{Hemel Hempstead	Hertford	England	his account book, "Grandfather Deacon	○
Buried				○	{ " " in the hamlet of Corner Hall			lived in Hertfordshire in Hempstead Town	○
Married	15	June	1596	○	" "			in Corner Hall."	○

Occupation Tanner Military Church ○

Places Lived (Back then "tanner" had a broad meaning — such as making (or having employees make) leather goods and ○

Other Wives probably retailing them — this man could afford to send his son to the university at Oxford studying to become a physician. Member of the lesser gentry.) ○

See "Ancestors of Dudley Wildes" p 107 for relatives.
Parentage not determined.

His Father's Name Deacon ○

His Mother's Maiden Name ○

Mother — Martha FIELD

Event	Day	Month	Year		Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth			15	○					○
Death	before 26	Oct	1663 (will proved)	○	Hemel Hempstead,	Hertfordshire,	England		○
Buried				○					○

Occupation Military Church ○

Places Lived ○

Other Husbands ○

Her Father's Name Field ○

Her Mother's Maiden Name ○

Children These are baptismal dates, Hemel Hempstead Parish Church

Sex	Full Given Name		Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
+	1. Phebe Deacon	○	Birth	3	April	1597				○
			Death							○
	Spouse - Zaccheus Gould	○	Married							○
	2. Anne Deacon	○	Birth	22	June	1600				○
			Death							○
	Spouse -	○	Married							○
	3. Thomas Deacon	○	Birth	14	Feb	1601/2				○
			Death							○
	Spouse -	○	Married							○
	4. Elisha Deacon	○	Birth	9	Jan	1602/3				○
			Death				living 1642			○
	Spouse -	○	Married							○
	5. Sara Deacon	○	Birth	25	Dec	1604				○
			Death							○
	Spouse -	○	Married							○
	6. Thomas Deacon	○	Birth	25	Dec	1609	(Batchelor of Arts, & student physician.			○
			Death	28	Sep	163②	He died — a tall man with extraordinarily spare body — of consumption. Buried at			○
	Spouse -	○	Married				Hemel Hempstead.) Matriculated Trinity Coll. Oxford 1627, BA Dec 1630)			○
	7. Martha Deacon	○	Birth	22	Aug	1613				○
			Death							○
	Spouse -	○	Married							○
	8.	○	Birth							○
			Death							○
	Spouse -	○	Married							○
	9.	○	Birth							○
			Death							○
	Spouse -	○	Married							○
	10.	○	Birth							○
			Death							○
	Spouse -	○	Married							○

In the circles, identify by number your sources of information — then list each on the reverse side. ○

☐ Additional children listed on the reverse side.

Early Goolds in Hertfordshire

PEDIGREE CHART

Norma Zaniewski
8924 W. Plainfield Ave.
Greenfield, WI 53228-2230

Date

Person No. 1 on this chart is the same person as No.____on chart No.____.

Chart No. ______

b. Date of Birth
p.b. Place of Birth
m. Date of Marriage
d. Date of Death
p.d. Place of Death

1 Richard Gold
b. ca 1555
p.b. Boringdon, Hertfordshire, England
m.
p.m.
d. will proved 1 July 1597
p.d.

2 Richard Gold (Father of No. 1)
b. ca 1525
p.b. Stoke Manderville, Buckinghamshire
m. 15
p.m.
d. ca 1559
p.d. Boringdon

3 Joan ( ) widow Weedon (Mother of No. 1)
b. 15 (had sons Henry + Richard)
p.b.
d. ca Feb 1560
p.d. Herts. or Bucks. England

4 Thomas Gold (Father of No. 2)
b. ca 1500
p.b. Boringdon, Herts., Eng.
m.
p.m. Hemel Hempstead Parish
d. fall 1547
p.d. Boringdon

5 Alice (Mother of No. 2)
Had Thos, John the Elder, Richard, Joan, Agnes, Elizabeth, Bridget, + John the Younger
b.
p.b.
d. 15
p.d. Boringdon

6 Joan ( ) widow (Father of No. 3)
b.
p.b.
m.
p.m.
d.
p.d.

7 (Mother of No. 3)
b.
p.b.
d.
p.d.

8 Richard Gold (Father of No. 4)
b. ca 1470
p.b.
m. of Hertfordshire
p.m.
d. ca Sep 1531
p.d.

9 Joan (Mother of No. 4)
had Thomas (eldest) + John
b. 147–
p.b.
d.
p.d.

10 (Father of No. 5)
b.
p.b.
m.
p.m.
d.
p.d.

11 (Mother of No. 5)
b.
p.b.
d.
p.d.

12 (Father of No. 6)
b.
p.b.
m.
p.m.
d.
p.d.

13 (Mother of No. 6)
b.
p.b.
d.
p.d.

14 (Father of No. 7)
b.
p.b.
m.
p.m.
d.
p.d.

15 (Mother of No. 7)
b.
p.b.
d.
p.d.

16 Thomas Gold (had bros. John + Wm.)
b. ca 1440 (Father of No. 8, Cont. on chart No.____)
m. of Hertfordshire
d. ca 1520

17 Joan ( )
They had Thomas, Richard, John, Alice, William, Henry and Joan
b. (Mother of No. 8, Cont. on chart No.____)
d.

18
b. (Father of No. 9 Cont. on chart No.____)
m.
d.

19
b. (Mother of No. 9 Cont. on chart No.____)
d.

20
b. (Father of No. 10, Cont. on chart No.____)
m.
d.

21
b. (Mother of No. 10, Cont. on chart No.____)
d.

22
b. (Father of No. 11, Cont. on chart No.____)
m.
d.

23
b. (Mother of No. 11, Cont. on chart No.____)
d.

24
b. (Father of No. 12, Cont. on chart No.____)
m.
d.

25
b. (Mother of No. 12, Cont. on chart No.____)
d.

26
b. (Father of No. 13, Cont. on chart No.____)
m.
d.

27
b. (Mother of No. 13, Cont. on chart No.____)
d.

28
b. (Father of No. 14, Cont. on chart No.____)
m.
d.

29
b. (Mother of No. 14, Cont. on chart No.____)
d.

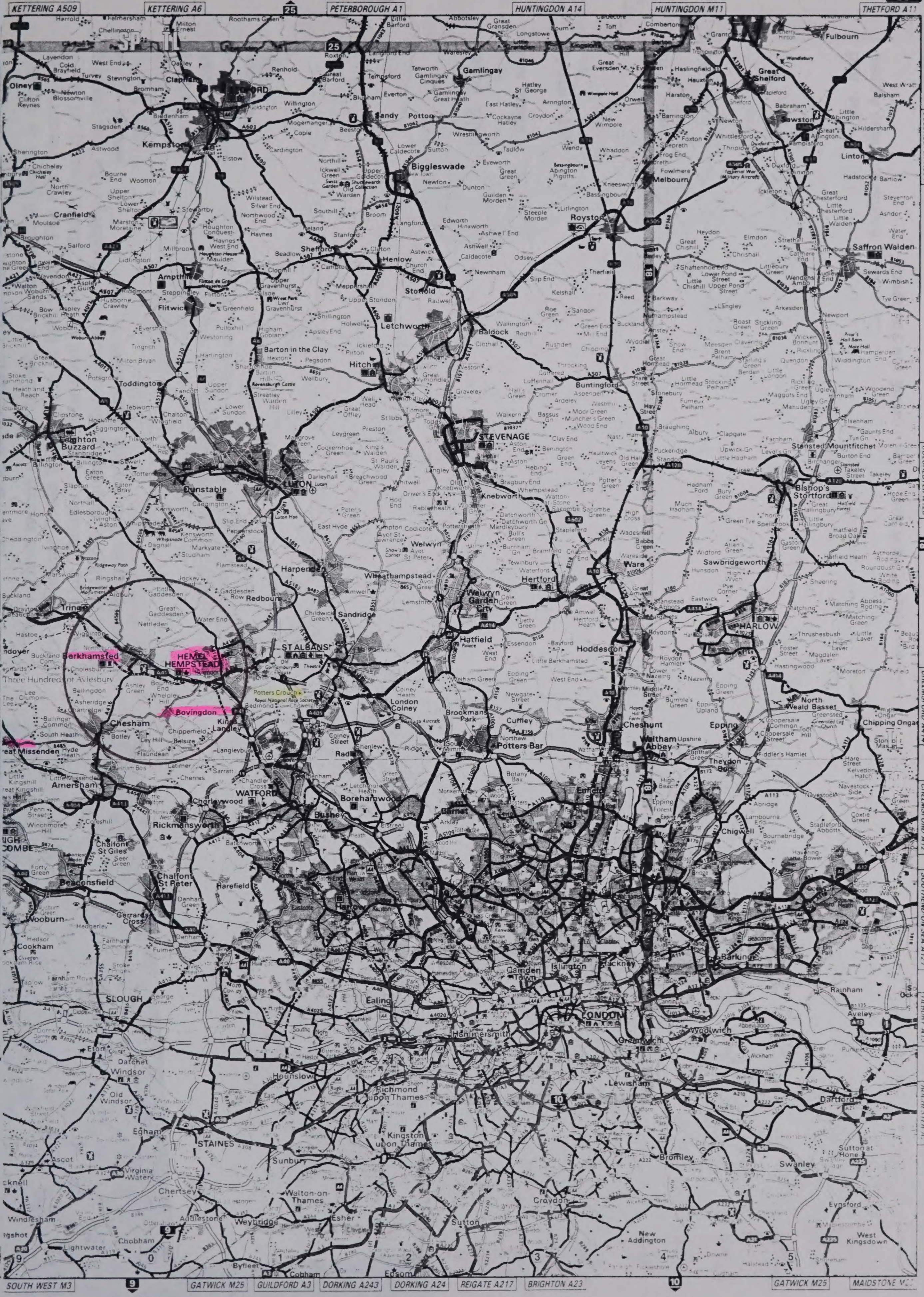
30
b. (Father of No. 15, Cont. on chart No.____)
m.
d.

31
b. (Mother of No. 15, Cont. on chart No.____)
d.

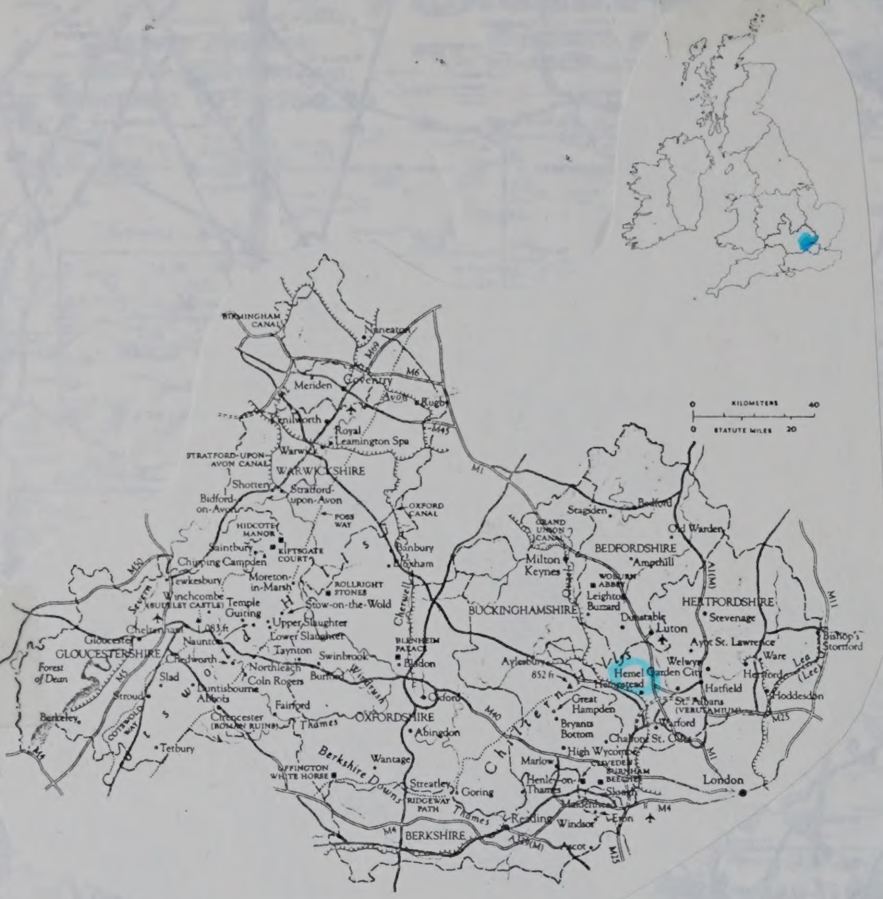
? Elizabeth (d 1597) (step mo. of ch?)
(Spouse of No. 1)
b. 15
p.b.
d.
p.d. Boringdon

Fraternal

Maternal



Modern Highway Map of England - Featuring communities where ancestors of Zaccheus and Phebe (Deacon) Could lived between 1440 and 1600 AD


BIRMINGHAM CANAL
Nuneaton
M69
M6
Meriden
Coventry
Avon
Rugby
Kenilworth
Royal Leamington Spa
M45
M1
Warwick
STRATFORD-UPON-AVON CANAL
WARWICKSHIRE
Shottery
Stratford-upon-Avon
Bidford-on-Avon
OXFORD CANAL
FOSS WAY
HIDCOTE MANOR
KIFTSGATE COURT
Saintbury
Chipping Campden
Banbury
Bloxham
M50
Tewkesbury
Moreton-in-Marsh
ROLLRIGHT STONES
Severn
Winchcombe
(SUDELEY CASTLE)
Temple Guiting
Stow-on-the-Wold
Cherwell
Cheltenham
1,083 ft
Upper Slaughter
Lower Slaughter
Gloucester
GLOUCESTERSHIRE
Naunton
Taynton
Swinbrook
BLENHEIM PALACE
Bladon
Forest of Dean
Chedworth
Northleach
Burford
Windrush
Slad
Coln Rogers
M5
Duntisbourne Abbots
Stroud
Oxford
Fairford
Cotswold Hills
Berkeley
COTSWOLD WAY
Cirencester
(ROMAN RUINS)
Thames
OXFORDSHIRE
Abingdon
Tetbury
M4
Wantage
Berkshire Downs
UFFINGTON WHITE HORSE
Streatley
Goring
RIDGEWAY PATH
Thames
BERKSHIRE
Reading
A329(M)
Ascot
KILOMETERS
0
40
STATUTE MILES
0
20
Bedford
Stagsden
GRAND UNION CANAL
Old Warden
BEDFORDSHIRE
Milton Keynes
Ampthill
Ouzel
WOBURN ABBEY
A1(M)
Leighton Buzzard
HERTFORDSHIRE
BUCKINGHAMSHIRE
Dunstable
Stevenage
M11
Luton
Ayot St. Lawrence
Bishop's Stortford
Vale
Welwyn Garden City
Ware
Lea (Lee)
Aylesbury
852 ft
Hemel Hempstead
Hertford
Hatfield
Hoddesdon
Great Hampden
St. Albans
(VERULAMIUM)
M25
M40
Chiltern
Bryants Bottom
Watford
Chalfont St. Giles
High Wycombe
M1
Marlow
CLIVEDEN
BURNHAM BEECHES
London
Henley-on-Thames
Slough
Maidenhead
M4
Windsor
Eton
M25

Norman People says:

Gold or Gould. Alexander &
John Golde (Goald) Normandy 1185.
Elies, Gilbert, Isolde &c. Golde,
England 1272.

Gould (see Gold) Hence the Lords
Tredegar.

OR, a chevron chevron AZ between
3 roses Vert.

blood draw mon
Lindsy Tues & Thurs.

	am	pm
Friday	Lindsey	me
Sat.	Sharon?	me or stan
Sun	me around 12:00	

GOLD GENERATIONS

IN

ENGLAND AND AMERICA

PLEASANT DANIEL GOLD

This mentions but does not follow our Zaccheus Gould, but his brother Jeremy instead, who settled in Rhode Island.

If he was anything like his brother, that must have been a wise choice. Zaccheas, you must have noticed, was many times before the Court for skipping Puritan church services, or napping during them.

Hertford or Central England Branch

The earliest record of this branch is found in 1235 but it is only the entry of Thomas Goold living there in that year. The next record found is concerning Thomas Golde, who lived in the adjoining County of Buckingham in 1375. Adjoining Buckingham is Berkshire. In the registry of Blewsburg in that county from 1583 to 1813, are found records of the descendants of Robert Gould (Gold). In the Register of Bisham, also in Berkshire from 1560 to 1812 are found the descendants of John Gold. To the North, with Oxford intervening, is Warwick County, where, among the marriages and burials of Holy Trinity Church of the Parish of Stratford on Avon from 1561 to 1813, are found the descendants of another Robert Gold (Gould). In all of these records the given or baptismal names, John, Thomas, Robert, Joseph, Elizabeth, Mary and Sarah prevail, the same as the South England Branch.

All of these are connections of the Central England or Hertford branch but the first of the direct traceable line was Thomas Goold (Gold) who lived at Bovingdon in Hertfordshire about 1490. He had two brothers, John and William.

FIRST GENERATION

Thomas Goold (Gold) by his wife Joan, had Thomas, Richard, John, Alice, William, Henry and Joan.

John Golde, brother of Thomas of Bovingdon had Henry, William and Joan (Wife's name not found).

William Goolde, brother of Thomas, had William and John (wife's name not found).

SECOND GENERATION

Of *Thomas*, eldest son of Thomas and Joan, no record is found. Evidently died without issue.

Richard, second son, lived at Stoke Manderville near Bovingdon and by his wife Joan, had two sons, Thomas and John.

No record of other children found.

THIRD GENERATION

Thomas, first born of Richard and Joan of Stokes Manderville, had by his wife, Alice, Thomas, John (called the elder), Richard, Joan, Agnes, Elizabeth, Bridget and John (called the younger).

FOURTH GENERATION

No record of descendants of children found except *Richard*, who married a widow, Jane Weeden, and had two sons, Henry and Richard.

FIFTH GENERATION

No record of Henry found.

Richard died at Chesham, in Buckinghamshire in 1604, leaving four sons, Richard, Jeremy, John and Zaccheus.

SIXTH GENERATION

No record is found of Richard, the eldest son of Richard of Chesham, but *Jeremy* and *Zachary* emigrated to New England about 1638. Jeremy or *Jeremiah*, married Priscilla Groover and they had Mary, Daniel, Thomas and John, all of whom went to Newport, Rhode Island and Simon who remained in England and Henry who died there at an early age. Jeremy returned to England and died there. Zaccheus Gould (Gold) with his wife Phoebe Deacon of Buckingham, emigrated to Waymouth, Massachusetts in 1639. They had one son, John, and four daughters.

ours → not followed

John Gold, third son of Richard of Chesham, lived in Hertfordshire and by his wife, Judith, had ten children, John, Joseph, Sarah, Hannah, Mary, Zaccheus, Nathan, Abel, Lydia and Elizabeth.

[illegible]

SEVENTH GENERATION

Daniel Gold (the first found with the given name Daniel) m Wait Coggershall in 1651 and had one son Daniel and four daughters.

These lived in New England but space is not allowed to continue the genealogy of the New England branches of the Gold and Gould family which has been well covered. There are many books in the Library of Congress to which references may be had. However, there is one mention of this generation to which special attention may be called. This is *Nathan* Gold, seventh child of John and Judith Gold of Hertfordshire.

Nathan Gold emigrated from Edmundsburg, England, to Connecticut in 1643, settling in Milford in 1647. He founded Fairfield, Connecticut in 1650. He was one of the petitioners named in the charter of the colony. He organized against the Dutch in 1662, was a Major of Dragoons in 1675, a Representative from Connecticut in the first Colonial Congress held in New York in 1690 and a member of the Council of Connecticut from 1657 to 1694 when he died. His wife was Martha, widow of Edmund Harvey.

Nathan Gold's son, *Nathan Gold*, Jr., of Fairfield was Lieut. Governor of Connecticut from 1708 to 1723. Among his descendants are included many prominent in the history of Connecticut, Massachusetts and New York state. One of these was Thomas Gold of Pittsfield, Massachusetts whose granddaughter is said to have married Henry W. Longfellow, the Poet. The "Clock on the Stairs" is said to have been written in the old Gold home at Pittsfield. Jay Gould, the financier, is said to have been descended from the same branch.

Ackley-Bosworth Genealogy

English Background for Zaccheus Gould

NATHAN GOLD

FAIRFIELD, CONNECTICUT

ORIGIN[a]

If the identification of Nathan Gold of Fairfield is correct, his line of descent is as follows:

I. **Thomas Gold**, of Bovingdon, co. Hertford, England, born about 1440, died 1520.

II. **Richard Gold**, of Bovingdon, born about 1470, will dated 25 Apr. 1531, proved 11 Oct. 1531; wife **Joan**, will dated 2 Jan. 1536/7, proved 7 Feb. 1536/7.

III. **Thomas Gold**, of Bovingdon, born about 1500, will 28 June 1546, proved 23 Nov. 1547; wife **Alice**.

IV. **Richard Gold**, of Stoke Mandeville, co. Buckingham, buried at Bovingdon, born about 1525, will 4 Dec. 1558, proved 10 Oct. 1559; married **Joan** (———) **Weedon**, whose will dated 26 June 1559, was proved 29 Mar. 1560.

father → V. **Richard Gold**, of Bovingdon, born about 1555, died about 1595; married and had children: per NEHGR 119:175 widow was Elizabeth ___ (15-- -1597+)

1. Richard, b. [1578?], d. 1629; of Missenden Parva and Chesham, co. Buckingham.
2. Jeremy, b. 1581; of Aston Abbotts, co. Buckingham; m. 27 Nov. 1604, **Priscilla Grover**; settled in Newport, R. I.

also dau. Sarah, m. Nathan Ware

+ 3. John, b. [1585]; d. 1633.
4. Priscilla, b. [1587]; m. **John Putnam** of Aston Clinton, co. Buckingham; settled in Salem, Mass.
5. Zaccheus, b. [1589], of Missenden Parva, co. Buckingham; m. **Phebe Deacon**; settled in Lynn, Mass.

uncle of our ancestor → VI. **John Gold**, born [1585], died at King's Langley, co. Hertford, 1633; his will, dated 30 June 1633, proved 18 July 1633, named his wife **Judith**, eldest son John (under 24), and the rest of his children, Joseph, Sarah, Hannah, Mary, Sacheus [Zaccheus], Nathan, Abell, Lidia and Elizabeth Gould (under 21) [Commissary of London, Essex and Herts]. The son Zaccheus died before 1650 "beyond the seas," and administration was granted on his estate, 12 Sept. 1650, to his sister Elizabeth Gould [Prerogative Court of Canterbury, Administration Act Book 1650]. The widow Judith married second, by license dated 27 July 1639, Simon Gold of Bovingdon, a second cousin of John Gold, she being called of King's Langley. She was buried at Watford, co. Hertford, 15 May 1650, again a widow. Her will, dated 6 May 1650, proved 3 Sept. 1650, gave £400 to her son Abel; £300 to her daughter Lydia; £300 to her daughter Elizabeth; £40 to her danghter Hannah and Hannah's two daughters; mentions that her son-in-law George Young owed her £100; this is to be divided between the children of her son Nathan "in New England" and the children of her daughter Sarah, also mentioned as in New England. She also spoke of money "that I have lent to Parliament," and this was to go to her children, Abel, Mary, Hannah, Lydia and Elizabeth; she gave £5 to the minister of Watford and £5 to the poor of Watford. [Prerogative Court of Canterbury, Pembroke 145.]

I. NATHAN GOLD

Nathan Gold (the name was pronounced Goold and sometimes spelled Gould), born perhaps around 1625, died 4 Mar. 1693/4; married first, after 1648 and by 1655, **Martha**, widow of Edmund **Harvey**, who died probably in 1657 or 1658; married second, probably late in 1659, **Sarah**[2] (**Phippen**) **Yeo**, who died between 1692 and 1694, daughter of David and Sarah (———) Phippen, and widow of Thomas Yeo.

In view of his wealth and prominence, it is surprising that such problems arise in connection with the parentage of Major Nathan Gold and his own marriages. The line of descent suggested for him above is undoubtedly the ancestry of a Nathan Gold or Gould who was in New England in 1650 when his mother Judith made her will. Unfortunately, two men of the name were early in New England, and some writers have identified the son of Judith with Nathan Gould of Salisbury, Mass. The latter was a yeoman and not as wealthy as we should expect the son of Judith to be. Bearing on this question is an affidavit made 23 Sept. 1682 by Nathan Gould, aged about 68 years, that "in ye yeare 1652 in September he came into this Country and Town, and the saw mill at Salisbury was then built and going."[b] Judith's will in 1650 shows that her son Nathan was then in New England. The sworn affidavit of the Salisbury man that he came into this country in September 1652 would seem to exclude the possibility that he was Judith's son, and we therefore give the above line as probably belonging to Nathan of Fairfield.

disagrees with Pope's Pioneers but that doesn't know CT

Edmund Harvey joined the church at Milford, Conn., 13 Sept. 1640, and the minister later added to his name, "died at Fairfield 22 May 1648." His wife Martha joined the Milford church, 20 June 1641. Their son Josiah was baptized at Milford, 27 Dec. 1640. The baptism of the daughter Hannah is not found at Milford, and as she was born about 1646, the Harveys had doubtless moved to Fairfield by then. In fact, Edmund Harvey served as Deputy for Fairfield in 1647. The inventory of his estate was taken 21 June 1648. Appended is the statement that he left a widow; a daughter in England aged 22; two daughters in New England aged 18 and 14; a son of 7 and a daughter

Gould

85

of 2. It is probable that Martha was the mother of only the last two, and that the others were by a former wife. Then there is an item dated 18 June 1655 which states that Nathan Gold, having married the widow of Edmund Harvey, agreed to assume the debts and pay the legacies of Josiah and Hannah.[c]

Such commitments were usually made soon after a widow remarried, so we have no reason to suppose that Nathan Gold married Martha much if any before 1655. In 1657 the younger John Winthrop in his Medical Journal, against a marginal note "Gold Fairfeild," wrote "Gold his Wife puto [I think] Hypocondriaca," and he dosed her with honey, fennel seed, etc.[d] her ailment may have been more serious than Winthrop supposed. At any rate, she did not long survive. There is nothing to show that she had children or that she was pregnant when Winthrop treated her.

All the earlier writers supposed that Martha was mother of the Gold children. However, there is evidence that in May 1660 he was already married to the "Widow Ew" [Yeo], who was born Sarah Phippen. As she was still Sarah Yeo when her mother made her will in August 1659, the marriage must have occurred shortly after that date.[e]

A further problem is which wife was mother of Deborah Gold. The other four children must have been by Sarah, as we know from their stated ages at death or infer from the late marriage dates of the two younger daughters. There are several reasons for concluding that Deborah was also by the second wife. A cogent reason can be added to those already set forth in print elsewhere.[e] The daughters of Nathan Gold were named in his will in their order of birth, unless Deborah was named out of turn. We conclude from this circumstance that she was the second daughter, not the eldest, as she has been placed in earlier accounts.

Nathan Gold was one of the two or three most prominent citizens of Fairfield after the departure of Roger Ludlow. He was called Ensign as early as 1656, was made Lieutenant of the Fairfield Train Band, May 1657, Chief Military Officer of Fairfield County, June 1672, and Major of Fairfield County, Aug. 1673, being a member of the Connecticut War Council in 1673 and also in 1676, during King Philip's War. He was made Assistant for Fairfield, May 1656 and May 1657, and was an Assistant of Connecticut Colony, 1657, and 1659 to 1687 inclusive, and 1689 to his death in 1694. In 1662 he was named a Patentee of the Royal Charter, and in Oct. 1667 was granted 300 acres for his public service, and in May 1687, 800 acres in what is now the west part of Danbury. In 1687-8, during the Andros regime when the Charter was suspended, he was a Judge of Pleas for Fairfield County. In 1683 and 1687 he was a Commissioner on the New York Boundary.[f]

His original will is not found in the files. The record copy, made by his son as Clerk of the Court, contains errors and inserted corrections. After a strongly religious preamble, he gave to "my well beloued and only son Nathan Gold," his homelot, house, other lands, and "all my husbandry and Carpen^{tr} Tooles." He gave equally "Unto my four daughters Namely the wife of John Thompson Debora, the wife of Georg Clerke Abegaile the wife of Jonathan Sellicke and my daughter Martha Sellick" all the rest of his estate, real or movable. He made his son Nathan sole executor. The will, dated 1 Mar. 1693/4, was witnessed by John Bur and Eliphelet Hill and acknowledged by the witnesses 4 Mar. 1693/4 before "Nathan Gold Clerk." Under this the son wrote: "The Honrd: Major Nathan Gold decs^{d}: on y^{e} 4th day of March 1693/4." It seems likely that in the clause relating to the daughters the name "Sarah" was accidentally omitted after "Namely" and before "the wife of John Thompson," either in the record copy or in preparing the original will.[g]

Children of Nathan and Sarah (Phippen) (Yeo) Gold, born at Fairfield:[h]

i. SARAH^{2}, b. abt. 1660; d. at Fairfield, 4 June 1747 in her 87th yr. (g.s.); m. 25 Apr. 1684, (Dea.) JOHN THOMPSON, b. abt. 1651, d. at Fairfield, 1 Mar. 1734 ae. 83 (g.s.).

+ ii. DEBORAH, b. abt. 1661; d. at Milford, Conn., 2 June 1697; m. abt. 1677, (Ens.) GEORGE CLARK, bapt. at Milford, 30 Apr. 1648, d. there 19 July 1734 in his 87th yr. (g.s.).

iii. NATHAN, b. abt. 1663; d. at Fairfield, 3 Oct. 1723 ae. 60 (g.s.).; m. (1) HANNAH TALCOTT, b. at Hartford, 8 Dec. 1663, d. 28 Mar. 1696; m. (2) SARAH ———, who d. 17 Oct. 1711. He was Assistant of Connecticut Colony, 1695 to 1708, and Deputy-Governor, 1708 to 1723; Judge of Fairfield Probate Court, 1698 to 1723; Judge of Fairfield County Court, 1701 to 1708; and Judge of the Superior Court, 1711 to 1723, being Chief Judge from 1717.

iv. ABIGAIL, b. [say 1665]; d. at Stamford, Conn., 20 Dec. 1711; m. 5 Jan. 1685, (Capt.) JONATHAN SELLECK, b. at Stamford, 11 July 1664, d. there 11 June 1710.

v. MARTHA, b. [say 1667]; d. at Stamford, Conn., 1 Dec. 1712; m. (1) JOHN SELLECK; m. (2) 18 Apr. 1695, (Rev.) JOHN DAVENPORT, b. at Boston, Mass., 22 Feb. 1668/9, d. at Stamford, 5 Feb. 1730/1, a graduate of Harvard College 1687.

---

[a] The line here given is based on data supplied by Col. Charles E. Banks to Donald L. Jacobus about 1929. Much of the English data appeared in a genealogy of the Zaccheus Gould family, and we do not know to what extent the data of Col. Banks were based on this, or to what extent he had independently checked the material.

[b] Essex, Mass., Court Records, Files for 1682.

[c] Donald L. Jacobus, *Families of Old Fairfield*, 1:228, 261.

[d] Medical Journal, p. 16, courtesy of the Massachusetts Historical Society.

[e] *The American Genealogist*, 17:1-3.

[f] *Colonial Records of Conn.*, 1:281, 297, 299, 300, 334, 347, 364, 378, 384, 398, 425; 2:4, 13, 30, 57, 77, 82, 104, 126, 146, 169, 183, 191, 206, 219, 221, 248, 261, 274, 284, 300; 3:1, 25, 48, 75, 96, 114, 134, 139, 142, 168, 194, 201, 229, 231, 250, 392; 4:22, 42, 65, 91, 120.

[g] Fairfield Probate Records, 4:179.

[h] *The American Genealogist*, 17:15-17.

NEHGR Vol 119

PRISCILLA, WIFE OF JOHN PUTNAM

By Read H. Putnam, of Evanston, Wyo.
Communicated by the Committee on English and Foreign Research

For many years those interested in the distinguished and widely spread family of Putnam, descended from John Putnam, who came from Aston, Abbots co. Bucks., England, to Salem, Mass., in the fourth decade of the seventeenth century, have sought in vain for the maiden name of his wife Priscilla, the mother of his children. It has been suggested that she was a daughter of Thomas Deacon of Hemel Hempstead, a reasonable assumption since Zaccheus Gould, who is known to have married Phebe Deacon, the eldest daughter of Thomas Deacon of Hemel Hempstead, refers to the emigrant's son, John Putnam the younger, as "my Cousin"—a term which at this period usually implied a nephew—when he made him his attorney on 30 Sept. 1658.[1] The difficulty has been to determine in what way the term "Cousin" applied in this case.

Over the past several years Mr. A. Vere Woodman, F.S.A., noted antiquarian and descendant of the Putnams of Wing, co. Bucks., England, has made an exhaustive search in the Hemel Hempstead parish register which has failed to reveal the baptism of Priscilla Deacon.[2] In the composition of this paper the author has drawn heavily upon the report of Mr. Woodman and the writings of G. Andrews Moriarty, F.S.A., who is descended from all three of John Putnam's sons and without whose assistance this paper would be impossible.

Mr. Woodman informs me there is no record of the baptism of Priscilla among the children of a contemporary Thomas Deacon, no doubt a distant kinsman of some degree who was living in Ivinghoe toward the end of the sixteenth century.[3] After this intensive study of the Deacon family failed to reveal the solution to the problem Mr. Woodman then turned to the Gould family[4] and discovered that the name Priscilla, although not used by the Deacon family, was very much in evidence among the Goulds, a family long settled in Bovingdon midway between Hemel Hempstead and Chesham.

The will of John Gould of Bovington, dated and proved in 1602,[5] mentions among other children his daughters Rebecca[6] and Priscilla.[7] His eldest son, Nathan Gould of Tring [co. Herts.], whose will was dated and proved in 1611/12,[8] mentions his brother Jeremy's daughters Sara and Priscilla, both under eighteen years of age, and his sister Priscilla Grover's two children, John and Priscilla. He makes his cousin Jeremy Gould an overseer. This cousin was probably identical with Jeremy, son of Richard Gould of Bovingdon, deceased, who married in Chesham, 27 Nov. 1604, Priscilla, daughter of William and Margaret Grover of Codmore. Priscilla Grover was baptized in Chesham 3 June 1582. The baptism of a son Henry Gould, 12 July 1631, son of Jeremy and Priscilla Gould, is recorded in Aston Abbots, where Jeremy may have been dwelling for a time with, or near, John Putnam. These facts suggest that Richard Gould

of Bovingdon may have had a daughter or daughters in addition to the sons mentioned in the known works of this family. But since the early register of Bovingdon has disappeared and Richard Gould's will has not been found this was a matter of conjecture until the recent discovery of the following case concerning the administration of Richard Gould's estate in the records of the Archdeaconry of Huntingdon.[9]

> Court held in Baldock Parish church 25th May 1597, The Lords official against Elizabeth Goulde widow of Bovingdon, administratrix of the goods of Richard Goulde of the same deceased in a matter of the account.
>
> The citation is issued, on which day appeared Willson the apparitor and exhibited the aforesaid citation and took his oath that he cited the same Elizabeth on the 5th May 1597 to appear on this day to answer the said citation. Then, proclamation having been made for the said Elizabeth, Richard Easte Notary Public appeared and exibited [*sic*] his proxy in writing for the said Elizabeth and took his oath. At whose petition the Lord [Judge] decreed that Sara[10] and Priscilla Gould of Bovingdon, the natural and lawful daughters of the deceased in particular be cited to be at the next court and that notice be given to all others in general having, or pretending to have, a right, title, or interest in the goods of the same deceased To be in the parish church of Bovingdon to see the account of the said Elizabeth exibited and to object if they think fit. And the Lord appointed the said Easte to render an account of the administration of the aforesaid goods at the next court.

The matter was finally settled at the court held in the parish church of Berkhamstead St. Peter, 1 July 1597, when the account was presented. No one objected so a letter of acquittance called "a quietus" was issued under the seal of the Lord [Judge].

In view of the above discovery there can be no doubt that Priscilla, wife of John Putnam, was the daughter of Richard Gould of Bovingdon, and sister of Zaccheus. In this way her son John was a blood "cousin," that is nephew, of Zaccheus Gould through his mother rather than as a nephew of Zaccheus's wife as has been thought heretofore.

NOTES

[1] *Essex Quarterly Court files*, Essex Institute, 1912, vol. 6, p. 126. See also Benjamin Apthorp Gould, *The Family of Zaccheus Gould of Topsfield*, 1895, p. 34.

[2] Thomas Deacon married in Hemel Hempstead, 15 June 1596, Martha Field. Their daughter Phoebe, wife of Zaccheus Gould, was baptized there 3 April 1597.

[3] Thomas Deacon of Ivinghoe married there, 11 Feb. 1578/9, Elizabeth Young.

[4] The ancestry of Richard Gould has long been known. The late Benjamin Apthorp Gould published a summary of it, based on the research of Horatio Gates Somerby, in the Essex Institute, *Historical Collections*, vol. 11, p. 115-221, July - October 1871 (reprinted as a pamphlet, 1872). This formed the basis of his more extensive genealogy. *The Family of Zaccheus Gould of Topsfield*, 1895, which is still the standard history of the family. He printed in it abstracts of many of the Gould wills found in English repositories. In the light of Mr. Woodman's research, it is obvious that the record of Richard Gould's children (p. 18, under no. 49—Mr. Gould's book) should be amended to read: i. *Richard*, b. about 1578; m. 16 May 1625 Mary Golden. ii. *Jeremy*, b. about 1581; m. 25 Nov. 1604 Priscilla Grover. iii. *Sara*, b. about 1583. iv. *Priscilla*, b. about 1585; m. in 1611 John Putnam. v. *John*, b. about 1587; m. Judith ———. vi. *Zaccheus*, b. about 1589; m. Phoebe Deacon. In addition, Mr. Woodman states, in a letter addressed to Mr. Moriarty, dated 7 Oct. 1964, that he has found in the Bishop's transcript of the parish register of Great Missenden, the baptisms of two children of Zac-

cheus Gould: Priscilla, 7 Sept 1628 and John, 29 June 1635 (cf. Mr. Gould's book, p. 47).

5. Archdeaconry of Huntingdon Act Book, II, p. 62, 80.

6. Rebecca Gould married 2 April 1604 Simon Ware of Bovingdon (Bishop's Transcript).

7. Priscilla Gould married John Grover and their daughter Priscilla was baptized in Bovingdon in February 1609/10 (*ibid.*).

8. *Ibid.*, 5.

9. Archdeaconry of Huntingdon Act Book, II, p. 62—abstract by Mr. A. Vere Woodman.

10. Sara Gould may have married Nathan Ware of Chesham, where their first child Nathan was baptized 10 Oct. 1613.

PUTNAM

more about this same lady follows

JOHN PUTNAM - PRISCILLA GOULD — sister of Zacchous Gould
Capt. JOHN PUTNAM, Jr. - REBECCA PRINCE
PRISCILLA PUTNAM - JOSEPH BAILEY
SARAH BAILEY - ISRAEL JOSLYN
GIDEON JOSLYN - SARAH MERRILL
HEZEKIAH JOSLYN - CHLOE HALL
ELIZABETH JOSLYN - JOHN LANSING STEVENS
MINERVA A. STEVENS - BYRON DAVID BENSON
BESSIE^{9} BENSON - CHARLES FRANCIS^{9} EMERSON

FIRST GENERATION

No. 1

1. JOHN^{1} PUTNAM (NICHOLAS^{A}, JOHN^{B}, RICHARD^{C}) was probably born and was baptized 17 January 1579-80 at Wingrave, county Bucks, England. He died 30 December 1662 at Salem Village (later Danvers) MA. He was the son of NICHOLAS^{A} and MARGARET^{A} (GOODSPEED) PUTNAM of Wingrave and Stewkley and the grandson of JOHN^{B} and MARGERY (----) PUTNAM of Rowsham. JOHN^{1} married before 1605 in England, PRISCILLA^{1} GOULD, daughter of RICHARD^{A} and ELIZABETH (----) GOULD of Bovingdon, county Huntington. PRISCILLA^{1} was born probably in Bovingdon and died probably in

Salem Village.

Two Presidents of the United States--John Calvin Coolidge, Jr., the 30th, and Herbert Clark Hoover, the 31st, were descended from JOHN^1 and his wife PRISCILLA^1.

JOHN^1 and his new wife resided in Aston Abbotts. "He was called 'yeoman' though the statement is made by the Committee on Heraldry of the New England Historic Genealogical Society that *John Putnam* belonged to an armigerous family" (ref. 5). JOHN^1 and his family remained in Ashton Abbots until immigrating to Salem, MA, with four or probably six children. They arrived in Salem between 1634, the date the Putnam family historically believed to be valid, and 1640 (ref. 3). However, neither JOHN^1 nor his family appeared on the Salem Town Records until 1641 when JOHN^1 was, "'Graunted...one hundred acres of land at the head of Mr. Skeltons ffarme between it & Elias Stileman the elder his ffarme, if there be an hundred acres of it. And it is in exchange of one hundred acres w^{ch} was graunted to the said John Putnam formerly & if it fall out that there be not so much there then to be made up neere liuetennt Dauenports hill to be layd out by the towne. And tenne acres of meadow in the meadow called the pine meadow if it be not there formerly granted to others'" (ref. 11). Also on 21 March 1641, wife PRISCILLA^1 was admitted to the Salem Church. JOHN^1 was not admitted until 4 April 1647, when he was made a Freeman.

"The town of Salem in 1644, voted that a patrol of two men be appointed each Lord's day to walk forth during worship and take notice of such who did not attend service and who were idle, etc., and to present such cases to the magistrates; all of those appointed were men of standing in the community" (ref. 11). JOHN^1 was appointed with John Hathorne, "For the 9th day" (ref. 11) and ancestors ROBERT^1 and ROBERT^2 MOULTON on others.

JOHN^1 was a farmer and became very rich for his era, owning a great deal of real estate (which he may have bought in part with money brought over with him when he immigrated). He also could write--indicating he had received an education in his earlier years in England. He referred to himself as a "yeoman" (landowner) on deeds beginning in 1652 and as a "husbandman" (farmer) in 1655. In 1653, perhaps having suffered some illness or stroke that convinced him that he would die soon, he followed a custom popular with many and with the Putnam family, in particular. He gave away his remaining property, "Reserving enough for their own support however" (ref. 11). Having already given the family homestead at an earlier date to youngest son JOHN^2, in 1653 he gave half of the remainder of his property to second-oldest son Nathaniel^2, and, the next day, the other half to oldest-son Thomas^2. These lands consisted of his original 100 acres, plus 80 adjacent acres bought from Ralph Fogg in 1652, 40 acres from Thomas Lothrop and 30 acres from Ann Scarlet. JOHN^1'S last land purchase was registered in 1662.

JOHN^1'S actual home was located between Porter's Hill and Davenport's Hill. It was west of a grant of land owned in Danvers by Daniel Rea and was on a hill later known as "Oak Knoll". JOHN, Jr.^{2}, lived at Oak Knoll after JOHN^1'S death.

The death of JOHN^1 in 1662 was described in writing by grandson Edward^3 Putnam in 1733. "'He ate his supper, went to prayer with his family and died before he went to sleep'" (ref. 11).

The children of JOHN^1 and PRISCILLA^1 (GOULD) PUTNAM, all baptized and probably born in Aston Abbotts, county Bucks, England, were:

I 2. Elizabeth^2, bapt 20 Dec 1612; unm. in 1643 when admit. to Salem Church.

II 3. Thomas^2, bapt 7 Mar 1614-5; d. 5 May 1686 at Salem Village (later Danvers) MA; m. 1/wf 17 Oct 1643, prob. at Salem, Ann^2 Holyoke (Edward^1) who d. in 1665, m. 2/wf 14 Nov 1666 at Salem, Mary Veren, wid. of Nathaniel.

III 4. John^2, bapt 24 Jul 1617; d. and bur. 5 Nov 1620 at Aston Abbotts, co. Bucks, Eng.

IV 5. Nathaniel^2, bapt. 11 Oct 1619; d. 23 Jul 1700 at Salem Village, MA; m. by 1648, by 1652, prob. at Salem, Elizabeth^2 Hutchinson (Richard^1).

V 6. Sara^2, bapt. 7 Mar 1622-3.

VI 7. Phoebe^2, bapt. 28 Jul 1624.

VII 8. Capt. JOHN Jr.^{2}, bapt. 27 May 1627; d. 7 Apr 1710 at Salem Village, MA; m. 3 Sep 1652 at Salem, REBECCA^1 PRINCE (see PRINCE).

SECOND GENERATION

No. 8

8. Captain JOHN^2 PUTNAM (JOHN^1, NICHOLAS^A, JOHN^B, RICHARD^C) was probably born and was baptized 27 May 1627 at Aston Abbotts, county Bucks, England, and died 7 April 1710 at Salem Village (later Danvers), MA. He married 3 September 1652 at Salem REBECCA^1 PRINCE, daughter probably of JAMES^A and MARY (----) PRINCE (see PRINCE) of Norfolk, England, and the latter of Salem. REBECCA^1 was born in England and died probably in Salem sometime after the 1690's Witchcraft Trials in Salem. During this time, she and her husband testified to the innocence of some of those accused, most notably Rebecca Nurse.

As a young boy, Capt. JOHN^2 accompanied his family between 1634 and 1640 to Salem, Village, where he apparently grew up and spent the rest of his life. He served his new country well in a number of ways.

As evidence of his life-long interest in the Church, JOHN^2 was made a Freeman in May of 1665 and in 1668, and in 1670 he and his brothers signed a petition to obtain a minister at Salem Village (later Danvers). On 14 March 1681-2, he was one of seven Putnams to sign another petition to allow Salem Village to separate from Salem, and 10 November 1689, he was among a list of 17 families (eight of whom were Putnams) who were permitted to form a new Church in the Village. While he never held an official office, he was financially generous to the church and the minister, and his house was used occasionally for Church meetings.

Militarily, by 1672 JOHN^2 was a Corp., and in 1675-6 took part in the fighting against the Narragansetts in King Philip's War. On 7 October 1678 he "was commissioned lieutenant of a troop of horse at the Village" (ref. 5), and after 1687 he was called Capt. "As late as 1706 'Capt. John Putnam in company with Capt. Jonathan (his son) was empowered to settle town bounds'" (ref. 11). From 1679 on, he was often chosen to represent Salem at the general court to settle town boundry disputes and was a deputy to the General Court that year and in 1680, 1686, 1691 and 1692. He was elected a selectman in 1681.

As for JOHN^2'S business ventures, his father by 1643 apparently sent him--when he was between the ages of 15 and 21--to work and study at the farm of Gov. Endicott. This

Gould

particular farm was chosen for him "to learn the science of agriculture, as the farm was known throughout the colony as a model place, where the latest and most approved theories were in practice" (ref. 11). Apparently, JOHN^2 learned well, for from the time of his marriage in 1652 until his death, he was a most successful farmer and was steadily acquiring land with the profits derived from this and his other business ventures. On 26 February 1654-5 he was granted 30 acres by the selectmen and by 1658, he was already "styling himself 'Planter'" [a man who hired people to do the farming for him] (ref. 11). His residence later in life was on his father's farm which became known as "Oak Knoll". He also remained interested in education and in 1677 was "ordered and empowered" (ref. 11) to make sure children received schooling and Church training.

In addition to his farming interests, in 1674 JOHN^2, Gov. Simon Bradstreet and Major Daniel^2 Denison, son of ancestor WILLIAM^1 DENISON and a close friend of ancestor THOMAS^1 EMERSON, established a successful Iron Works at Rowley Village (later Boxford), MA. His business ventures were so profitable that he paid the large sum (for the time) of 8 pounds in taxes in 1687, and before he died, he had become one of the largest taxpayers in the Village. Well before his death, as per Putnam family tradition, he gave away his land to his sons, but always with the provision that it be well-managed. By 1690 he had given 100 acres to Jonathan^3, his oldest son, and to James^3, his second-oldest. In 1695 he gave 90 acres to John^3.

One unfortunate side of his personality was that he remained obstinate and opinionated. This trait was most noticeable in the time shortly before the witchcraft trials. "Family pride, the strong feeling of kinship, his stern education, quick temper and obstinate nature, all tended to influence his action which was excusable according to the ignorant and narrow superstitions of the times" (ref. 11). Before the trials, unjustly and with great vigor, he brought suit against the character of a man who had been a good friend and neighbor, the Rev. George Burroughs. JOHN^2 falsely claimed that Burroughs owed him 30 pounds. He also had a sometimes-violent dispute with a man from Topsfield over boundary lines. Although JOHN^2 later had the courage to admit he was wrong in the Burroughs affair, these arguments and lawsuits ended in the unfortunate accusation and condemnation of both of these innocent men by others during the witchcraft trials. However, JOHN^2 did not play any part in these trials, or apparently in any others, as a hostile witness. In fact, his only testimony, when he did give it on rare occasions, appeared to be in support of those accused. Forinstance, he did not believe all the statements of the children against Rebecca Nurse and testified with his wife to support Rebecca's "good character" (ref. 5).

On 7 April 1710 he was buried by his soldiers in the Putnam family Cemetery, later renamed the "Wadsworth Cemetery".

The children of Capt. JOHN^2 and REBECCA^1 (PRINCE) PUTNAM, all born at Salem Village (later Danvers), MA, were:

I 9. Rebecca^3, b. 28 May 1653; d. 21 Sep 1689 at Salem, MA, same yr. as 2/hs; m. 1/hs 22 Apr 1672, prob. at Salem, MA, John^2 Fuller (Thomas^1) who d. 26 Aug 1675, m. 2/hs 6 Dec 1677 at Salem, John Shepard.

II 10. Sarah^3, b. 4 Sep 1654; d. 2 Aug 1676, prob. at Salem, MA, the same yr. as her hs.; m. July 1672-3, prob. at Salem, John^2 Hutchinson (Richard^1).

III 11. PRISCILLA^3, b. 4 Mar 1657; d. 16 Nov 1704, prob. at Arundel, ME, and bur. in the Putnam Fam. cemetery (later Wadsworth Cemetery) at Salem, MA: m. as 1/wf by 1675, prob. at Salem, JOSEPH^2 BAILEY (see BAYLEY) who m. 2/wf aft. 1704, Sarah (Poor) Sawyer.

IV 12. Jonathan^3, b. 17 Mar 1659; d. 2 Mar 1739 at Salem, MA; m. 1/wf Elizabeth^2 Whipple (Thomas^1), who d. 8 Aug 1682, m. 2/wf aft. 1682, Lydia^2 Potter (Anthony^1).

V 13. James^3, b. 4 Sep 1661; d. 7 Apr 1727, prob. at Salem, MA; m. 1/wf by 1686, prob. at Salem, Sarah Brocklebank who d. 1717, prob. at Salem, m. 2/wf 6 Mar 1719-20, Mary (Read) Rea.

VI 14. Hannah^3, b. 2 Feb 1663; d. betw. 9 May 1730 and 4 Jan 1731; m. 17 May 1682, prob. at Salem, MA, Henry^2 Brown (Henry^1) of Salisbury, MA.

VII 15. Eleazer^3, b. 1665; d. 25 Jan 1732-3, prob. at Salem, MA; m. 1/wf by 1693, prob. at Salem, MA., Hannah^2 Boreman/Boardman (Daniel^1) who d. by 1711, m. 2/wf 14 Nov 1711, Elizabeth^2 Rolfe (Benjamin^1).

VIII 16. John^3, b. 14 Jul 1667; d. aft. will 7 Jan 1731-2, prob. at Salem, MA; m. by 1691-2?, by 1694, prob. at Salem, Hannah (----).

IX 17. Susanna^3, b. 4 Sep 1670; m. bef. 1692, 1695, 1699, prob. at Salem, MA, Edward^2 Bishop (Edward^1) of Danvers, MA.

X 18. Ruth^3, b. Aug 1673; d. young?; unm.?

REFERENCES

1) Bailey, H. R., op. cit., 155-7, 159-60, 163-4.
2) Burns, J. E., op. cit., 9-10.
3) Colket, M. B., 251.
4) Davis, W. G., op. cit, *Tilton*, 179-81.
5) Ferris, M. W., op. cit., *Dawes-Gates*, I:521-6.
6) Moriarty, G. A., "The English Ancestry of John Putnam of Salem Massachusetts", TAG, 15(1938):8-15.
7) Moriarty, G. A., "The English Ancestry of John Putnam of Salem, Mass.", TAG, 23:93-5.
8) Moriarty, G. A., "A Problem in Salem Genealogical History (The Prince Family)", TAG, 14:83-6.
9) Noyes, S., et. al., op. cit., 73.
10) Pierce, R. Andrew, personal correspondence, research and material on the Bailey, Prince and Putnam lines, 5 April 1992, 24 April 1992, LET and MAT, Swigart, E. K., Washington, CT.
11) Putnam, E., op. cit., 3-36.
12) Roberts, G. B., op. cit., 230.
13) Sanborn, M. L., op. cit., 52.
14) Savage, J., op. cit., III:495-6.
15) Torrey, C. A., op. cit., 32, 71, 105, 288, 407, 607-8.
16) Williams, A. C., op. cit., V, 341-9.

ROBERT RANSOM - ABIGAIL (----)
ROBERT RANSOM-ANN/ANNA WATERMAN
LYDIA RANSOM - SAMUEL BARROWS
SAMUEL BARROWS-DESIRE ROGERS
MARY RANSOM - NEHEMIAH BESSE
ROBERT BESSE - RUTH PRAY
JABEZ/JOHN BESSE-MARGERY NORRIS
THOMAS BARROWS - BETHIA BESSIE

Goald

Random Notes + clippings

Popes Pioneers - Gould - cont'd

County of Kent, Eng., granted land at Hingham, Mass., 1636, removed to Boston, Mass., 1646.

JEREMIAH, freeman, Newport, R. I., 1638.

JOHN, husbandman, b. Eng., 1610, came from Towcester, Northamptonshire, Eng., 1635, to Stoneham, Mass.

JOHN, resident of Charlestown, Mass., 1636.

JOHN was at Newport, R. I., 1655.

JOHN, married at Taunton, Mass., 1673.

NATHAN, son of Nathan, came from St. Edmundsbury in South Britain. He was at Milford, Conn., 1647, three years later removed to Fairfield, Conn.

NATHAN, a resident of Salisbury, Mass., 1660.

ROBERT, married at Hull, Mass., 1666.

THOMAS, b. Eng., 1607, came to Boston, Mass., 1639, where he was admitted freeman 1641.

THOMAS, married at Newport, R. I., 1655.

THOMAS, member of the Church of Charlestown, Mass., 1640, later removed to Boston, Mass.

THOMAS, married at Boston., Mass., 1656.

✓ ZACCHUS, b. Eng., 1589, son of Richard Golde, was of the sixth generation from Thomas Goold, who resided at Great Monerden, County of Bucks, Eng., Zaccheus came from Hants Green, near Potter's Row, County of Bucks in 1638, to N. E.; he located at Weymouth, Mass., removed to Lynn, Mass., and 1644 to Ipswich, Mass., being that part known as Topsfield. } probably 2 men (cousins)

Some Sources:

Perkins Genealogy; Ancestors of Dudley Wildes; Ackley-Bosworth Genealogy; New England Marriages Prior to 1700 by C.A. Torrey; James Savage's Genealogical Dictionary; NEHGR articles, esp 119:174-6.
Also many local histories of Essex Co MA towns and many accounts of the Salem Witch Trials.

"Founders of American Families" by Meredith Colket, says:
Gould, Gold, Goold - Zaccheus - Weymouth MA 1639, Lynn 1640, Ipswich 1644, Topsfield 1662 - d there 1668 - bro. of Jeremy, husbandman. (Family of Z.G. 1895; Anc Dudley Wildes 1959, NEG 119:175 n; Banks) 220 + 2290.
- Jeremiah (or Jeremy) Weymouth MA 1637, Newport 1641, living 1655. Ret. to England. Freeman, bro. of Zaccheus. (Same references + Goulds of RI - pamphlet Lib Cong + Austin RI, Banks)

A discussion of the derivation of the surnames Deacon and Gould.

The following is not meant to be taken seriously as proving ancestry from any of these people - only as food for thought. The book "The Norman People" published in London, anon. (1874) reprint Genealogical Publishing Co (1989) says

Re Deacon (p. 76-7) Names armorially identified are Dakeny, Deacon, Dakins (d'Akeny)
p. 219 -
Dakin - Dakeyne, or De Acquaigny - (derived from) Acquaigny near Louviers, Normandy.
(the name of man) Herveius de Acquaigny occurs 1058 (source: Morice, Hist. Bret. Preuves, i 430).
Roger de Akeny, 13th cent, held fiefs from the honour of Peverel of London (testa). This family was numerous and of great importance in England, as the records show.

Book - "Feudal Coats of Arms" by Joseph Foster (1902) London - Reprint by Senate (1995)
p. 1 - de Akeny v. Dakeny
p. 69 -
Coat of Arms {
Dakenye, Sir Baldwin of Cambridge - (Edward II Roll) John and William (Henry III Roll) bore, azure, a cross between four lyonceux rampant or (F.) Parliamentary, St George + Glover Rolls
Dakeney, Sir Thomas of Norfolk - (Edward II Roll) bore, argent; a cross between four lyonceux gules; Parliamentary Roll.

The inference is that these 4 men were either members of Parliament or subject to being called. A cross generally signifies that the bearer or his ancestor was a crusader. These two coats of arms are, though not of the same color, enough alike to show a common origin.

Re: Gold or Gould ("Norman People" pp 262-4)
Alexander and Golde (Gaude) of Normandy 1195; John + Odo Gaude, 1198 (MRS);
Elias, Gilbert, Isolde etc Golde - England c. 1272 (Rotulum Hundredorum)
Also Golds, Goldie probably same, from arms.
Gould. See Gold. Hence the Lords Tredegar.
Neither book described the Gold Arms.

Gould

Essex County Quarterly Courts

Ipswich May 1670 (pg 244 - 256)

Mr. Thomas Gilbert was presented for suspicion of being overtaken with drink. Court saw cause to counsel and admonish him and ordered him to pay the witnesses returned by the jury.*

---

*On 30 : 1 : 1670, William Averell,† late constable of Topsfield, addressed the court, he having been charged with base carriages openly in the congregation for doing no more than he apprehended was his duty: "About the 14th of the 9th mo last Mr. Gilbert being about to publish an order from the gen court for a day of thanksgiving as afterwards apeared: hee was pleased to say that one the 4th of the next month the last generall court at boston had agreed upon|| or given order for|| a day of thanksgiving wherupon one that was present Replyed Sir you mean the 4th day of the next week I being present saw there was a mistake in boath I acounted it my duty in conscience to my oth to endevor to prevent furder inconnevience at that time and place: made bold to say it is the 4th day of this week as I had ben informed to which m^{r} gillbert Replyed I blesse god I am not drunk: o base base unworthy cariages to catch at a minastars words let them that are more godly and judicious speke that are church members If I haue desarued Justly to be soe villifyed in the face of an asembly for this cause I desire freely to leaue it to the court to determin."

†Autograph.

Isaack Comings, sr., and John Goold testified to the same. Sworn in court.

Thomas Baker deposed that one day in the summer, on a sacrament day the people waited a long time in the afternoon for Mr. Gilbert to come and many went away. When he prayed deponent perceived that he was distempered in his head for he repeated many things many times over and lisped. Then he went to singing and read the psalm so that it could not be well understood, then he went to prayer again. When he had done he was going to sing again, but being desired to forbear used these expressions, "I bles god I find a great deall of comfort in it," and came out of the pulpit. He said to the people "I give you notis That I will preach amongst you no more." Sworn in court.

Isaacke Cummings, sr., deposed that Mr. Gilberte was not as composed as he used to be, and after praying said "lett us singe the 153 psalme," but both in singing and reading was very much out of order so that the people could not follow. When the psalm was about half done, deponent stood up and saw three or four laughing, and he said, "Sir, I intreete you to forbare and proscede no further for we are very much out of order, for in thus doeinge we shall but take the name of god in vaine." Mr. Gilberte stopped, said he found much comfort in singing and bade deponent hold his tongue and to sit down and they would sing without him. Deponent sat down and Mr. Gilberte prayed again and when he began to sing the second time, deponent stood up and said, "Sir, you went first to prayer and then you did singe and then you went to prayer againe and now would you goe to singe againe certeynly you nether knowe what you say nor what you doe." Then Mr. Gilbert was very angry and ran away without giving the blessing. Sworn in court.

Phebe Perkins, wife of Tho. Perkins, deposed that on sacrament day she was at dinner at Mr. Gilbert's and there was a cup with wine in it which was offered to Mr. Gilbert. He refused to take it at first, but afterward put the cup to his mouth, but she knew not whether he drank or not. Three more had the cup besides himself, and after he had dined he drank what was left in the cup. Immediately after dinner he sang a psalm, and in reading it she thought his voice was lower than it used to be. Sworn in court.

Sarah Gould deposed that being at Mr. Gilbert's house after sacrament at dinner time, she saw her brother Perkins bring the wine, empty it into the golden cup and ask Mr. Gilbert to drink. "M^{r} Gilbert did drinke to my Brother Perkins and bad him drinke to ould Goodwife Townes shee did put the cope to her mouth and set the cope doune and M^{r} Gilbert take et the seckond time at diner and dranke et up for hee torned up the cope and my bother Perkins tould mee the Golden Cope was about three quarter full I did see the cope offered to noe more then is aboue mencned and emedatly upon this I did see M^{r} Gilbert eyes groe very dim and hee did sinke doune in his chare Lenig bake and after he had sat a while hee toke his psalme books to sing and his wife told him hee had not returned thankes o said he I haue for goot: he did returne thankes and sing a psalme after the same maner as hee did in the pulpit Clepping his words very short so as I could not understand him as soone as dener was don my sister Perkins and I went into the tother rome and presantly wee hard him vomit A: said my sister Perkins I wonder my Husban would aske him to drinke for I thinke hee had noe need of et: for sd my Sister Perkins the forst time hee toke the Cope I saw him drinke a good draft and as he went to the meting hous hee had Like to fale down and when hee Came into the pulpit, he went to prayer and prayed so brokenly clepping of the King Engliss as wee ues to say soe as I could not understand him and after prayer hee went to sing a psalme and named the hundred and fiufty thurd psalme and after a uery broken maner did sing," etc. He said he would never preach more in Topsfeild and desired the people to provide for themselves. Sworn in court.

Johanna (her mark) Towne, aged about seventy-five years, deposed that in the forenoon of that day, Mr. Gilbert administered the "sacrement swetly unto us," and after sacrament at dinner was very temperate, she sitting next to him. If he were drunk, she believed it was with his distemper and not with drinking too much strong liquor, "as sum so uncharitabely surmise against him."

John Gould deposed concerning what he heard his sister Perkins say, etc. Sworn in court.

Four of our ancestors are mentioned above: Constable William Averill Jr, Deacon Thomas Perkins, and his wife, Phebe (Gould) Perkins. (John Gould was her brother.) Also the elderly and charitable Joanna Towne.

The court found against Rev. Gilbert + fined him for drunkenness, though modern doctors believe he had a "nervous disorder" treatable with modern medicine.

Constables in those days were not paid. The public spirited Averill earned his living as a successful carpenter + building contractor. We inherit his genes, also those of uncharitable gossip Phebe and those of sweet and wise grandmother Johanna. For better or worse, all these traits are part of us.

Records and Files of the Essex Co. Quarterly Courts.

Salem QC Mar 1641. Daniel Fairefield v Zaccheus Goold. Trespass

27 Dec 1642. Zacheus Goold, Thomas Putnam et James Habard v. Mr Adam Otley,
Jos. Armitage and Rich. Sadler. About a boat, "Zacheus Goold his mais tyne et

July 1645 Zacheus Goald vs William Parkers of Weymouth. Debt.

Zacheus Goald v. William Tayler of Glouster. Jno Newmarsh swore he had served the warrant. John Smocke? testified that "Goodman Goald went up with me." Isaac Parker said that four? of the nine cows were heifers. John Denison said that Goodman Hughs was willing to accept four of the heifers for cows.

Ipswich QC
24:2(Apr)1656 Zacheous Goald presented for absence from meeting on the Lord's day. Proved. (Zacheus Goold of Rowley presented Mar — 1656, for not frequenting the public ordinance upon the Sabbath day. Wit: Grand jurymen of Rowley.

Ipsw. QC
Sep 1658 Zacheous Goold to be summoned to appear at next court to answer complaint of abusive carriage in the meeting house.

Salem QC
June 1659

†Petition of the town of Topsfield, signed by Zaccheus Gould and Francis Peabody, in answer to a presentment of this court. They stated that they found the work heavy, and "are forced to seek out for some help," etc.§

Ipswich QC

Sep 1659 Zaccheus Goold v. William Nichols + Wm. Clarke. Trespa Withdrawn

" Sep 1658 Zacheous Goold. to be summoned to appear at the next court to answer complaint of abusive carriage in the meeting house

" Sep 1670

Ensign John Gould had his license to sell cider and liquors renewed until the March court, but not to suffer townsmen to drink liquors in his house.

Ens. John Gould was allowed costs in an action brought by Edw. Bridges and not prosecuted.

Genealogical Dictionary of New England Vol II by James Savage (ca 1880?)

GOULD, or **GOLD**, **ADAM**, Groton, by w. Rebecca had Dorcas, b. 8 Sept. 1683, rem. to Woburn, there by w. Hannah had Thomas, b. 1689; and his w. d. soon. **CHRISTOPHER**, Hampton 1660. * **DANIEL**, Newport, a freem. there 1655, rep. 1672, m. 18 Dec. 1651, Wait Coggeshall, prob. d. of the first John, had Mary, b. 2 Mar. 1653; Thomas, 20 Feb. 1655; Daniel, 24 Oct. 1656; John, 4 May 1659; Priscilla, 20 June 1661; Jeremy, 5 May 1664; James, 13 Oct. 1666; Jeremy, again, 2 Feb. 1669; Content, 28 Apr. 1671; Wait, 8 May 1676; and I find not the date of his d. **DANIEL**, Newport, s. of the preced. m. Mary, eldest d. of Walter Clark of the same, had a fam. but I kn. not details. **DANIEL**, Reading, one of the early sett. was prob. s. of Zaccheus of Lynn, had w. Eliz. wh. d. 3 Aug. 1691, says Lewis. He may have been f. of that John of R. wh. d. there 24 Jan. 1712, by gr.stone, as Mr. Eaton finds, aged a. 69 yrs. **EDWARD**, Hingham, a pailmaker, came in the Elizabeth from London 1635, aged 28, was of Hawkhurst, Co. Kent; liv. at Boston in 1657. **FRANCIS**, Chelmsford, had been of Braintree, by w. Rose had at B. Hannah, b. 18 July 1655; and John, 26 Apr. 1657, wh. prob. d. young; and at C. had John, again, 21 Aug. 1660. **HENRY**, Ipswich, by w. Sarah, m. 24 Sept. 1675, had Sarah; Eliz. b. 14 Oct. 1677; Jane, 1 Nov. 1679; and Joanna, 19 Nov. 1681. **JAMES**, Haverhill, took o. of fidel. 28 Nov. 1677. **JAMES**, Newport, perhaps br. of sec. Daniel, m. Catharine, d. of Walter Clarke. **JARVIS**, Hingham, cordwainer, came in the Elizabeth 1635, aged 30, serv. to Clement Bates, rem. to Boston, d. 27 May 1656, leav. John. **JEREMIAH**, R. I. 1638, is in the list of Newport freem. 1655. **JEREMY**, Weymouth 1639. **JOHN**, a husbandman from Towcester, Northamptonsh. came in the Defence 1635, aged 25, with w. Grace, 25; but no light is found as to his sett. **JOHN**, Charlestown, had w. Mary in 1636, wh. d. 28 Sept. 1642, and d. Mary, bapt. 29 Jan. 1637; Sarah, 15 Dec. 1637; Eliz. 17 Feb. 1640; Abigail, 26 Sept. 1642; by ano. w. Hannah, wh. d. 15 May 1647, had Hannah, 26 Oct. 1644; and John, 21 Jan. 1647, d. soon. By the same rec. he is favor. with ano. John, 5 Aug. 1648, prob. by ano. w. Joanna, both f. and s. liv. 1678. He may have been one of the early sett. at Reading. * **JOHN**, Newport 1655, rep. 1672; but I learn no more of him. * **JOHN**, Topsfield, only s. of Zaccheus, ✓ b. a. 1637, in Eng. freem. 1665, the greatest landholder in the neighb. m. 12 or 14 Oct. 1660, Sarah, perhaps d. of John Baker, wh. d. 20 Jan. 1709, had John, b. 1 Dec. 1662; Sarah, 18 Dec. 1664; Thomas, 14 Feb. 1667; Samuel, 9 Mar. 1670; Zaccheus, 26 Mar. 1672; Priscilla, 2 Nov. 1674; Joseph, 24 Aug. 1677; and Mary, 16 June 1681, and he d. perhaps 26 Jan. 1710. Sarah m. 29 Mar. 1682, Joseph Bixby; and Priscilla m. a Curtis; but where either resid. is uncert. was lieut. in com. of the mil. fined, impris. and charged with treason by the usurp. governm. of Joseph Dudley, after whose overthrow with that of Andros, he was rep. See Hutch. I. 365, and better and fuller acco. in 3 Mass. Hist. Coll. VII. 150–4. **JOHN**, Taunton, m. 24 Aug. 1673, Mary, d. of Robert Crossman, had Mary, b. 19 June foll.; Hannah, 9 Nov. 1677. **JOHN**, Stamford, m. a d. of George Slawson. **JOHN**, Topsfield, s. of the first John of the same, m. 10 Nov. 1684, Phebe French, had Phebe, b. 7 July 1685; John; Mary, 11 May, bapt. 3 Nov. 1689; Nathaniel, bapt. Oct. 1691; Sarah, b. 8 Sept. bapt. 14 Oct. 1694; Hannah, 19 June 1697; Daniel, 8 Nov. 1699; David, 25 Dec. 1701, bapt. 22 Feb. foll.; Solomon, 19 Mar. 1704; and Lydia, 3 May, bapt. perhaps 8 June 1707. His w. d. 25 Apr. 1718; and he had sec. w. Rose, and d. 5 Nov. 1724. His wid. d. 6 Feb. foll. * **JOSEPH**, Topsfield, youngest br. of the preced. m. 12 Jan. 1713, Priscilla, eldest ch. of Tobijah Perkins, had Priscilla, b. 6, bapt. 11 Apr. 1714; Joseph, wh. d. young; Amos, wh. d. bef. his f.; Ruth; Mary; Sarah; and Joseph; beside two or three ch. wh. d. young; was capt. rep. and d. Apr. 1753. His will of 21 Mar. preced. pro. 23 Apr. foll.

Gould

Chart A 9

names w. and five ch. ‡ NATHAN, Fairfield 1652, m. Martha, wid. of Edmund Harvey, an Assist. 1657, and every yr. but one foll. was nam. for same rank in the Royal Chart. of 1662; in 1670 was the richest inhab. He wrote his surname without *u*, but perhaps the universal pronuncia. caused the change. He d. 4 Mar. 1694, in his will of three days preced. names only s. Nathan, and ds. Sarah, w. of John Thompson; Deborah, w. of George Clark; Abigail, w. of Jonathan Selleck; and Martha, wid. of John Selleck; his w. hav. d. bef. His s. † NATHAN, of Fairfield, dep.-gov. in 1707, was made Ch. J. of the Sup. Ct. 1712, and d. early, prob. in Nov. 1723, as the inv. of his est. bears date of 14 of that mo. He had m. Hannah, d. of John Talcott the sec. of Hartford, had John, Nathan, Samuel, Onesimus, David, Joseph, Hezekiah, H. C. 1719, min. of Stratford, and a d. of unkn. name, wh. m. Rev. Thomas Hawley of Ridgefield, who all had shares in his est. The fam. has, in our day, been emin. for public serv. NATHAN, Salisbury 1660, by w. Eliz. had Mary, b. 20 June 1661; Eliz. 4 Apr. 1664; and Samuel, 3 Feb. 1668; was of Amesbury 1690, and freem. that yr. in his will of 12 Dec. 1692, names w. Eliz. and ch. Joseph, Eliz. Hannah, and Samuel. NATHANIEL, Milford 1646, may be only a mistake of Lambert, as other inquir. find not such person there. ROBERT, Hull, m. 1666, Judith, and had sec. w. Jane Smith, a wid. d. of Thomas Harris of Boston; was freem. 1680. SAMUEL, Topsfield, s. of the first John of the same, m. 20 Apr. 1694, Margaret Stone, whose f. is unkn. had Sarah, b. 25 Feb. 1698, wh. d. unm. 21 Feb. 1786; Samuel, bapt. 6 Apr. 1701; Moses; Jonathan, 4 Sept. 1709; Patience; Margaret; Zaccheus, a. 1716; and Hubbard; and d. 1724, his will of 26 Nov. in that yr. being pro. 21 Dec. foll. Perhaps he liv. late in life at Boxford. THOMAS, Boston, came in the Jonathan 1639, aged 32, may have been the freem. of 2 June 1641, but he was not of Boston ch. so that it is doubtful; but perhaps was first of Cambridge, and by w. Mary had Jacob, b. 16 Sept. 1643; d. 26 Oct. 1662. THOMAS, Newport 1655, m. Eliz. d. of William Balstone, may have been many yrs. of Wickford 1674. *THOMAS*, Charlestown, with w. Hannah, join. to the ch. 1640, had Hannah, bapt. 11 Apr. 1641, he a. 1665, bec. a Bapt. was long imprison. for his falling off, but ultimate. discharg. with reput. He had sec. w. Mary bef. all his troubles were over; but I kn. not if bef. or after he gather. the first Bapt. ch. of B. and C. in May 1665. He d. perhaps Feb. 1674, prob. at Boston, and in his will names w. Mary, s. Samuel, ds. Mary Skinner, Mehitable Goodwin, Mary Bunker, and her two ch. Abigail Shapley, s. Nathaniel Hayward, and d. Hannah Gold. The vols. of Backus, I. 414, Benedict, I. 385, Frothingham, and Budington may be profitab. consult. Ano.

THOMAS, of Charlestown in 1652, with w. Hannah joining the ch. that yr. may have been s. of John, unless I have been confus. by two ws. of one. THOMAS, Boston, m. 10 Sept. 1656, Frances Robinson, had prob. other ch. beside Ann, b. a. 1685, wh. m. 27 Feb. 1703, Nathaniel Green. THOMAS, Topsfield, s. of the first John of the same, m. perhaps Mercy, d. of the sec. William Sumner, had Thomas, b. 4, bapt. 14 Sept. 1701; Jacob, b. 16 Jan. 1703; Deborah, 17 Nov. 1704, d. in few mos.; Deborah, again, 23 Sept. 1707; Simon, 8 Mar. 1710; Mercy, 17, bapt. 27 Jan. 1712; Yates, 24 Mar. bapt. 4 Apr. 1714; Benjamin, 29 May, bapt. 3 June 1716; and Nathaniel, 9 Nov. 1718; and d. 9 June 1751, acc. rec. of ch. but 4 July 1752, by town rec. His wid. d. 8 May 1763. ZACCHEUS, Lynn 1640, had, says Lewis, s. Daniel, b. a. 1650, wh. went, I suppose, with other of his neighb. to Reading. ZACCHEUS, Weymouth 1639. ZACCHEUS, Ipswich 1644 (in that pt. wh. soon was incorp. as Topsfield), came from Hants Green, near Potter's Row, in Co. Bucks, a parish, seen on the map, a. 33 miles from London, near Gr. Missenden, left good est. to only s. John, and four ds. perhaps, both at Rowley and Topsfield. His d. Phebe m. Thomas Perkins; Martha m. John Newmarch; Mary m. a (prob. Abraham) Redington, and Priscilla m. John Wild, wh. strange as it may appear, was a witness against her br. ZACCHEUS, Topsfield, s. of the first John of the same, m. 21 Jan. 1702, Eliz. Curtis, but whose d. she was is unkn. had Eliz. b. 13 Feb. 1703; Mary, 11 Mar. 1705; Priscilla, 4 Aug. 1707; John, 29 Jan. 1710; Sarah, 28 Jan. 1712; Abigail, 12 Aug. bapt. 25 Sept. 1715; Zaccheus, 7 Nov. 1717; Eliezer, 29 May, bapt. 17 July 1720; and Susanna, 11 Feb. bapt. 28 Apr. 1723; and d. 1739, in his will of 16 Apr. of that yr. pro. 28 May foll. names all the nine ch. as alive. From this br. of the ancest. tree descends Benjamin A. wh. so many of the scholars of Boston honor as their instruct. in the classics. Six of this name had, in 1834, been gr. at Harv. fourteen at Yale, and three at other coll. of N. E.

NEHGR 16:212-5

We are told by Scott in the *Fortunes of Nigel* that in the time of James the 1st, King of England, it was the custom in London for men in trade to send out their clerks into the street, and cry out to the passers by, "*What d'ye lack? What d'ye lack?*" Should some of our merchant-princes, or millionaires put to our Society a similar question, our answer is ready:

1. We lack a Fire-proof room to secure our rare books and manuscripts.

2. We lack a Lecture room, where the readings at our monthly meetings could be heard and better appreciated by a larger audience.

3. We lack a room for the storage of duplicates and documents, whose worth will be better known at a future day.

In a word we need a Fire-proof building; it would cost probably $20,000. One tenth or one twentieth of this amount has been already offered by a member, if nine or nineteen will join him. Who will aid in this noble undertaking?

A good many of those listed in Topsfield Church were our ancestors & kin.

LIST OF MEMBERS OF THE OLD CHURCH, TOPSFIELD.

[Compiled by H. G. Dunnel.]

To the Editor of the *Register:*

Sir—In the summer of 1861, while pursuing my searches among the records of the town of Topsfield, Essex county, Mass., I had an opportunity of copying the list of members of the old church, and as I have been gratified myself by it, I thought it might be of like pleasure to some of your readers, whose ancestors once resided in this county or town, and have, therefore, sent a true copy to you, for publication.

The Church of Topsfield Parish.

Mr. Knight and Mr. Perkins preached here before the formation of the church.

The church was formed, and Mr. Thomas Gilbert ordained, Nov., 1663. He was dismissed 1671, and died at Charlestown, Oct. 28, 1673.

Jeremiah Hobart ordained Oct. 2, 1672; dismissed Sept. 21, 1680, and died at Haddam, Conn., Nov. 6, 1715. Mr. Perkins also died here, May 21, 1682.

Joseph Capen ordained June 11, 1684; died June 30, 1725.

Daniel Brush ordained Nov. 17, 1779; dismissed May 26, 1788.

Asahel Huntington ordained Nov. 12, 1789; died April 22, 1813.

Radney Gove Dennis ordained Oct. 4, 1820; dismissed May 6, 1829.

James F. McEwen installed May 5, 1830; dismissed May 5, 1841.

The book kept by Rev. Joseph Capen, from 1684, heads his list thus:

A List of members in full communion at Topsfield when I was ordained, or were admitted afterwards.

MALES.

Francis Pabody, d. d
John Reddington
Abraham Reddington Sen^{r}
Joseph Bixby Senr
John Gould Senr
Thomas Baker
Thomas Perkins Deacon
d d May 7, 1686
John Pabody
Thomas Dorman
Ephraim Borman
Samuel Howlet
Isaac Cumins
John French
Daniel Hovey
Isaak Estie
James How Senr
Samuel Purley
Nehemiah Abbot
John Cummins
Dec 7, dismissed to Church
at Dumstable
Robert Stiles d d
Thomas Perkins Junr

Since my ordination,
were admitted of
Daniel Reddington
Tobijah Perkins
Jacob Foster Jun^{r}
William Pabody
John How
Ephraim Curtise
Sergeant Jacob Towne
Timothy Perkins
Daniel Wood
Daniel Clarke Sen^{r} d d
Samuel Simons
Thomas Haffen
John Stiles
Mr William Perkins
Samuel Stanley
Abraham How
Benjamin Foster
John Estie
Thomas Reddington
Philip Knight
Abraham Reddington
John Gould Junr
John Perley Senr
John Wilds Senr
John French Senr
Zacheus Curtis
Joseph Hail
John Kenney
Luke Hovey
Isaac Estey

John Andrews

FEMALES.

1. Deac^{n} Perkins Wife
2. Lieutenant Goulds "
3. Tho Dorman "
4. Isaac Easties "
5. Jacob Towns "
6. Joseph Towns "
7. Widow Mary Towne
8. Ephraim Dorman's Wife
9. John Wilds his "
10. James How his wife Senr
11. Michael Dunnels Wife
12. John Nichols wife
13. Daniel Bormans "
14. Isaak Cummins "
15. William Howletts "
16. Abraham Reddington "
17. Joseph Bixby's "
18. John Pabody's "
19. Samuel Simon's his wife
20. Robert Smith's wife
21. William Smiths "
22. Widdow Andrews
23. Nehemiah Abbots wife
24. Widdow Perley
25. William Watson his wife
26. { John French his wife
{ John Cummin his wife
27. Benjamin Bixby's wife
28. Tobijah Perkins "
29. My own Wife
30. Thos Andrew his wife
31. The Wife of Mathew Stanley Sen^{r}
32. The Wife of John Curtis
33. Martha Reddington
34. Sarah Bisn r
35. Ye Wife of Daniel Wood
Sarah Wood
36. a Wife of John Town Mary
37. a Wife of Samuel Howlet Sarah
37. Deliverance Wife of John Stiles
38. Wife of Jacob Foster
39. Martha Foster dismissed
to Concord
40. Joanna Stanley Wife of Samuel
41. Sarah Bixby wife of Joseph
42. Wife of John Gould Junr
43. Wife of John Ramsdell
44. Elizabeth Sties
45. Hannah wife of Timothy Perkins
46. Hannah wife of Wm Pebody
47. Margaret Knight
48. Perkins
49. Lucy Wife of Nathan^{l} Wood
50. Sarah Wife of John Andrews
51. Grace Wife of Ichabod
Endicott
52. Widow Mary Hale from
Newberry
53. Margaret French

MALES.

Joseph Andrews
Jacob Smith
John Cummings
Jonathan Bixby
Isaac Burton
Joseph Esty
Daniel Clarke
Thomas Robinson.
Joseph Peabody Junr

Zacheus Gould
Samuel Foster
Amos Dorman
Joseph Towne
Nehemiah Abbott.
Abraham Foster
John Robinson Senr
John Hovey. Senr
Joseph Towne Senr
Wm Chapman
Elishe Perkins
Timothy Perley
Benjamin Bixby Senr

Thomas Gould
John Howe
Thomas Howlitt
Thomas Perley
Thomas Dorman
Job Averill
John Curtiss
John Nichols
John Hovey
Michael Duinnel Junr
Seth Dorman

Timothy Perkins
Samuel Smith.
Samuel Stanley
Paul Averill
Joseph Borman
Wm Bixbey
Ivory Hovey
Jesse Dorman
Joseph Towne
John Perkins
John Perley

FEMALES.

54. Judith Dorman
55. Dorotha Robinson
 Wife of John
56. Mary Perley Senr
57. Sarah Foster
58. Mary wife of Joseph Hail
59. Wife of John Kenney
60. Susanna Hovey
61. Abigal Esty
62. Wife of Jacob Foster
63. Elizabeth Curtis
64. Widdow Sarah Gill
65. Susanna wife of John "
66. Sarah Wife of Jonathan Bixby
67. Hannah Foster
68. Ruth Simons
69. Rebecca Simons
70. Hannah Burton
71. Jane Ely wife of J. E.
72. Hannah Clark
73. Hannah Robinson
74. Widdow Cooper
75. Mary Peabody
76. Elizabeth Wife of
 Zacheus Gould
77. Elleanor Porter
78. Mary Averill
79. Content Nicholls
80. Elizabeth French
81. Dorotha Dorman
82. Mehitable Nichols
83. Corp^l Joseph Towne's wife
84. Wife of Nehemiah Abbott.
85. Phebe Towne
86. Jane Perley

87. Sarah wife of John Bradstreet
88. Sarah wife of Ephraim Wilds
89. Elizabeth Chapman
90. Priscilla Capen
91. Mary Capen
92. Elizabeth Perkins
93. Catherine Perkins
94. Deborah Perley
95. Mercey Wife of Thos. Gould
96. Elizabeth Perkins
97. Mrs Baker
98. Widdow Avril
99. Abigal wife of Thos Perley
100. Abigal W of Tim^{ty} Perkins
101. Sarah (W) of John Hows Junr
102. Rebecca W of Thos Howell
103. Susanna W of Job Averill
104. Priscilla W. of John Curtis.
105. Mary Waters
106. Sarah W of Josiah Peabody
107. Deborah W of Thos Dorman
108. Mary W of John Hovey
109. Judith Perkins
110. Hannah Howlett
112. Hannah W. of Michael Dunnell

FEMALES.

113. Mary Grant wife of Samuel
114. Sarah H tle
115. Prudenco wife of Joseph Borman
116. Phebe Foster
117. Wife of Samuel Towne
118. Wife of William Hollet
119. Jane wife of Ivory Hovey
120. Martha How
121. Ruth, w. of Jessie Dorman

A List males now belonging to the Church in Topsfield, May 18, 1751.

Daniel Reddington Deac*
Daniel Clark
Zacheus Gould*
Nehemiah Abbot*
Abraham Hotter*
Elisha Perkins*
Thomas Gould
John How of Middletown
John Curtis*
John Hovey
Michael Duinnel
Timothy Perkins*
Samuel Smith of Ipswich
Paul Averil Middletown
Joseph Borman*
Willliam Porter Norton.*
Deac Ivory Hovey
Jesse Dorman
John Perkins, Middleton
John Howlett Deac^n *
Joseph Gould
Caleb Potter Ipswich
Tobijah Perkins

Benj^n How†
Jacob Towne*
Abraham How Ipswich
Thos Potter Ips.
Isaac Commings Ips
Edmond Towns*
Sam^l Potter Ips.
Daniel Reddington Junr.
John Gould, Boxford.
John Abbot Ips
Richard Towne
Mark How Ips

Joseph Commings† Ips
Mathew Peabody
Joseph Hovey
Jacob Bixby†
John Prichard
Daniel Nelson dismissed to Lancaster
Ivory Hovey Junr†
Nathan Bixby†
Deacon Jacob Peabody

Reverend Mr If there be any mist that were in ye church before your coming it is Jonah Andrew and I cannot tell whether he belongs to us or Boxford church.

Luke Averill
Ebeneser Lake
John Wildes
Phineas Reddington†
Wm Reddington
John Lompson Junr Ips
Nathan Hood
George Bixby
Stephen Peabody, Boxf.
Wm Perkins
Thomas Howlett
Joseph Peabody
Jacob Robinson
Jacob Peabody Junr
Jacob Averal

John Andrews Boxf.
Joseph Edwards
John Symonds
Ezekiel Foster, Ips
Abraham Foster Junr. Ips
Sam^l Howlett Junr.
John Wood.
Amos Duinell
Doctor Dexter
Zacheus Gould
Aaron Hovey
Nehemiah How, Ips.
Pomp a negro Servant man Ips.
David Balch.
John Perkins

Rev^d Mr. Capen was settled in Tops. 1684.

---

* Dead. † Dismissed,

CS71 D26
(1996) Vol 2

Mass. & Maine Families in the Ancestry of
Walter Goodwin Davis

GOULD

In the parish of Bovingdon, co. Hertford, a family named Gould has lived since the thirteenth century, if not earlier, and to it Zacheus Gould of Topsfield in Massachusetts and several other seventeenth-century emigrants, closely related to him, belonged. The family genealogy, quoting from the county history, says that, when in 1235 a charter granted to the vicar of Hemel Hempstead, an adjoining parish, the appointment of a curate to the church of St. Laurence in Bovingdon, Thomas Gould was one of the signatories.*

An unusual and very valuable clue to the English home of these New England Goulds was provided by an account book, kept by John Gould (1662-1724) of Topsfield, who wrote therein "Grandfather Gould lived at a place called Hunts Green near Potter Row, belonging to Great [Missenden]." Great Missenden lies about eight miles to the west of Bovingdon, but, the general neighborhood being established, the full identification followed.

An expert in Anglo-American genealogical problems,† searching the appropriate probate registry, found some ten wills of this Gould family of prosperous yeomen and constructed from them a pedigree which is, in all probability, sound, but the Goulds were prolific and, in my opinion, further research, which I am not prepared to make, might strengthen it.

Because it demonstrates the unusual devotion to their parish church common to almost all of them, the first few items in the will of Thomas Gould, proved in 1520, are here given, in modern spelling. After directing that he be buried in the churchyard of St. Laurence at Bovyngdon, he makes bequests to the high altar, the mother church of Lincoln, the rood light, Our Lady's light, St. Laurence's light, St. Leonard's light, St. Nicholas' light, to the maintaining of the torches, to the gilding of St. Laurence's tabernacle and to a priest to sing for his soul for two years. This Thomas Gould is considered to have been the great-great-great-grandfather of Zacheus Gould, the emigrant.

Because his parentage is possibly the weakest link in the published pedigree this account begins with Richard Gould who lived in the latter half of the sixteenth century.

---

* *The Family of Zacheus Gould*, Benjamin Apthorp Gould, Lynn, 1895, quoting from *Historical Antiquities of Hertfordshire*, Sir H. Chauncey, II: 476.

† The late Horatio G. Somerby.

1. Richard¹ Gould, of whom nothing is known except that he was "late of Bovingdon" in 1604 when his son Jeremy was married, had at least three sons, Jeremy, John and Zacheus, and possibly daughters as well.*

Children:

i. Jeremy, b. about 1581; on Nov. 8, 1604, "Jeremie sonne of Richard Gould of Bovingdon deceased & Priscilla daughter of Willm Grover of Codmore" were married at Chesham, co. Buckingham. He was assessed in 1623 for property in Halton and Weston Turville, co. Buckingham.

By 1639 he had emigrated to New England and settled at Weymouth where on Oct. 1, 1639, he mortgaged to Joseph Holloway of Sandwich a house, lot and meadow, which he had lately purchased of Holloway, to secure the payment of £20. This is presumably the house in Weymouth which he sold to James Parker of Strawberry Bank who conveyed it to Zacheus Gould of Ipswich on Nov. 26, 1644, and which Zacheus sold to Capt. William Perkins on April 2, 1645.† There is a plausible tradition that after 1639 Jeremy went to England and brought back with him to Weymouth his wife and family. In any event he was here in 1641 when William Coddington of Newport in Rhode Island appointed his "well-beloved friend Mr. Jere. Gould" his attorney in Massachusetts. It was possibly because of his association with Coddington that Gould settled soon afterward in Middletown, Rhode Island. Again, there is a tradition that he returned to England after the death of his wife. Of his children, his son Daniel Gould was an ardent Quaker who was whipped and imprisoned in Boston in 1659.

ii. John, b. about 1585; m. Judith ———; buried at King's Langley, co. Hertford, July 11, 1633. He, yeoman, made his will on June 30 and it was proved July 18, 1633. He left £20 to his eldest son John at the age of twenty-four, and £10 each to his other children, Joseph, Sarah, Hannah, Mary, Zacheus, Nathan, Abel, Lydia and Elizabeth. Residuary legatee and executrix: his wife Judith. Overseers: Thomas Childe, gent., of Abbot's Langley, Ralph King of Watford, John Saye of Hempsted.

Judith Gould of Watford, co. Hertford, widow, made her will May 6, and it was proved Sept. 3, 1650. She left to her son Abel £400 and a little box at the house of her cousin Gase and all that was in it. To her daughters Lydia and Elizabeth, £300 each. To Hannah and Elizabeth, daughters of her daughter Hannah, £40 between them. Her son-in-law George Younge owed her £100 of which her executors should claim only £40. To the own children of her son Nathan in New England, £40. To the children of her daughter Sarah, £60 if her [the testatrix's] son Nathan had not divided the goods her son Zacheus left him when he died equally between him and his sister Sarah, but, if they were equally divided, then this £100 [*sic*] was to be equally divided for the use of their children. If her son Abel should die before coming of age, £300 should be divided between her daughters Lydia and Elizabeth, £50 given to her daughter Hannah, £20 to her daughter Marie, and £30 sent to New England to be equally divided between the own children of her son Nathan and her daughter Sarah.

---

* The family genealogy names a fourth son, Richard, but gives no evidence whatever for his inclusion.

† Suffolk Deeds, I: 16, 54, 56, 58.

This covers the same material as "Ancestry of Dudley Wilds"

If money that she had lent to the Parliament should be paid, she willed £100 to her son Abel, £40 to her daughter Marie and the rest to her daughters Hannah, Lydia and Elizabeth. To Master Goodwinge, minister of Watford, £5. Residue to her executors: son Abel and daughters Lydia and Elizabeth. Witnesses: Ralph King, Thomas Barrabee.*

Of the three children who came to New England before 1650, Nathan founded a family in Amesbury, the married name of Sarah is not known, and Zacheus had died unmarried. On Sept. 12, 1650, nine days after proving her mother's will, Elizabeth Gould took out administration of her brother Zacheus's estate in London.

2. iii. ZACHEUS.

2. ZACHEUS^2 GOULD (*Richard*^{1}) was born, presumably in Bovingdon, about 1589 (aged 72 in 1661).† He married Phebe Deacon of Hemel Hempstead about 1619. She died in Topsfield on September 20, 1663, and he survived until 1668.

The Goulds lived in Hemel Hempstead for several years after their marriage and in the parish church their first three children were baptized 1620-1623. Soon thereafter they moved to Great Missenden, co. Buckingham, where Zacheus Gould was assessed in a subsidy in 1629. An early tradition says that their son John was born on midsummer day, the 10th of June, old style, 1635, and that he was three years old "in his hanging or large-sleeved tunic" when the Goulds sailed for New England. This would place their emigration in the last half of 1638 or the first half of 1639.

Weymouth, not far south of Boston, was Gould's destination after landing in Massachusetts Bay and the first record of him is in the will of Henry Russell of that town, made January 28, 1639/40, in which Zacheus Gould was named an overseer and to which Jeremy Gould was a witness. He must have regarded Weymouth as temporary quarters, however, while he looked about for a promising place for permanent settlement. In the notebook of Thomas Lechford, the Boston notary, there are drafts of two documents, the first drawn between May 26 and June 1, 1640, and the second between December 11 and 19, of the same year, for leases from Mr. John Humphrey to Zacheus Gould "of Lynn." The first covered a messuage and a 300-acre farm called The Plains, "lying within the liberties of Salem," and the second added to The Plains another farm called The Ponds. The negotiations fell through, however, but they serve to locate Gould in Lynn in 1640, in which year the town history says that he owned a mill on Saugus river.

* Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 145 Pembroke.

† The parish registers of Bovingdon before 1674 have been destroyed by fire.

On October 7, 1640, Zacheus Gould, husbandman, in behalf of himself and all other husbandmen in the country, addressed a plea to the Governor and the General Court, asking for an order "for the encouragement of your petitioners who are husbandmen employed about English grain, that they and their servants be exempted from ordinary trainings in seed time, hay time and harvest." The petition was wisely granted. Earlier in 1640, on June 4, Zacheus had witnessed the will of "ould Hugh Churchman" of Lynn, and, from a comparison of the writing of the document and the witness clause, it would appear that he had written the whole. During his Lynn residence he made several appearances in the county court. In 1642 he, Thomas Putnam and James Huberd entered a suit as partners, which is interesting as Gould and Putnam's father were probably brothers-in-law. In 1643 William Taylor, Gould's servant, was ordered severely whipped for theft.

By 1644 Gould had found his permanent home—a farm of 300 acres which had been granted to Capt. Daniel Patrick, who sold it in 1640 to Mr. William Paine, and which lay in the inland part of Ipswich known as Ipswich Farms or Village, later to become New Meadows and finally Topsfield. Its general bounds must have been known, but it was not definitely laid out until 1665 when Gould's son-in-law, John Wild, testified that "about twenty-one years before" William Paine sold land to Zacheus Gould where his house then stood, while on May 23, 1666, it was reported to the General Court that Thomas Howlett and John Gage having been appointed to lay out and measure to Zacheus Gould the 300-acre grant to Captain Patrick, did so about a year since.

Zacheus took immediate steps to encourage settlement in his neighborhood and on May 29, 1644, the General Court decreed: "Upon Zaccheus Gould's petition it is conceived to be for the general good and very convenient that there should be a village about that farm and that the town of Ipswich should further them therein." Four years later, on October 18, 1648, the Court acted on a new petition of which Zacheus was one of the signers. They asked the deputies "that you wold be pleased to bestowe a name upon our Villiage at the new meadowes at Ipswich . . . wee think that hempstead will be a fit name." The request was partially granted but it must have been a sore disappointment to Zacheus that the magistrates, influenced by the Assistant to the Governor, Samuel Symonds, disregarded Hempstead and voted for Topsfield, to commemorate the parish in Essex, Eng-

land, where Symonds had had an estate. In 1650, "in answer to the request of Zacheus Gould and William Howard of Topsfield, the Court doth grant that Topsfield shall henceforth be a town." Obviously Gould had been the most influential citizen in these steps leading to the final incorporation.*

In 1645 Gould sued Capt. William Perkins for debt, Perkins being the man to whom he had sold the property in Weymouth which had originally belonged to Jeremy Gould who conveyed it to James Parker who in turn conveyed it to Zacheus. Perkins moved to Topsfield, and although probably not ordained, became the town's minister.

Gould took the Oath of Fidelity on September 30, 1651, but, as he remained outside the church all his life, he never became a freeman. Possibly while in Lynn he became interested in the doctrines of the Baptists who were numerous in that town. It is equally possible that he leaned toward the Quakers. In 1659 he was fined £3 for entertaining Quakers and at the same time Daniel Gould of Rhode Island, his nephew, was ordered to be whipped thirty stripes and to depart the Massachusetts jurisdiction. Daniel had probably been his uncle's guest in Topsfield. The fine was remitted in 1660 because of the great loss he had lately sustained by fire.†

On a Sunday afternoon in 1658 Gould's behavior in the meeting house was, it must be admitted, nothing short of scandalous. The parson, William Perkins, and a deacon, Isaac Cummings, testified "that Zacheus Gould in time of singing the psalm one Sabbath day in the afternoone, sate him downe upon the end of the Table (about which the minister & chiefe of the people sit) with his hatt fully on his head, & his back toward all the rest of them that sate about the Table and though spoken to by the minister & 2 others either to shewe reverance to the Ordinance or to withdrawe yet altered not his posture." Topsfield must have been a busy place during the following week. On the next Sunday Gould asked the congregation to remain after the service and an unedifying exchange of insults ensued. Naturally he soon found himself before the magistrates and was fined for "abusive carriages in the meeting house." The incident is reminiscent of the less sympathetic methods of the Quakers in calling attention to what they held to be the emptiness of the New England church.‡

---

* *Records of the Governor and Company of Massachusetts Bay*, II: 73, 258; IV, Part I: 33.

† *Ibid.*, IV, Part I: 407, 426.

‡ *Records and Files*, II: 118, 152.

Also in 1658 Gould, being sued by Sergt. Thomas Hale as attorney for Mr. Thomas Burnap, and "not being abel to Com," appointed "my Cozan John Putnam the younger" his attorney. It seems very probable that the Priscilla, the wife of John Putnam the elder, was a sister of Zacheus Gould. The Putnams emigrated from Aston Abbots, co. Buckingham, which is not far from the Gould country on the Hertford and Buckingham border.*

Gould's final troubles were with the town of Rowley. The boundary between Rowley and Topsfield had not been defined, and Rowley claimed that part of Gould's farm was in its territory. At a Topsfield town meeting on March 14, 1661/2, Gould did "give in his farm of three hundred acres . . . that he now lives upon, to Topsfield . . . forever, with all the priviledges and appurtenances thereunto belonging." Rowley did not consent t this unilateral action and distrained the farm for rates. Tw Rowley men, John Prichard and Ezekiel Northend, testified tha "the dwelling house in which goodman gould liveth is within th bounds of the towne of Rowley several scores of Rods." Goul sued the constable of Rowley for trespass. The defendant wo the verdict, but the court would not accept it, noting that Goul had paid toward the ministry in Topsfield for many years. Th General Court finally settled the matter in favor of Gould an Topsfield on October 11, 1665.† The Court also settled the disputed bounds between the farms of Governor Endicott and Goul in 1666.

The records contain no will or settlement of Gould's estate.

DEACON

Thomas Deacon, of Corner Hall, a hamlet in the parish o Hemel Hempstead, co. Hertford, was a tanner by trade. He i was who was referred to when his great-grandson, John Goul of Topsfield (1662-1724) wrote in his account book "Grand father Deacon lived in Hertfordshire in Hempsteadtown in Co ner Hall." He married at Hemel Hempstead on June 15, 159 Martha Field, who survived him. His will, dated December 1642, gives his residence as Hemel Hempstead and names h wife Martha executrix "being fully persuaded that she will di charge the friends that stand bound for me to divers men and

---

* *Ibid.*, II: 126.

† *Ibid.*, III: 125, 236, 259. *Records of the Governor and the Company of Massachusetts Bay*, IV, Part II: 289.

helpful to my children." To his children he left "no more than 20s. each," and to the poor of the parish 30s. Overseers: cousin Richard Sawell of Ivinge and son Elisha Deacon to whom 10s. each. Witnesses: Roger Deacon, Thomas Paice. Administration was granted to William Davies, chief creditor, the executrix having died, on October 24, 1663, and on April 3, 1667, to Isaac Field, executor of William Davies, of the goods of Thomas Deacon not fully administered.*

There were Deacons in neighboring Hertfordshire parishes but no light has been shed on Thomas Deacon's parentage. There were three Deacons, contemporaries of Thomas, married in Hemel Hempstead: Mathew Robson and Awdrie Deacon on January 16, 1586/7; Raphe Deacon and Widow Howton on October 9, 1592; Roger Deacon and Annis Turner on June 2, 1596. They were very probably his sister and brothers. Roger's wife, Agnes (Annis and Agnes are interchangeable) was buried December 5, 1616. They had a son Jeremy Deacon baptized in Hemel Hempstead February 8, 1600/1, who was at the Merchant Taylors School in 1614 and at Trinity College, Oxford, in 1619. The father was probably that Roger Deacon, citizen and skinner of London, whose will, dated October 11, and proved November 18, 1624, left his estate to his son-in-law Thomas Sharow, his daughter Martha and his grandchildren William Jones, Grace Jones and Roger Cottrell.†

Children of Thomas Deacon, baptized in Hemel Hempstead: (1) Phebe, bapt. April 3, 1597; m. Zacheus Gould. (2) Anne, bapt. June 22, 1600. (3) Thomas, bapt. February 14, 1601/2. (4) Elisha, bapt. January 9, 1602/3; living in 1642. (5) Sara, bapt. December 25, 1604. (6) Thomas, bapt. December 25, 1609; buried in the church of Hemel Hempstead, "Heere lyeth interred the body of Thomas Deacon the sonne of Thomas Deacon and Martha his wife of Cornerhall Batchelor of Arts and student in phisick who by his extraordinary spare body in respect of breadth being long sick of a consumption and of his as extraordinary height being in proportion to the length of this stone might show the desire he had to heaven and so departed Sept. 28 An. Do. 16—"; as Thomas son of Thomas Deacon of Hempstead, co. Herts, pleb., he had matriculated at Trinity College, Oxford, November 23, 1627, aged 18, and received his B. A. on December 6, 1630. (7) Martha, daughter of Thomas Deacon "of Corner Hall," bapt. August 22, 1613.

---

* Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 119 Juxon.

† *Ibid.*, 105 Byrde.

Children of Zacheus and Phebe Gould:

i. Phebe, bapt. at Hemel Hempstead Sept. 27, 1620; m. about 1640 Thomas Perkins. (*See Perkins.*)
ii. Mary, bapt. at Hemel Hempstead Dec. 19, 1621; m. about 1647 John Reddington of Topsfield.
iii. Martha, bapt. at Hemel Hempstead June 15, 1623; m. John Newmarch of Ipswich.
iv. Priscilla, probably born at Great Missenden; m. John Wilde of Topsfield. (*See Wildes.*)
v. John, probably born at Great Missenden in 1635; m. Oct. 14, 1660, Sarah Baker; d. in Topsfield Jan. 26, 1709/10; she d. Jan. 20, 1708/9.

He was the greatest landowner and the most prominent citizen in Topsfield in his day. In the local foot-company he became an ensign in 1674, lieutenant in 1686 and captain in 1694. He was town clerk from 1681/2 through 1684/5 and on his assuming that office he and Lieutenant Peabody were entrusted with transcribing the old town book into a new book. He was selectman from 1677/8 to 1686/7 and again in 1692. Finally in 1690 he was a deputy to the General Court. He was an active promoter of the iron works in Rowley Village, afterward Boxford, which venture was not successful and was abandoned about 1680.

In the unhappy scandal over the conduct of Mr. Thomas Gilbert, the Topsfield parson, in 1671, Sarah Gould was the principal witness against him, and there is much local color in the testimony. To the present-day reader of the testimony it would seem that Gilbert was a sick man rather than an alcoholic, but the court, although somewhat doubtful, ruled against him.

Captain Gould was an ardent defender of the Massachusetts Charter when it was abrogated in 1686, and an outspoken critic of the new government of President Dudley. Some of his Topsfield neighbors, regrettably including his brother-in-law John Wild, informed against him and he was accused of treason and lodged in Boston jail. He petitioned for pardon and was released upon the payment of a fine of £50, costs of £10, and provided a bond of £100 for good behavior. He must have had mental reservations, however, and there was ill will between him and the Topsfield informers until the church intervened.

From Captain Gould's five sons there is a multitude of descendants.

Essex Inst Vol 100 Gould

Joseph Smith's ancestor, Zaccheus Gould, was obviously a descendant of our Zaccheus, but this is vague as to how! Was this Zaccheus son or grandson of Captain John Gould?

JOSEPH SMITH AND SALEM

By David R. Proper

Perhaps the most truly American of religious persuasions, the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-Day Saints, has had some Essex County connections of more than ordinary interest. Not only was its founder, Joseph Smith, Jr., descended from old families of the area, but he paid two visits here which have been the source of no little speculation.

The Smith family to which the Prophet Joseph Smith, Jr., belonged was descended from one Robert Smith of London who arrived in Boston in 1638. A native of Lincolnshire in England, he soon moved to Boxford, married, and became owner of two hundred acres on the Topsfield border. His son, Samuel Smith, built a house in that town and lived there, a "gentleman" by contemporary records. Robert Smith had married Mary French, daughter of Thomas French, and they were parents of ten children. Samuel, born in 1666, lived to be eighty-two and was a carpenter and farmer. He married into the Curtiss family and was father of nine children. One of these, Samuel Smith, Jr., had a public life of some note. His wife was Priscilla, daughter of Zaccheus Gould who was an outspoken "entertainer" of Quakers during their period of persecution. Both Samuels were at one time or another in trouble as opposers to royal authority, but they held the honored position of gentlemen and the respect of their neighbors.

Samuel Smith, Jr., not only served in the militia as captain, but he was a town officer, surveyor of roads, a member of the Committee of Safety, selectman, assessor, clerk, delegate to the provincial congress and a notable character in many ways. At the time of his death, the *Salem Gazette* stated on November 22, 1785, that he was "a sincere friend to the liberties of the country," and a "strenuous advocate for the doctrine of Christianity."[1]

The Topsfield Smiths built up a kind of prosperity based on the legacy of the immigrant, Robert, who left one hundred and eighty pounds which was increased by his son and grandson to more than five hundred and forty-four pounds by the time Asael Smith was born in 1744. This Smith was later married to Mary Duty and after residence in Windham, New Hampshire, returned to Topsfield at the death of his father in 1785. He later moved to the frontier settlement of Tunbridge, Vermont. A powerfully built man, Asael was called "crooked-neck Smith" from his habit of walking with his head to one side. He was a religious "independent" insofar as it was possible to be at that period; his children, however, were baptised Congregationalists. The father appears to have had leanings toward Universalism, but did not openly profess that conviction. Joseph, son of Asael and father of the prophet, was born at the Smith homestead at Topsfield in 1771. He moved to Vermont with his father where he taught school at one time and married Lucy Mack in 1796.[2]

Lucy, mother of Joseph Smith, Jr., traced her own family back to colonial settlers of Essex County. John Mack arrived in America twenty-one years after Robert Smith, coming from Inverness, Scotland, to Salisbury, Massachusetts. At the age of thirty-eight he married Sarah, daughter of Orlando Bagley, who, as constable at Amesbury, had been the agent by whom Susannah Martin was arrested for the crime of witchcraft and for which she was hanged in Salem July 19, 1692. The Macks moved to Concord and then to Lyme, Connecticut, from which place they penetrated into New Hampshire and Vermont where they joined their blood with that of the Topsfield Smiths.[3]

Not all of the Smith clan seems to have participated in the removal from the homestead in Essex County. This may account for the first contact the Prophet Joseph Smith, Jr., had with his ancestral home. Soon after his birth in Sharon, Vermont, on December 23, 1805, the Smiths moved to a place near Lebanon, New Hampshire in 1811, before their move about 1815 to Palmyra, New York, where the Mormon church organization was born. During their New Hampshire residence a fever devastated the countryside in 1813. The death toll in nearby Vermont from this epidemic was six thousand; young Joseph was seriously ill for some time and before the crisis was past suffered a painful operation on his leg performed under the primitive conditions of

---

[1] John H. Evans, *Joseph Smith; an American Prophet* (New York, 1933), pp. 20-22.

[2] Evans, pp. 22-24.

[3] *Ibid.*, pp. 24-25.

vol 105

John³ John² Zaccheus¹
nephew of aunt
Phebe (Gould) Perkins
VERY INTERESTING
HISTORY

THE ACCOUNT BOOK OF JOHN GOULD, WEAVER, OF TOPSFIELD, MASSACHUSETTS: 1697-1724.

By Benno M. Forman

I

John Gould his Book of accounts 1697 . . . I Say my Book, my owne book and I gave one Shilling and four pence for it so much and no more[1]

are the first words written in the remarkable series of accounts, records and personal memoranda which document the daily activities of John Gould and his family during the first quarter of the eighteenth century.

Gould was the grandson of Zaccheus Gould who "lived at a place called hunt's Green nere potter['s] Roe belonging to great misengham."[2] James Savage, in his *Genealogical Dictionary of New England* points out that Great Missendam is a village in Buckinghamshire, about thirty-three miles south of London.[3] The elder Gould emigrated to New England in about 1640 and lived in various places before he settled permanently in 1644 in that part of Ipswich township which was to be set off six years later as Topsfield.[4]

John Gould was the eldest child of the first generation of Goulds born in Massachusetts. His father, Captain John Gould, had been born in England in 1637.[5] The younger John's account book mentions three brothers: Thomas, Zaccheus and Joseph; and three sisters: Sarah, Priscilla and Mary. On November 10, 1684, he married Phebe French, who died April 25, 1718, after presenting John with eleven children.[6] Gould married a second time not long after the death of his first wife. He died on November 5, 1724, twenty-six days before his sixty-second birthday.

II

Despite the efforts of the various mercantile acts of the seventeenth century designed to discourage the production of cloth in New England, the economic difficulties of the 1640's and the unsettling effect of the English civil wars caused the leaders of the Massachusetts Bay Colony to seek new ways of producing the goods which were needed at home. Imports from England were uncertain and expensive during those years, and the economy of the colony had suffered from diminishing immigration.

Had these economic problems never arisen, there can be little doubt that many of the colonists would soon have turned to the cloth trade: it represents merely a continuation of the way of life and traditions that they had known in England, for the largest portion of the settlers had come to Essex County from those counties of East Anglia where the woolen trade provided the primary source of income.[7]

By the third quarter of the seventeenth century, merchants in Salem and Boston were importing large quantities of English textiles, probably enough to satisfy the demand for better cloth throughout Essex and Suffolk counties. Such importers as George and Jonathan Corwin of Boston and later Salem sold cloth to dozens of shopkeepers, by whom it was distributed throughout the Bay Colony.[8] Professional weavers by this time were fulfilling

---

[1] See the unpublished manuscript "John Gould, Account Book," in the Collection of the Essex Institute, Salem, Mass., inside front cover. Included in the manuscript are also memoranda by Daniel Gould, the son of John, beginning May 18, 1725 and continuing through 1730. Daniel's notes are almost completely concerned with the administration of his father's estate and the settlement of same. There are also memoranda during the period 1772-1783 by Captain Jacob Gould, a tailor. The only portions of the manuscript treated in this paper are those written by John Gould, which are pp. 1-37, 70-75, 80-94, 118-133, and 136-150—hereafter cited as "MS." The author is indebted to Mrs. L. Gordon Holt, Librarian of the Joseph Downs Manuscript Collection, Henry Francis du Pont Winterthur Museum, for making a copy of the Gould manuscript available to him.

[2] MS, p. 150.

[3] (Baltimore, 1965), II, 287—hereafter cited as Savage.

[4] Savage is inconsistent concerning the date of Zaccheus' arrival, saying at one place "1635," (II, 287), but giving the date and place of the birth of his son as "England, 1637" (II, 285).

[5] For complete genealogy see Benjamin Apthorp Gould, "The Ancestry and Posterity of Zaccheus Gould," *Essex Institute Historical Collections,* XI (July, 1871), 115 ff—hereafter cited as Gould, *Ancestry*.

get

[6] Savage, II, 285. Gould, *Ancestry*, which lists only ten children, does not notice Samuel, mentioned MS, p. 73.

[7] Charles Edward Banks, *Topographical Dictionary of 2885 English Emigrants to New England,* 1620-1650 (Baltimore, 1957), fol. p. xii. Col. Banks' study demonstrates that slightly more than 93% of the heads of households who emigrated to New England came from parishes other than London. The counties which furnished the greatest number of settlers were Essex and Suffolk—two counties in East Anglia where the woolen trade of the sixteenth century had flourished. See also Maurice Ashley, *England in the Seventeenth Century* (Baltimore, 1966), pp. 15-16.

[8] See the unpublished Ledgers of George and Jonathan Corwin, and extensive papers of Miles Ward, II, in the Essex Institute manuscript collection.

Gould

Vol 105

a place of importance in the community, weaving both on their own looms and on those which were in the homes of some of their customers, at relatively modest fees. Boston boasted a few of them, and Rowley had early become an important center of production.[9]

Indeed, by the time John Gould began keeping his book of accounts, the production of domestic cloth—some of it undoubtedly finding its way into the West Indies trade—was great enough, or was at least *believed* to be great enough, to cause the government in England to place severe restrictions on its production, exportation and transportation. An order of 1699 states that:

> No Wool, Woolfells, Shortlings, Morlings, Wool Flocks, Worsted, Bay or Woolen Yarn, Cloath, Serge, Bays, Kerseys, Says, Frizes, Druggets, Cloath Serges, Shalloons or any other Drapery, Stuffs or Wollen [sic] Manufactures whatsoever, made or mixed with Wool or Wool Flocks, being of the Product or Manufacture of any of the English Plantations in America shall be laden on any Ship or Vessel.[10]

The intention of this order, which further specified that these raw materials or goods cannot even be "laden on any horse or carriage," in other words, transported from their place of origin, is unmistakable. While home manufactures could not be prohibited, commercial ventures were to be discouraged.

The act, on the whole, however, despite one recorded instance of its enforcement, apparently offered little deterrent to the beginnings of production on an efficiently organized basis. This can be surmised from the inventory of John Cornish of Boston, dated March 2, 1695/6, and filed in the Suffolk County Probate Records.[11]

---

[9] William B. Weeden, *Economic and Social History of New England*, 2 Vols. (Boston, 1890), I, 198—hereafter cited as Weeden.

[10] Weeden, I, 388. *Woolfels* = fleece; "Shortlings," (misspelling of *shorlings*) = wool shorn from a living lamb, as opposed to *morlings*, which is wool shorn from a dead lamb. It has become something of a vogue among contemporary historians to point out how the colonists delighted in evading the English customs officers at this time. While the general rule may be true, although difficult to document (few smugglers keep account books), this particular law had unhappy consequences for one ship's captain in Massachusetts. The Court Records of Suffolk County reveal that in 1702, Thomas Gills had four bags of wool seized, the rest of his cargo and his ship impounded at Boston. In addition he was fined £10 for each bag of wool. Upon suit in the Court some weeks later, his ship was returned to him, but the fine was not rebated, and the wool was never seen again. See "Records of the Suffolk County Court, 1701-06," pp. 108-110.

[11] XIII, 743. The inventory is analyzed in Weeden, I, 389-391.

Although John Gould's work was on a much smaller scale, his detailed accounts and memoranda from 1697 through 1724 offer a heretofore unexplored glimpse into the economic life of a craftsman in the essentially agrarian community of Topsfield, Massachusetts, in a little-studied period of New England life.

III

In following the weaver's craft, John Gould was probably continuing a family trade in which his father and grandfather had preceded him. When he began his book on his own account at the age of thirty, his father was still alive, although aging. Gould senior abandoned his work five years later,[12] and lived until 1710. He was remembered as one of the eight lively and outspoken men, of a breed which seemed to abound in and around Ipswich. Gould was imprisoned and fined for criticism of Governor Dudley's administration in 1687, along with Major Samuel Appleton and the minister of the South Parish, John Wise.[13]

No mention is made of Gould's acquiring the equipment with which he followed his profession. The first entry in his book shows that he was already engaged in the weaving trade, in addition to managing some of the large landholdings his grandfather had accumulated in the Topsfield area.[14]

While the varieties of weaving done by Gould are not astounding, the book reveals that he produced cloth in three widths: "ellwide," which was around 45 inches; "yardwide," or 36 inches; and "three-quarters wide," or 27 inches. The width was apparently contingent upon the use the customer was to make of the cloth, rather than the kind of material (*i.e.*, wool or linen), as both wool and linen can be found to have been woven in all three widths. "Yardwide" however, was by far the most popular.

There seems to be an ambiguity connected with the phrase Gould most frequently used to describe his service: "to weaving cloth." In some instances it appears to denote only a labor charge. In others, the reference seems to be to weaving *linen* cloth. Oddly enough, linen cloth is specifically mentioned only twice in the account book.[15] Yet, the references to flax growing, buying and selling, processing flax, selling of flaxseed and charges for the labor of swingling the flax are so frequent that there can be little doubt that the production of linen cloth accounted for the major portion of the family's output.

---

[12] MS, p. 145.

[13] See anon. auth., "Memoir of the Rev. Increase Mather, D. D.", *New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, II (Jan. 1848), 15. Hereafter this periodical will be cited as *N E G R*.

[14] Savage, II, 285.

The second most popular fabric that Gould wove was "all wool" cloth. There are also entries which reveal that he wove "Cotton and Wool" cloth, "Kersey" (a rather coarse, often ribbed cloth), "Shaloon" (a somewhat finer than the average woolen fabric), "curtain cloth," and "Drugett" (an all wool cloth which implies the use of a loom with two treadles).[16] Plain cloth was generally woven at 4 pence per yard for the labor only, but a penny extra per yard was charged for "striped goods."[17] All wool generally cost 6 or 8d. per yard, and was infrequently woven as "striped." "Woosted" is mentioned only twice (in 1703 and 1708) and in both instances was probably not woven by Gould.[18]

Linsey-woolsey was also apparently not a popular item in Topsfield during these years, inasmuch as it is specifically mentioned only once (in July, 1705) and the quantity referred to was very small.[19] The lack of popularity of this item in Topsfield may be interpreted in two ways: the parity of the value of linen and wool at the time and/or the preference of the people of Topsfield for un-mixed fabrics.

In addition to the production of yard goods, Gould also wove many yards of "bedtickin," "blanketin," and "shirtin;" and specific forms such as "meal-bags," and "coverlids" or "coverlets." That coverlets in this era were sometimes made by professional weavers rather than being totally objects of home industry may come as a surprise. Gould's price for them ranged between 4 shillings for the least expensive, to a pair at £1:05:00 each, woven for his daughter, Mary, just prior to her marriage. Gould, in his typically business-like fashion, made a reckoning of these items, and included them when he totalled her dowry or "portion" of his estate.[20]

---

[15] MS, pp. 17, 73.

[16] MS, *passim.* For definitions of obsolete cloths, see Abbott Lowell Cummings, comp., *Bed Hangings* (Boston, 1960), pp. 15-37.

[17] MS, pp. 5, 12, 21, 26, *et passim.*

[18] MS, pp. 9, 142.

[19] MS, p. 80.

[20] MS, p. 91.

Despite the fact that perhaps half of the references in the account book are to work done for relatives (including second cousins), Gould was a professional weaver. The Gould family was large and Topsfield itself was small. Marriages in the generation of Gould's father and aunts produced an interlocking family that made cousins of all who bore the name of Gould, Perkins, Andrews, Baker, Dorman or Redington. Gould's children added to the list the names of Curtis, Smith and Stanley, all of whom are represented in the memoranda.

The degree of his professionalism is illustrated by his having had two journeyman weavers working for him. The first, Benjamin Standley, worked for Gould a year prior to their reckoning of accounts on October 17, 1697. His wages for the year were seven pounds.[21] The second entry concerning a journeyman mentions "Thomas Hunckins [who] came to me the 8th of december & went away the 24 of march 1705."[22]

Well before this date, Gould's daughters, Phebe (born 1685), and Mary (born 1689), had begun doing much of the weaving that was produced in the Gould homestead. At the age of 12, Mary wove a coverlet that sold for 3s. 6d. and had required "a fortnight" to make.[23]

Over the years, Gould bought and sold much flaxseed. He also bought and sold flax and wool and the yarns made from them. As his sons John (born 1690), Nathaniel (born 1691), Daniel (born 1699), and Solomon (born 1704) grew older, their services were often employed in swingling flax for others, once even for the eminent minister of Topsfield, Parson Joseph Capen.[24] The average amount of flax that could be swingled or "scutched," (*i.e.,* the spinnable fibers removed from the pulp by beating) in a day averaged between ten and eleven pounds.[25] This was considered work for a healthy boy. Girls spread the flax to dry,[26] did most of the spinning,[27] and often did the weaving.[28] The men did the "spooling" of the yarn, and the warping (or "threading") of the loom.[29] The professional weaver's labors strictly began after the fibers were spun into yarn.

---

[21] MS, p. 1.

[22] MS, p. 24.

[23] MS, pp. 15-16.

[24] MS, p. 71.

[25] MS, pp. 92, 145.

[26] MS, p. 87.

[27] MS, pp. 9, 70, 91, 142.

[28] MS, p. 93.

fr Dunn

The per-yard price Gould charged his customers did not include fulling (*i.e.*, washing the woven cloth and raising the nap), dyeing or pressing. Entries for the eleven years following 1707 give one of the rare insights into the fuller's trade as practiced in this important and changing period of New England's textile history.

The fuller with whom Gould traded is only referred to as "Mr. Farley," and the assumption might be that the reference was to Michael Farley, I, who Savage says "was sent over [in] . . . 1675, by Richard Saltonstall to have care of his fulling mill,"[30] at Ipswich. Testimony by Mary Wayte in June 1681, recorded in the Essex County Court Records[31], confirms Savage's assertion. Farley ran Saltonstall's fulling and gristmills, probably until the time he was licensed to keep an ordinary at Ipswich in 1686.[32]

Although Michael Farley was still alive and a respected member of the Ipswich community in March 1719/20, when he was given preferential seating in the Meeting House,[33] it is much more likely that the fuller with whom Gould dealt was the son of Michael Farley, also named Michael.

The younger Farley, in partnership with John Adams and his son, John Adams, Jr., had petitioned the town of Ipswich in March 1696/7 for "permission to build a dam and operate a grist mill and a fulling mill."[34] The mill was built in 1697, on the north side of the river (opposite the Saltonstall mills and somewhat upstream), and was known as "Adams' and Farley's Mill" when it was sold in 1732 to Benjamin Brown.[35]

Between 1680 and 1710, fulling mills sprang up all over New England. The operations in Ipswich were by no means the first in Essex County, for the enterprising Yorkshiremen who had settled in Rowley had one in operation possibly even earlier than

---

[29] MS, pp. 91, 93.

[30] Savage, II, 141.

[31] Anon. auth., "Gleanings," N E G R, XL (Jan. 1886), 65, quo. unpbl. Essex County Court Files, XXXV, 92.

[32] Thomas Franklin Waters, *Ipswich in the Massachusetts Bay Colony*, 2 Vols. (Ipswich, 1905), II, 72—hereafter cited as Waters.

[33] Waters, II, 7-8.

[34] Waters, I, 694-695.

[35] Anon. auth., "Descendents of Edward Brown," *The Essex Antiquarian*, XII (1908), 126.

the recorded date of 1643.[36] It seems unlikely that much fulling was being done in the homes of Essex County after the beginning of the eighteenth century, except perhaps in the most remote townships.

A typical entry (December 1707) shows that the cost of "fulling and pressing" 37 yards of yard-wide cloth at Farley's mill came to 8s. 5d. The cost of weaving this same piece of goods, at 4d. per yard, came to 12s. 4d. Thus the fulling and pressing was equal to roughly two thirds of the cost of the weaving.[37]

In another entry (March 1708), when dyeing was also done by the fuller, the charge for "fulling, dying and pressing of cloth" amounted to the high price of 8d. per yard![38] The weaving of this piece of cloth could not have cost more than 6d. per yard, and thus the cost of the fuller's work was one-third more than the cost of the weaving itself. From these two items it can be noted that the dyeing of cloth by a professional fuller could equal the cost of fulling and pressing, or the cost of the weaving: *i.e.*, one third of the final cost represented weaving, one third represented fulling and one third dyeing.

IV

The problems of sufficient solid currency, which plagued colonial Massachusetts, are reflected in the account book in various ways. Values of goods and services were always expressed in terms of "money," but little of it changed hands. Paper money was in circulation in 1708, and was accepted by Gould at face value.[39] Throughout rural New England, Indian corn still continued to be used as a medium of exchange. In 1705, 1706 and 1710, it was valued at 2s. 8d. per bushel in Topsfield. But as crops varied in abundance, Indian corn was bringing 4s. per bushel in 1712, and 3s. 6d. in 1721.[40]

Silver was generally weighed whenever it was exchanged because of the habit of "clipping" part of the coins and the failure of legislative efforts to stabilize its value (many types of silver money were circulating, English coin, New England coin, Spanish reals and Dutch dollars among the most important). In November, 1706, silver was officially valued at 17 pennyweight to the pound.[41] When Gould had occasion to borrow £25 "in mony" from his cousin John Perkins, in that year, he weighed it on his own scales when he returned home and noted that it "wanted about tenpence by my waights."[42]

---

[36] Weeden, I, 177.

[37] MS, p. 17.

[38] MS, p. 142.

[39] MS, p. 83.

[40] MS, pp. 141, 108, 89, 84, 90 in order by date.

— Cont'd in Avoire file —

Most transactions, however, not only in Topsfield, but throughout New England, although "reckoned" in terms of "money" as a standard of value, were actually settled in "pay," which signified either produce or services rendered. Gould's account book records his transactions in a roughly double entry system, where debits are recorded on the left-hand (even-numbered) pages, and credits on the right-hand (odd-numbered) pages. It was not uncommon for accounts to extend six or seven years before being "reckoned" in rural Topsfield.[43]

Between June 8, 1709 and April 19, 1720, Gould made a number of entries detailing his transactions with Mr. Samuel Symonds, a joiner who lived in Rowley Village, about a mile and a half due west of Topsfield Center.[44] The items document, in unusual detail, the range of products and the type of work that this furniture-maker was producing in the twilight of his long career.[45] Symonds was born in Salem, the son of the most significant joiner in that town, John Symonds. He moved to Rowley Village at about the time of his marriage in 1662-63, and died there in 1722.[46]

The items which Symonds made for Gould between 1710 and 1716 were: eight rakes, at 1s. each; three chests, one priced at 19s.; three tables, one priced at 18s.; three bedsteads, one priced at 10s.; Gould's father's coffin at 8s.; "John's wifes cofin" at 4s.; "one half bushell;" a "joynt stool and leafe to it" (a stool with an additional top which can be added to convert the stool into a table) billed in 1713, a late date and a rare mention of an American example in this furniture form; and "one pair of ¾ temples," which is a device used in weaving to keep cloth in the loom

---

[41] MS, p. 81.

[42] MS, p. 82.

[43] MS, pp. 8-9, 16-17, 32-33, 84-85, 92-93, 108-109, 142-143, *et passim.*

[44] Sidney Perley, *The Dwellings of Boxford* (Salem, 1893), p. 130.

[45] MS, pp. 30-33.

[46] Symonds also made wooden markers for the graves of Gould's father and mother. See the author's "A New Light on Early Grave Markers," *Essex Institute Historical Collections,* CIV (April, 1968), 127-129.

ve 105

stretched transversely.[47] Symonds also made "a frame" from which Gould hung his scales.

Gould once did business with Symonds in another context. When the town of Topsfield decided that the congregation had outgrown the old meeting house, Gould served on the committee to dispose of it. The building was bought by him for £5 and was moved to his farm, where it was used for a barn.[48] The interior wainscot he sold to Symonds in June, 1709, for 12 shillings.[49] It is possible that Symonds may have had a hand in installing this same woodwork many years earlier. It is certain that he had built the pulpit for this church in 1681/2.[50]

The Gould account book abounds in the names of other craftsmen who lived and worked in Topsfield during the first quarter of the eighteenth century. In 1721, for example, he bought "pully blocks" for his loom, a "wheel" for spinning linen at 8 shillings, and another for spinning wool at 6s. 6d. from Nathaniel Averill.[51] Averill was born in 1664 and has been known to history heretofore as a carpenter and as a partner with his brothers in the operation of the two family sawmills and a gristmill on Mile Brook in Topsfield.[52] The entries quoted above now establish for the first time that he was the member of this famous woodworking family who did the "turnery." This suggests that a chair, which has descended in the Averill family to its present owner (illustrated as Figure 5 in Dean A. Fales, Jr., *Essex County Furniture,* 1660-

---

[47] For definition of "temples" and other terms of the weaver's art, see Luther Hooper, *Weaving: Plain and Ornamental* (London, 1920), pp. 120-121, *et passim.*

[48] The author is indebted to Mrs. Charles Hadley (Lura Woodside) Watkins for pointing out this reference to him. The information, quoting George F. Dow, *History of Topsfield* (Topsfield, 1940), and Sidney Perley, "Topsfield in 1800," *Topsfield Historical Collections,* VII, is contained in letters to the author dated Dec. 16, 1967 and Jan. 14, 1968. Mrs. Watkins also assisted the author in collecting materials concerning Nathaniel Averill.

[49] MS, p. 30.

[50] Symonds was the most important joiner in the Rowley Village (Boxford)-Topsfield area. His commission to build the pulpit for the Topsfield meeting house is noticed in Dow, *History of Topsfield,* p. 248. When the selectmen of Boxford built their new church in 1702-3, they specified that its pulpit was to be "as good as Topsfield's." See Perley, *Boxford,* p. 127.

[51] MS, p. 33.

[52] Clara A. Avery, *The Averell-Averill-Avery Family* (n.p., n.d.), pp. 95-97. See also S. Gertrude Bradstreet, "The Cradle of the Averill Family," *Topsfield Historical Collections,* II (1896), 84, ff.

got

Averill / Gould

1860[53]), may have been made by Nathaniel Averill rather than by his father, William, with whom it has been associated.

Nathaniel Averill never refers to himself as a turner, or a chair-maker. In his will, dated April 24, 1741, he passes on his "shop tools, that is Carpenters and Joyners tools" to his sons, Jacob and Jeremiah, just as his father had passed his tools on to him in 1691.[54] Nathaniel Averill died in 1751.[55]

Samuel Smith was a carpenter, and in exchange for weaving services, shingled Gould's roof, mended his sled and tumbrill, and worked on Gould's "lean tue to my barn."[56] Samuel's brother, William, was a woodworker who also numbered blacksmithing among his accomplishments. He made such items as beetle rings, fetters, a shovel and an oven-lid for Gould.[57] Both Smiths were called 'cousin' by Gould, although the link in that generation is uncertain. A relationship in the next generation, however, is well known. Priscilla, the daughter of Gould's brother, Zaccheus, married Samuel Smith. They were the great-grandparents of Joseph Smith, founder of the Mormon Church.[58]

Gould had an active relationship with "Uncle Andrew" and "Ant Andrew,"[59] who may have been John Andrews, Sr., and his wife, Patience. He was a carpenter, but his wife apparently served the community as a tailor.[60] Their son, John, followed his mother's trade, and these rural tailors are revealed to have done many things besides the traditional cutting of garments for the ladies of the household to stitch.

Patience Andrew knit leggings (at 2s.3d.); made "stays" (a type of under-garment) for Gould's wife and daughter, Hannah; "britches" (1s. 6d.) for Gould and his son, Daniel; a gown for his daughter Lydia; a "riding hood" for Hannah and one for Sarah, at 4s. each.[61] She also spun wool, which she sold to Gould, in one

---

[53] Salem: The Essex Institute, 1965.

[54] Anon. auth., "The Will of William Averill," *Topsfield Historical Collections*, XVII (1913), 58, 61.

[55] Records, Essex County Probate Court docket #A-1057.

[56] MS, pp. 14-17.

[57] MS, pp. 19-20.

[58] Gould, *Ancestry*, p. 126, ff.

[59] MS, p. 7.

[60] MS, pp. 6, 7, 9, 13, 20, 21, and 34. Savage, I, 54, records the marriage of John Andrews of Hingham to Patience Nichols in September, 1685.

[61] MS, p. 34.

instance about the year 1704, "spining five pound and 3 quarters of wool" for 5s. 9d. She also may have spun worsted for him.[62] John Andrews, Jr. (called "Cozen" by Gould) did mostly "cutting out work," but he also covered stays (1s. 8d.) and once made a mantle for Sarah (2s. 6d.).[63]

Gould also had some tailoring done by Mrs. Isaac Peabody, who made a "westcoat" for him in 1703 (1s. 6d.) and "two jackets at 1s. 3d. a pease."[64]

William Towne, whose son Gideon later married Hannah Gould, was a wheelwright from whom Gould purchased a pair of cartwheels sometime between 1704 and 1707 for 1li. 4s. Towne mended one of these wheels in 1712 for 2s. 6d.[65]

Gould maintained a virtually self-sustaining household, as far as food was concerned. There were a few commodities, however, that he did not produce, such as salt, sugar, tobacco, fish and hops. He also made no cheese, and an amusing reference to that food occurs in September 1703 when he relates that he:

> received of Mr. [John?] Bradstreet at one time 4 pound and a half of Cheese [at] 4 d the pound and at the same time an other Cheese very full of magots: at an other time received 26 pound at 4 d the pound but one of them was allmost as full of magots as that abouesd Cheese.[66]

Aided by his sons, Gould grew and occasionally sold turnips, oats, peas, corn, veal, beef, mutton, and butter. He also grew barley, which, with his home-baked malt, no doubt found its way into the family beer barrel. From time to time, he also rented out his cider mill.[67]

Some services, however, were not to be procured in Topsfield, for in 1710, he notes that he paid 1s. 3d. to have his gun mended in Boston.[68] Indeed, Gould mentions trips to Andover, Marblehead, Salem, Rowley and Ipswich on various occasions. Boston seems to have been the greatest distance he ever travelled from Topsfield.

---

[62] MS, pp. 7, 9.

[63] MS, p. 34.

[64] MS, p. 145.

[65] MS, p. 27.

[66] MS, p. 21.

[67] MS, pp. 70, 71, 144, *et passim.*

[68] MS, p. 85.

Gould was an officer in the militia company, as his father and grandfather had been before him, and the regimental muster was a social event which was not to be missed. His father, although declining in health, accompanied Gould to the muster in Ipswich in 1705 and Gould notes that the old gentleman borrowed 3s. 5d. at that time.[69]

Gould must often have carried his book with him, for in 1708, when his daughter Sarah was ill, he made a note "at the pothicaries" on how to prepare a remedy for her. It consisted of taking "one bunch of yellow gentry [gentian] to be steept in half a pint of bear [beer] twice and then throw it away."[70]

V

What insight does the Gould account book afford us into the production of wool and linen and their use in early eighteenth-century Topsfield?

It has been estimated that there were 3,000 sheep in the Massachusetts Bay Colony by 1652.[71] However, by the second decade of the eighteenth century, the fencing of common lands throughout Massachusetts may have diminished the number of sheep considerably.[72]

The early years of Gould's flock are well documented in the account book.

> In the year 97 I took goodwife Carys sheep there was two
> old ewes and two young ewes and one wether and they had
> two lambs the next year beside one that she gave to my boys
> har share of it
>
> in the year 99 I and goodwife cary had 13 sheep and 8 lambs
> I have 5 and goodwife cary 3 lambs
>
> father G[ould] Joseph & Thomas have 29 old Sheep & 17
> lambs
>
> Brother Byxby hath 13 Sheep and 5 lambs so that there is
> 85 in all beside Sam Smiths Ram.[73]

An additional entry, slightly later than the above, but undated, states:

---

[69] MS, p. 107.

[70] MS, p. 83.

[71] Weeden, I, 193.

[72] Weeden, I, 495.

[73] MS, p. 149. "Goodwife Cary" resists identification. She does not appear on the list of "Members of the Church in Topsfield," N E G R, XVI (1862), 212, ff.

> the number of everybodys sheep Brother Bixby had 18
> sheep and 7 lambs 25 father had 4 sheep no lambs
> Thomas 7 sheep 2 lambs 9 all Joseph had 20 Sheep 7
> lambs 27 all I had 14 sheep 6 lambs 20 all So that there
> is 85 in all.[74]

In 1706, Gould paid Patience Andrew 9d. for three fourths of a pound of sheep's wool,[75] and in 1700 he bought one "bottom" of woolen yarn at 1s. 3d.[76] Gould's family spun no worsted, but on occasion he would buy it from John Andrews, Sr.[77] In doing some tailoring of his own, Gould once billed Nathaniel Ramsdell for "thread and woosted to make . . . your coat."[78]

Only once is shearing mentioned: on May 22, 1707, Gould billed "Uncle" Andrew for "shearing sheep 1s. 8d."[79]

At the turn of the century, Gould bought un-spun flax at the rate of a shilling per pound.[80] About twenty years later, he sold six pounds of flax at 4s. and thirty pounds at 1 li., indicating that its price had not altered during that time.[81]

Entries made in the account book by Daniel Gould, following the death of his father, indicate that John was a wealthy man. Daniel was apparently his father's executor and primary heir. One son, Nathaniel, had elected to receive his share of the estate in money and was paid £130.[82] Undoubtedly Daniel had received twice that, as was the custom. The other sons must have received value equal to Nathaniel's, and bequests to the daughters would have run the value of the estate well over £1000. That such a wealthy man had been a craftsman also might seem strange to the modern mind. In the age and tradition in which John Gould was raised, it would have been unusual had it been otherwise.

A question much more to the point is "Does a shred of the many yards of cloth John Gould wove still survive, and can it be identified?" The answer is "probably not." But the suggestion which his account book gives us of the life of Topsfield in his time guarantees him a place of significance in American social history.

---

[74] MS, p. 150.

[75] MS, p. 107.

[76] MS, p. 8.

[77] MS, p. 9.

[78] MS, p. 142.

[79] MS, p. 13.

[80] MS, pp. 4, 8.

[81] MS, p. 73.

[82] MS, pp. 71, 72.

GORTON, Samuel (1672-1721) & Elizabeth **COLLINS** (1672-1724); 9 May 1695; Warwick, RI
GORTON, Thomas & Agnes **GRIMSHAW**; Manschester, Eng, 14 Sep 1612; Portsmouth, RI
GOSARD/GODARD, Nicholas & Elizabeth _?_; b 1672/3; Simsbury, CT
GAZEAU/GEFFEERE/GOSIER/?GEFFREY, Bastian & Elizabeth _?_; b 1686, b 1687, b 1689, b 1690; Boston
GOSLING/GOSLEE/GOSLINE/?GORSLINE, Henry (-1724) & Mary **FOX**, Glastonbury; 25 Feb 1694/5; Glastenbury, CT
GOSMER, John & Elizabeth **WOODRUFF**; St. Mary, Northgate, Eng, 24 Oct 1611; Southampton, LI
GOSS, James & Elizabeth _?_, m/2 John **FOST/FOSS** 1687, m/3 James **EMERY**; b 1687 (see James **GOFFE**); NH
GOSS, John (-1644, 1645?) & Sarah _?_, m/2 Robert **NICHOLS** 1644+; b 1631; Watertown
GOSS, Philip (-1698) & 1/wf Hannah [**HOPKINS**] (1657-), dau William, m/2 John **MURRAY**; b 1677, div 1690; Boston
GOSS, Philip (-1698) & 2/wf Mary **PRESCOT** (1669-), m/2 John **HOUGHTON**, Jr. 1698; 29 Mar 1690; Concord/Lancaster
GOSS, Philip (1677-1747) & Judith **HAYWARD** (1675-1745); 30 Aug 1699; Concord/Lancaster/Brookfield
GOSS, Richard & 1/wf _?_; b 1662
GOSS, Richard & Jane (**WILFORD**) [**PIVERLY**], w Thomas; aft 30 Jun 1670; Portsmouth, NH
GOSS, Richard (1662-1715) & [Martha **FOSS**]; ca 1695/1700?, by Dec 1693; Gloucester
GOSS, Robert & Jane **BERRY**; 5 Jan 1692/3; Dover, NH
GOSSWELL, Adam & Abigail **WISE**; 19 Nov 1686; Ipswich
GOSWELL, Jonathan & _?_; b 1687; Ipswich
GOSWELL, William & _?_; b 1688; Ipswich
GOTT, Charles^1 (-1668) (called cousin of Andrew^2 **MANSFIELD**) & Gift **PALMER** (-1668+) (?m/2 Mary _?_ (no)); St. Andrew the Great, Cambridge, 30 Oct 1625; Salem
GOTT, Charles^2 (1639-1708) & 1/wf Sarah **DENNIS** (-1665); 12 Nov 1659; Wenham
GOTT, Charles^2 (1639-1708) & 2/wf Lydia **CLEARKE/CLARK** (-1717/18); 25 Dec 1665; Lynn/Wenham
GOTT, Charles^3 (1662-1708) & Elizabeth [**WARNER**] (1666-); b 1696, b 1686; Wenham
GOTT, Daniel^2 (1646-1715+) & Elizabeth **MORRIS** (1643-), dau of Thos. **MORRIS** (relation of John **MANSFIELD**'s wf); 2 Jan 1665/6; Lynn/Wenham
GOTT, John^3 (1668-1723) & Rebecca **TARBOX** (1672-), m/2 William **FAIRFIELD**; 19 Jul 1693; Salem
GOTT, Samuel^3 & Margaret **ANDROSS/ANDREWS** (-1716); m int 26 Jun 1697; Wenham
GOUGE, James, Wells & Hannah **EMMONS**; 10 Feb 1691/2; Charlestown/Wells, ME
GOOG, William (-1646) & Ann _?_; b 1640? Lynn
GOULD, Adam (-1748?) & Rebecca **COOPER**; ?15 Sep 1677, ?16 Sep 1677, ?17 Sep 1677, 15 Aug; Salem/Groton/Woburn
GOULD, Adam, Groton & Hannah **KNIGHT**, Woburn; 28 Sep 1687; Woborn/Groton
GOULD, Alexander & Margaret [**BROWN**], m/2 Morris **CHAMBLET**; b 1659; Pemaquid, ME
GOULD, Benjamin & Elizabeth [**ROBINSON**] (1662-1745); ca 1680/4?; Guilford, CT
GOULD, Benjamin (1669-) & Elizabeth _?_ (1664-1745); [ca 1690?]
GOULD/GOLD, Benjamin & Mary **DINLEY/DINSLY**; 5 May 1698, 16 Apr 1698; Boston
GOULD, Benjamin & Elizabeth _?_; b 1701; Martha's Vineyard
GOULD, Daniel/David (1665-1716, ae 90) & Wait **COGGESHALL** (1636-1718, ae 84); 18 Aug 1651, 18 Dec 1651; Portsmouth, RI/Newport
GOULD, Daniel (1656-1694) & Mary [**CLARKE**] (1661-1711), m/2 Ralph **CHAPMAN**; ca 1680, b 1681(2?); Newport
GOLD, Daniel (-1697) & Dorcas **BELCHER** (1656-1730(9) in Stoneham); b 1685; Reading/Charlestown
GOLD, Edward (1607-) & Margaret [**BACON**?], w George; b 1644; Hingham/Boston
GOULD, Edward (1651-) & _?_; ca 1670/80?; Star Island
GOLE/GOOLE?/GOLD?, Francis & Rose/?Mary _?_; b 1649(50?); Braintree/Dunstable
GOLD, Henry & Sarah **WARR/WARD**; 20 Sep 1675, 24 Sep 1675; Ipswich
GOULD, James (1666-) & Catharine [**CLARKE**] (1671-1752), m/2 Nathaniel **SHEFFIELD**; b 1696; Newport
GOULD, James & 1/wf Deborah _?_; b 1691(2?); Salem

GOOLD, Jarvis (1605-1656) & Mary _?_; b 1646; Boston/Hingham
GOULD, Jeremiah/Jeremy? & Priscilla **GROVER**; in Eng, 27 Nov 1604; Weymouth/Newport
GOULD, John (1610-) & 1/wf Grace _?_ (1610-); in Eng, b 1635; Charlestown
GOULD, John (1610-1690/1) & 2/wf? Mary _?_ (-1642); b 1636?, b 1637; Charlestown
GOULD, John (1610-1690/1) & Joanna _?_ (1608-1697); b 1644; Charlestown
GOULD, John (1635-1710) & Sarah **BAKER** (1641-1709); 14 Oct 1660, 12 Oct, 14 Oct; Ipswich
GOULD, John (-1712) & Abigail [**BELCHER**] (1653±-1657); b 1671; Reading/Charlestown
GOULD, John (-1680+) & Margaret [**HAST**] (-1671+), w Edward; b 1671
GOULD, John (1646-1711) & Mary **CROSSMAN** (1655-); 24 Aug 1673, 21 Aug, 24 Aug; Taunton
GOULD, John & Sarah [**EXTELL**]; b 1680; CT/LI/Elizabeth, NJ
GOULD, John (1662-1724) & Phebe **FRENCH** (1667-1718); 10 Nov 1684; Topsfield
GOULD, John (1659-1704) & Sarah **PRIOR** (1664-1714+), m/2 Walter **CLARK** 31 Aug 1711; 25 Jan 1685/6, 30 Aug 1686; Matinecock, LI
GOULD/GOOLL, John (-1689) & Elizabeth **CUMMINGS**, ?m/2 William **BRUCE** 1693; 2 Jul 1686; Dunstable
GOULD/GOLD, John (-1712) & 2/wf Martha **REDINGTON** (1655-); b 1691; Reading/Charlestown
GOULD, John (1671-) & Sarah _?_; b 1695; Charlestown
GOULD/GOOLD, John (1672-1762) & Lydia **JACOB** (19 Apr 1687-1742); 17 Jan 1698/9; Hingham/Hull
GOULD, Joseph (-1710) & Bethia **RAYE** (1662-), m/2 Joseph **HUTCHINSON** 1710; 12 May 1685, 22 May; Salem
GOLD, Nathan (-1693) & Elizabeth _?_ (-1692+); b 1650, b 1659?; Salisbury
GOULD, Richard (1662-) & Cruft _?_; in Eng, b 1693; Branford
GOOLD, Robert & 1/wf ?Mehitable/Experience/Elizabeth? [**BOSWORTH**] (bpt 1638, 1647 (no)-1681); b 1667, ca 1666; Hull/Hingham
GOULD, Robert & 2/wf Judith [**HARVY/HERVEY**] (1 Sep 1650-1734), w Wm.?, aft 7 Jun 1689, ca 1687, by 1695; Hull/Reading
GOULD, Robert (1667?-) & Jane (**HARRIS**) [**SMITH**], w John; b 1692; Hull
GOULD/GOOLE, Samuel, Dunstable & Mehitable **BARRETT** (1668-); 17 Mar 1680; Chelmsford/Dunstable
GOLD, Samuel & Sarah **ROWELL**; 6 Apr 1693; Amesbury
GOLD, Samuel & Elizabeth [**THORNDIKE**] (1670-); b 1695; Beverly/Hopkinton
GOULD, Samuel (1670-1724) & Margaret **STONE** (1678-); 20 Apr 1697; Topsfield
GOLD, Samuel & Mary **CRISP** (1678-); 1 Dec 1700; Eastham?/Topsfield?
GOULD, Thomas (1607-) & Mary _?_; b 1639; Cambridge
GOULD, Thomas & Hannah [**MILLER**?] (-1647); b 1641; Charlestown
GOULD, Thomas & ?Hannah _?_; ?b 1652, ca 1667?; Charlestown
GOULD, Thomas (-1674) & 2/wf Mary (?**HARRIS**) [**HAYWARD?/HOWARD?**]; b 1654; Charlestown
GOULD, Thomas (-1693) & Elizabeth (**BALSTON**) [**COGGESHALL**] (-1696+), div wf of John; 1655?; South Kingston, RI/Wishford, RI
GOOLD, Thomas (-1662) & Francis **ROBINSON** (-1671?, Guilford, CT); 10 Sep 1656; Boston
GOULD, Thomas (-1690) & Elizabeth _?_; b 1662/3; Salem
GOLD, Thomas & Experience [**SUMNER**] (1664-), m/2 Eleazer **CARVER** 1695; b 1687; Boston
GOULD, Thomas & Frances _?_; b 1685, b 1687; Boston
GOULD, Thomas (1655-1734) & Elizabeth **MOTT** (1672-1749); 13 Mar 1689/90; ?Newport, RI
GOULD, Thomas & Abigail [**NEEDHAM**] (1671-); b 1692; Salem
GOLD, Thomas (1667-1752) & 1/wf Mercy/Marcy **YATES** (?1675-); 2 Dec 1700; Eastham
GOULD, Thomas & [?Mercy **SUMNER**]; b 1701; Topsfield
GOLD, William & Mercy **HARRIS**; 16 Apr 1699; Boston
GOULD, Zaccheus (1589-1668, 1670?) & Phebe [**DEACON**] (-1663); in Eng, b 1620; Ipswich/Plymouth
GOULD, Zaccheus & _?_; b 1650; Lynn
GOULDER, Frances (-1664) & _?_; b 1650(1?); Plymouth
GOVE, Ebenezer (1670-) & Judith **SANBORN** (1675-); 20 Dec 1692; Hampton, NH
GOVE, Edward (-1691) (called "brother" of Nehemiah **PARTRIDGE**) & Hannah [**PARTRIDGE/TITCOMB**?] (-1712); b 1661; Hampton
GOVE, John (-1648) & 1/wf [Sarah **MOTT**?] (1601-); in Eng, ca 1625; Charlestown

Pope's Pioneers of Massachusetts by Charles Henry Pope pp 194-5

GOULD, GOOLD, GOLD,

Edward, ae. 22, came in the Elizabeth April 9, 1635. Settled at Hingham; pail-maker. Had land grant at Boston in 1657. Wife Margaret; ch. Hannah b. March 12, 1643, (m. Samuel Hobart,) Sarah b. in 16'8, Sarah bapt. Nov. 29, 1658, (m. Nov. 29, 1675, Arthur Cain.) The wife d. 6 Feb. 1682.
He d. 16 Feb. 1684-5.

Francis, Boston, a watchman, before the Court 3 (7) 1639.
Francis, Duxbury, atba. 1643.
Francis, Braintree; wife Rose; ch. Martha b. 18 (12) 1649, Mary b. 23 (10) 1651, Martha b. 15 (8) 1654, John b. 2 (6) 1657, Samuel b. 12 (6) 1658.

Goodman, Reading, propr. 1650.

Jarvis, shoemaker, ae. 30, came in the Elizabeth in April, 1635. Settled at Hingham; propr. 1636. Rem. to Boston. Wife Mary memb. chh. of Hing.; ch. John bapt. at Bo. 30 (6) 1646, ae. about 33 days, Joseph bapt. 25 (1) 1649-50.
He d. 27 (3) 1656; admin. gr. 4 July folg.

Jeremiah, Weymouth, propr. before 1644; rem. to Rhode Island. Attorney for Wm. Coddington in 1640, and for Henry Sandis in 1646. [Suff. De. and A.]

brother

John, husbandman, ae. 25, with wife Grace, ae. 25, cert. from Towcester, co. Northampton, Eng., came in the Defense in July, 1635. He may be the

John, carpenter, Charlestown, frm. May 2, 1638. Wife Mary adm. chh 8 (11) 1636; she d. at Ten Hills Farm, Char. 14 (3) 1647. [W.] With wife Joane he sold land at Malden in 1658. He deposed in 1658, ae. about 47 years. Ch. John b. 1646, d. 1647, John b. 14 (3) 1647.
He d. March 21, 1690-1. Will dated 3 Jan. 1688, prob. 19 June, 1691, beq. to sons John and Daniel Gould and John Birbin; to gr. son Thomas G.

Nathan, in New England, legatee of his mother, Judith, of Watford, Eng., widow, by her will prob. 3 Sept. 1650; had rec'd. beq. from his bro. Zaccheus G. [Reg. XLIX, 267.] He was propr. at Salisbury, 1652. Wife Elizabeth; ch. Mary b. June 24, 1661, Elizabeth b. April 4, 1664, Samuel b. Feb. 3, 1667-8, Joseph b. Aug. 28, 1670, Hannah b. May 13, 1675.
He made will Dec. 12, 1692, prob. Sept. 27, 1693; wife Elizabeth.

Zaccheus' nephew? This does not agree with Ackly-Bosworth genealogy, for Pope does not cover Connecticut

Thomas, Charlestown, adm. chh. with wife Hannah 7 (4) 1640. He deposed 6 (2) 1652, ae. about 45 years. [Mdx. Files.] Seth Sweetser calls him brother. Ch. Hannah bapt. 11 (2) 1641, Jacob b. (rec. at Cambridge,) Sept. 16, 1643. He was opposed to the baptism of infants, and came under the discipline of the church in consequence; was expelled, and became the leader in the formation of the Anti-pedo-baptist (since called Baptist) church of Boston about 1665.
His will prob. 30 April, 1674, beq. to wife Mary, son Samuel, daus. Mary Skinner, Mehetable —, Mary Bunker, Abigail Shapley and Hannah Gold; son Nathaniel Hayward and his 2 children; gr. ch. Mary Skinner, Thomas G., the 2 ch. of Mary Bunker and the 2 ch. of Abigail Shapley.

ours

Zaccheus, husbandman, Lynn, headed a petition that husbandmen be excused from training in seedtime and harvest; dated 7 (8) 1640. [L.] Rem. to Ipswich; sold land at Weymouth which had belonged to Jeremy Gould 26 (9) 1644. Rem. to Topsfield. He deposed in 1661, ae. about 72 years. His wife Phebe d. 20 (9) 1663. Ch. [Phebe, (m. Thomas Perkins,) Mary, (m. John Reddington,) Martha, (m. John Newmarch.) [So stated by the Genealogy of the Family.]

THE
NEW ENGLAND
HISTORICAL AND GENEALOGICAL
REGISTER

In the early 1900's this periodical published necrologies of prominent members of their society who died. Here is a sample of Gould descendants, ~~two of whom were also Averill descendants as well.~~

Vol 82:100

Charles Albert Gould, of New York City, a Pilgrim Tercentenary member since 1921, was born at Batavia, N. Y., 13 January 1849, the son of William Wallace and Electa M. (Pratt) Gould, and died in New York City 6 January 1926.

He was a descendant of Zaccheus[1] Gould, one of the first settlers of Topsfield, Mass., through Capt. John[2] of Topsfield, a soldier in King Philip's War, Zaccheus,[3] 1672–1739, of Topsfield, Eliezer,[4] Bezaleel,[5] 1756–1818, a Revolutionary soldier, Orphir,[6] 1781–1868, Jedediah,[7] who was born 7 November 1804, married Nancy Chamberlain, and died at East Pembroke, N Y., 22 May 1869, and William Wallace,[8] his father, who was born 7 March and married 27 October 1847 Electa M. Pratt.

e was educated in the public schools and was prepared for college, but financial reverses led him, in 1869, to become an accountant in Buffalo, N. Y. He was deputy postmaster of Buffalo in 1878 and 1879 and collector of customs there from 1880 to 1884. He was president of the Gould Coupler Company of Depew, N. Y., of the Gould Realty Company of New York City, and of the Gould Storage Battery Company.

He was a member of the Order of the Founders and Patriots of America, the Society of Colonial Wars, the Society of Sons of the Revolution, and the Metropolitan Museum of Art. Among his clubs were the Union League and New York Yacht Clubs.

He married at Batavia, N. Y., 1 September 1869, Julia Adelaide Stocking, who survives him, daughter of Abraham and Henrietta Maria (Colton) Stocking. They had four children: Henry Colton Moulton, Charles Stocking, William S., and Celia Adelaide (now Mrs. George G. Milne of Rye, N. Y.).

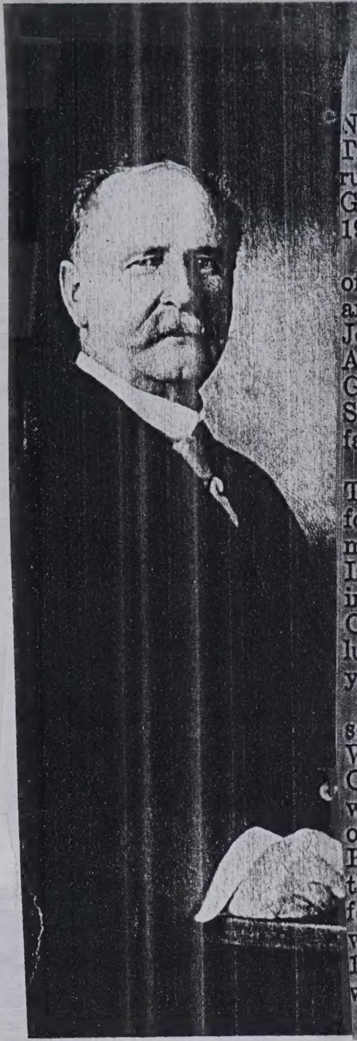
Vol 97: 382

Mrs. Henry Franklin Murray (Ruth Mabel Gould), of Topsfield, Mass elected an annual member 6 May 1941, was born in Topsfield 31 March 188 daughter of Herbert Walter and Laura Anna (Conley) Gould, and died 20 Augus 1942, in Topsfield.

She was descended from Zaccheus[1] Gould, who came from Hemel Hempstead Hertfordshire, England, about 1639, to Weymouth, Mass., and later lived i Lynn and Ipswich, and was one of the original settlers of Topsfield in 1644, bor in 1589, and married Phebe, daughter of Thomas Deacon, and died in 1668 through John,[2] 1635–1709, and his wife Sarah Baker, married 1660; Thomas, 1666–1752, and Mercy Summer, married 1700; Lieut. Thomas,[4] 1701–1771, an Mary Gould (his first cousin once removed), married 1731; Thomas,[5] 1732–177 and Anne Perkins, married 1757; Andrew,[6] 1777–1844, and Pamelia Kinne married 1799; Andrew,[7] 1805–1896, and Mary Prudence Lake, married 182 Herbert Walker,[8] 1848–1922, and Laura Anna Conley, married 1871.

Ruth Mabel Gould married, 19 September 1906, at Beverly, Mass., Henry Fran lin Murray, born in Beverly 14 June 1879. She had graduated from the Bever High School and Beverly Teachers Training School. She became a member of C Ebenezer Francis Chapter, D.A.R.; the Lothrop Club of Beverly and the Friend Garden Club. They had one daughter: Eunice Gould Murray, born 9 Janua 1909, graduate Tufts College, A.B. 1930, and married.

Two Gould / Averill lines below



GEORGE LAMBERT GOULD

By Arthur Holbrook Wellman, M.A., LL.B., of Topsfield, Mass.

George Lambert Gould, of Topsfield, Mass., a member of the New England Historic Genealogical Society since 1896 and its Treasurer since February 1918, was born at Woburn, Mass., 6 February 1852, the son of John Averell and Elizabeth Cheever (Leach) Gould, and died at his winter residence in Malden, Mass., 30 October 1921.

He was a descendant of Zaccheus[1] Gould, one of the first settlers of Topsfield, through Capt. John,[2] John,[3] Solomon,[4] John,[5] John,[6] and John Averell,[7] his father, and also in another line through Capt. John,[2] Capt. Joseph,[3] Capt. Joseph,[4] Mary,[5] who married Elijah Averell, and Mary Averell, who married his grandfather, John[6] Gould. Among his other ancestors were Gov. Thomas Dudley, Gov. Simon and Anne (Dudley) Bradstreet, and Ezekiel Cheever, the famous school-teacher of early New England.

His great-great-grandfather, Joseph[4] Gould, was captain of the Topsfield company that marched to Lexington on 19 April 1775, forming part of Col. John Baker's regiment, and later he became a major in that regiment; and another great-great-grandfather, Lieut. Isaac Averell, and a great-grandfather, John[5] Gould, also took part in the conflict on that memorable day. Another great-grandfather, Capt. Benjamin Leach, commanded a small privateer in the Revolutionary War, and was captured by the British and confined for three years in the old Mill Prison at Plymouth, England.

George Lambert Gould received his early education in the public schools of Woburn and Chelsea, Mass., his father having moved from Woburn to Chelsea in 1863. At the end of his second year in the Chelsea High School, in 1867, when he was fifteen years old, he went to work for his father, who was the proprietor of a paint and oil business in Boston. The building, at the corner of Water and Kilby Streets, in which the business was carried on, was burned in the great Boston fire in November 1872, but new quarters were found on India Street and later (1877) on Union Street. Mr. Gould was made a member of his father's firm, Gould & Company, on 1 January 1874; and on 31 December 1889 this firm was consolidated with the firm of A. L. Cutler & Company and the new company was

VOL. LXXVI. 1 Vol 70: Jan 1922

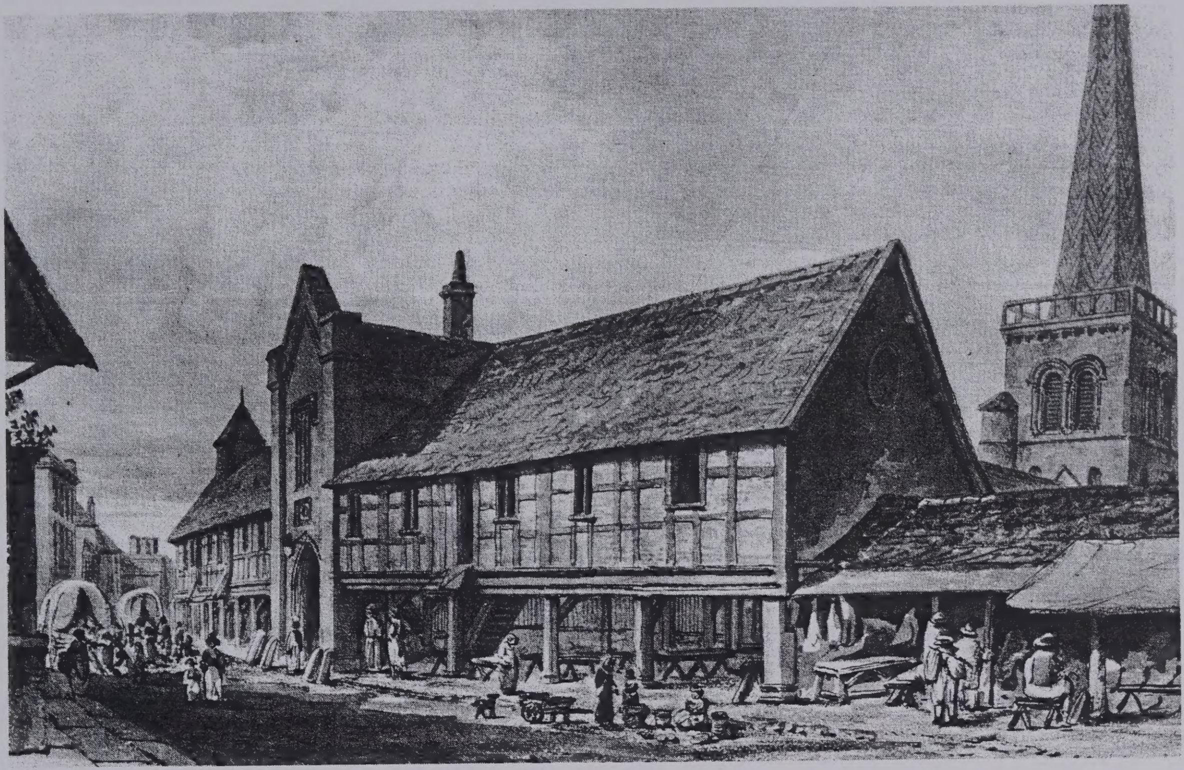
Did this man look like any of our Averill or Gould antecedents? We can only wonder!

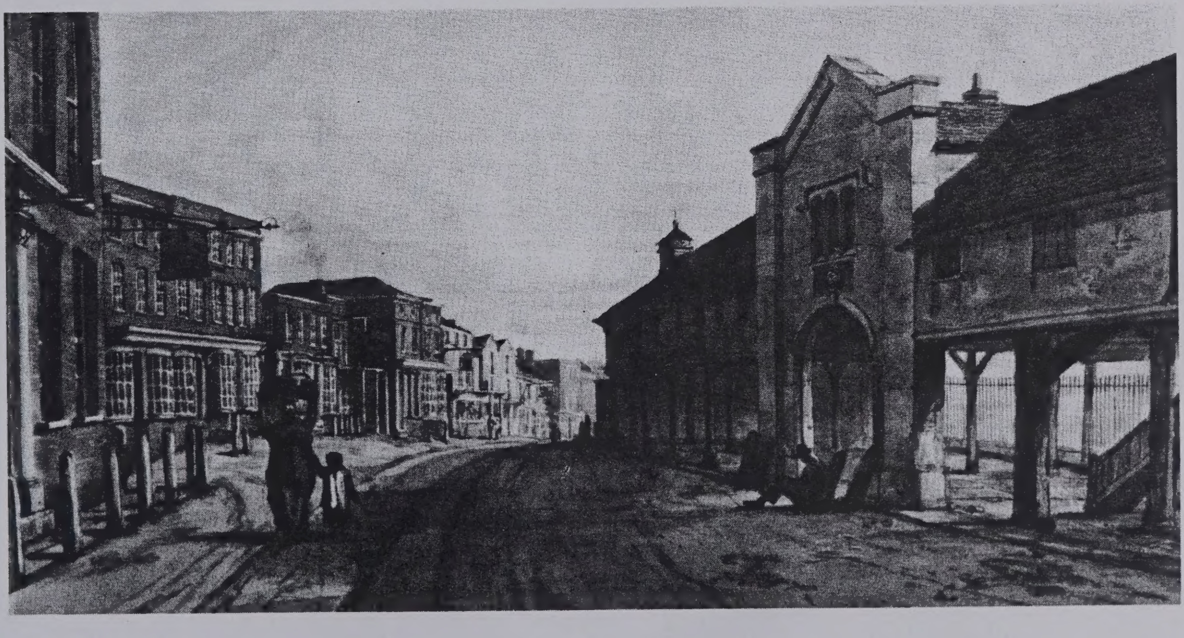
Vol 98: 265

Bertram Cheever Gould, of Topsfield, Mass., a Pilgrim Tercentenary mem- er by succession 30 Oct. 1921 upon the death of his father, George Lambert ould, was born in Malden, Mass., 17 March 1881, the son of George Lambert nd Lizzie Lawrence (Cooke) Gould, and died in Boston 29 Oct. 1943, his father aving been treasurer of this Society from February 1918 to January 1922.

Mr. Gould was a descendant of Zaccheus[1] Gould, one of the first settlers of Topsfield, through Capt. John,[2] John,[3] Solomon,[4] John,[5] John,[6] John Averill[7] and George Lambert,[8] his father, and also in another line through Capt. John,[2] Capt. Joseph,[3] Capt. Joseph,[4] Mary[5] who married Elijah Averill and Mary Averill who married his great grandfather John[6] Gould. Among his ancestors were Gov. Thomas Dudley, Gov. Simon and Anne (Dudley) Bradstreet, and Ezekiel Cheever, the famous chool teacher of early New England.

Bertram C. Gould was educated in Boston Latin School and at Holderness

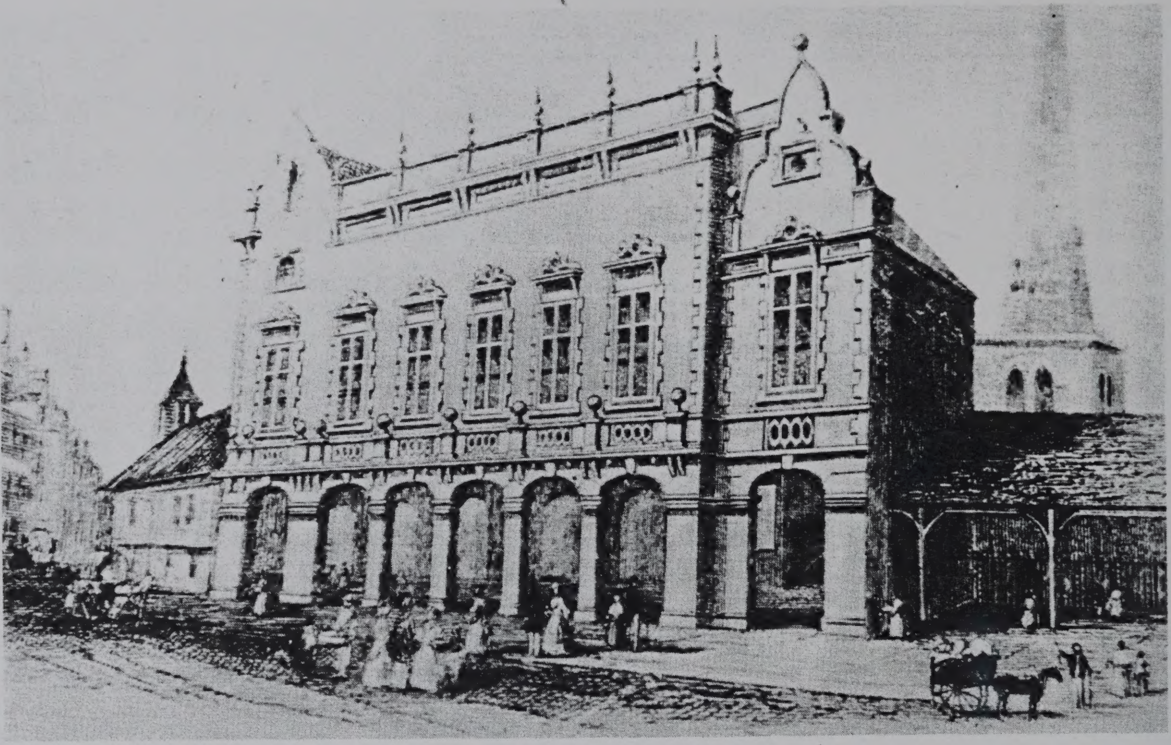


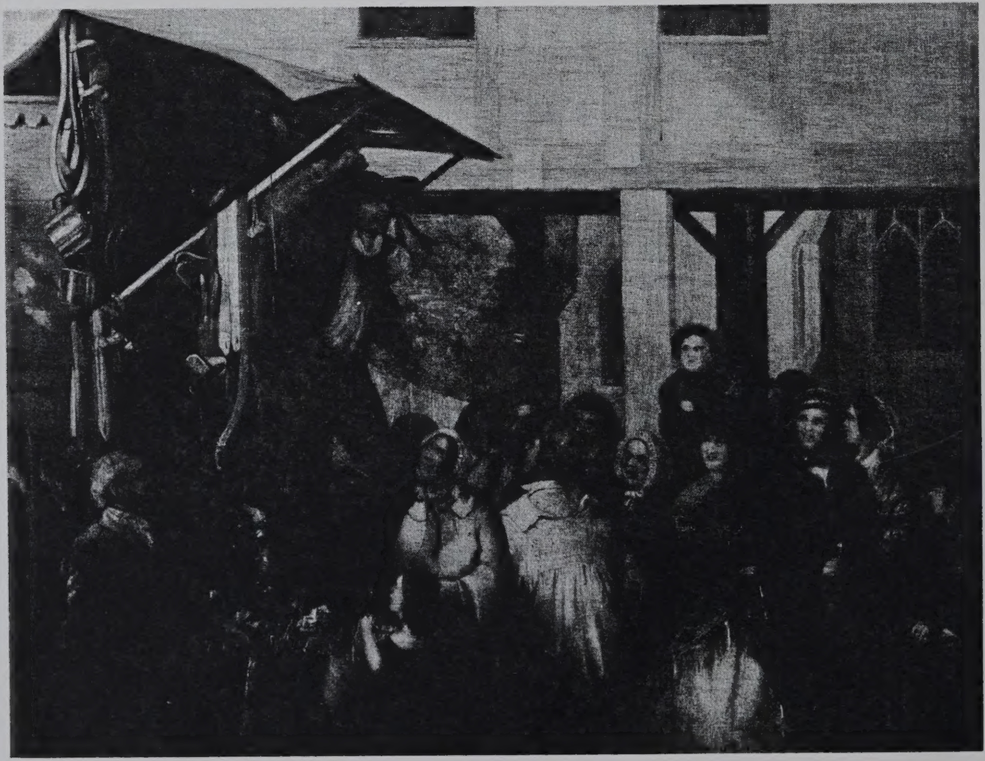


ABOVE: Hemel Hempstead Market House; one existed from the end of the 16th. century. The Butchers' Shambles were at the north end. The front group belonged to the Bailiwick, the back to the church. The Women's Market House or Butter Market was to the south of the main building.

BELOW: The old town hall, Hemel Hempstead.

(Hemel Hempstead Local History and Records Society.)





ABOVE: The New Town Hall of 1851 was designed by George Lowe.

BELOW: Market trader outside the old Market House at Hemel – from a painting by Cranstone.

(Averill Ancestors)

Family Record

Family No.

Whipple ① (In England) Surname

Father – Matthew WHIPPLE (the Elder)

Event	Day Month Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth	ca 1560	Bocking	Essex	England	(Northern suburb of Braintree)	
Death	(will 19 Dec 1616 proved 28 Jan 1618)	"	"	"	His brother John also came to	
Buried	16 Jan 1618/9	St Mary's Church, Bocking			Ipswich with wife Sarah Hawkins	
Married	1582					

Occupation Clothier Military Church Puritan

Places Lived

Other Wives

His Father's Name Thomas Whipple

His Mother's Maiden Name

Mother – Joan

Event	Day Month Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth	ca 1562				(Many church records in the area	
Death					were burned, making it almost	
Buried	19 May 1612	St Mary's Church, Bocking			impossible to learn her last name.)	

Occupation Military Church Puritan

Places Lived

Other Husbands

See Hawkins sheet, separate

Her Father's Name

Her Mother's Maiden Name

Children (All the English marriages were in Bocking) The only 2 sons emigrated to America

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day Month Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
	1. Anna Whipple	Birth bp	1 Sep 1583	Bocking	Essex	England	
		Death	16				
	Spouse – John Pepper	Married	13 Jan 1605/6	"			
	2. Margaret Whipple (2 children)	Birth bp	28 Mar 1585/6	"			
		Death	13 Feb 1608	"			
	Spouse – Lawrence Arthur (15 – ca 1635)	Married	5 July 1603	"			
	3. Joanna Whipple (5 Children)	Birth bp	3 Sep 1587	"			
		Death	16	"			
	Spouse – ① Henry Cadman (– d bef 1636) ② Nicholas Ives, widower, shoemaker (–)	Married	① 6 May 1613 ② 16 May 1636	"			
+	4. Matthew Whipple Jr. (Sr. in America)	Birth	ca 1590	"			
		Death	28 Sep 1647	Ipswich,		Mass. Bay Colony	
	Spouse – ① Alice Hawkins (– 1643) ② Rose (Baxter) Chute	Married	① 7 May 1622 ② 13 Nov 1643	Bocking Ipsw.			
	5. Jane Whipple	Birth	bp 03 Sep 1592	Bocking			
		Death	after 1638+	"			
	Spouse – ① Edward Frost ② John Wallys, a widower	Married	① 15 Apr 1619 ② 17 Apr 1626	"			
	6. Elizabeth Whipple	Birth bp	4 Apr 1594	"			
		Death	16	"			
	Spouse – Isaac Green	Married	3 Sep 1618	"			
	7. (Deacon) John Whipple (Taverner & agent for Gov. Saltonstall-MA Bay Col.)	Birth bp	29 Aug 1596	"			
		Death	30 June 1669	Ipswich		Mass. Bay Colony	
	Spouse – ① Susanna (Stacy or Clark) ② Jenett( ) wid of Thos Dickinson of Rowley	Married	① 1620 ② after 1662	Rowley ?			
	8. Mary Whipple	Birth	ca 1599	Bocking			
		Death	16	"			
	Spouse – Richard Baker	Married	9 May 1625	"			
	9. Amy Whipple	Birth bp	20 Jan 1604/5	"			
		Death	16	"			
	Spouse – William Horton	Married	31 Oct 1626	"			
	10.	Birth					
		Death					
	Spouse –	Married					

☐ Additional children listed on the reverse side.

In the circles, identify by number your sources of information — then list each on the reverse side.

No.

(Averill Ancestors)

Family Record

Family No.

Hawkins/Whipple
Surname
(In England) (1a)

Father – John HAWKINS

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth			15	Braintree	Essex	England	(Oldest son & heir)	
Death			1619	Bocking	"	"		
Buried								
Married	dates unk.				"	"		

Occupation A chief inhabitant of Bocking and trustee for the poor Church Puritan?

Places Lived

Other Wives (2) - see below - name of first wife unknown

His Father's Name John Hawkins of Braintree

His Mother's Maiden Name

Mother – wife #2 = Mary LEVITT (unknown whether she was mother)

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth			15					
Death			16	Bocking	Essex	England		
Buried								

Occupation Military Church

Places Lived

Other Husbands

Her Father's Name Levitt

Her Mother's Maiden Name

Children (Unknown which children had which mother)

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
	1. Eleanor Hawkins	Birth bp	6	Mar	1594/5	Bocking	Essex	England	
		Death							
	Spouse - died about 14 years	Married							
	2. Mary Hawkins	Birth		ca	1597	"			
		Death			16				
	Spouse - Matthew Wright	Married	8	Nov	1616	"			
	3. Sarah Hawkins	Birth		ca	1599	"			
		Death							
	Spouse - William Coppin	Married	26	Sep	1622	"			
+	4. Ann Hawkins	Birth		ca	1601	"			
		Death		ca	1644	Ipswich	Essex	Mass. Bay Colony	
	Spouse - Matthew Whipple (ca 1590-1647)	Married	7	May	1622	Bocking	"	England	
	5.	Birth							
		Death							
	Spouse -	Married							
	6.	Birth							
		Death							
	Spouse -	Married							
	7.	Birth							
		Death							
	Spouse -	Married							
	8.	Birth							
		Death							
	Spouse -	Married							
	9.	Birth							
		Death							
	Spouse -	Married							
	10.	Birth							
		Death							
	Spouse -	Married							

In the circles, identify by number your sources of information — then list each on the reverse side. ○

☐ Additional children listed on the reverse side.

(Averill Ancestors)

Family Record

Family No.

Whipple ②

Surname

Father — (Deacon) Matthew WHIPPLE

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		ca	1590	Bocking	Essex	England		
Death	28	Sep	1647	Ipswich	Hamlet (Chebacco Parish) (Now Hamilton)	Mass Bay Colony		
Buried								
Married	7	May	1622	St Mary's Church, Bocking				

Occupation Deacon. Cong. Church, office holder, farmer   Church Deacon - Puritan Church

Places Lived

Other Wives ② ca 1645/6 Rose(   ) Chute, (widow of Lionel Chute (d 1645) Ipswich) (of Dedham, Essex)

He must have died shortly after the marriage

His Father's Name Matthew Whipple "the Elder"

His Mother's Maiden Name Joan

Mother — Ann HAWKINS

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		ca	1601	Bocking	Essex	England		
Death		ca	1643	Ipswich Chebacco Parish (now Hamilton MA)		Mass Bay Colony		
Buried								

Occupation   Military   Church Puritan

Places Lived

Other Husbands

For children of Jacob & Elizabeth (Whipple) Perkins, See Perkins Family

Her Father's Name John Hawkins

Her Mother's Maiden Name

Children (May not be in order)

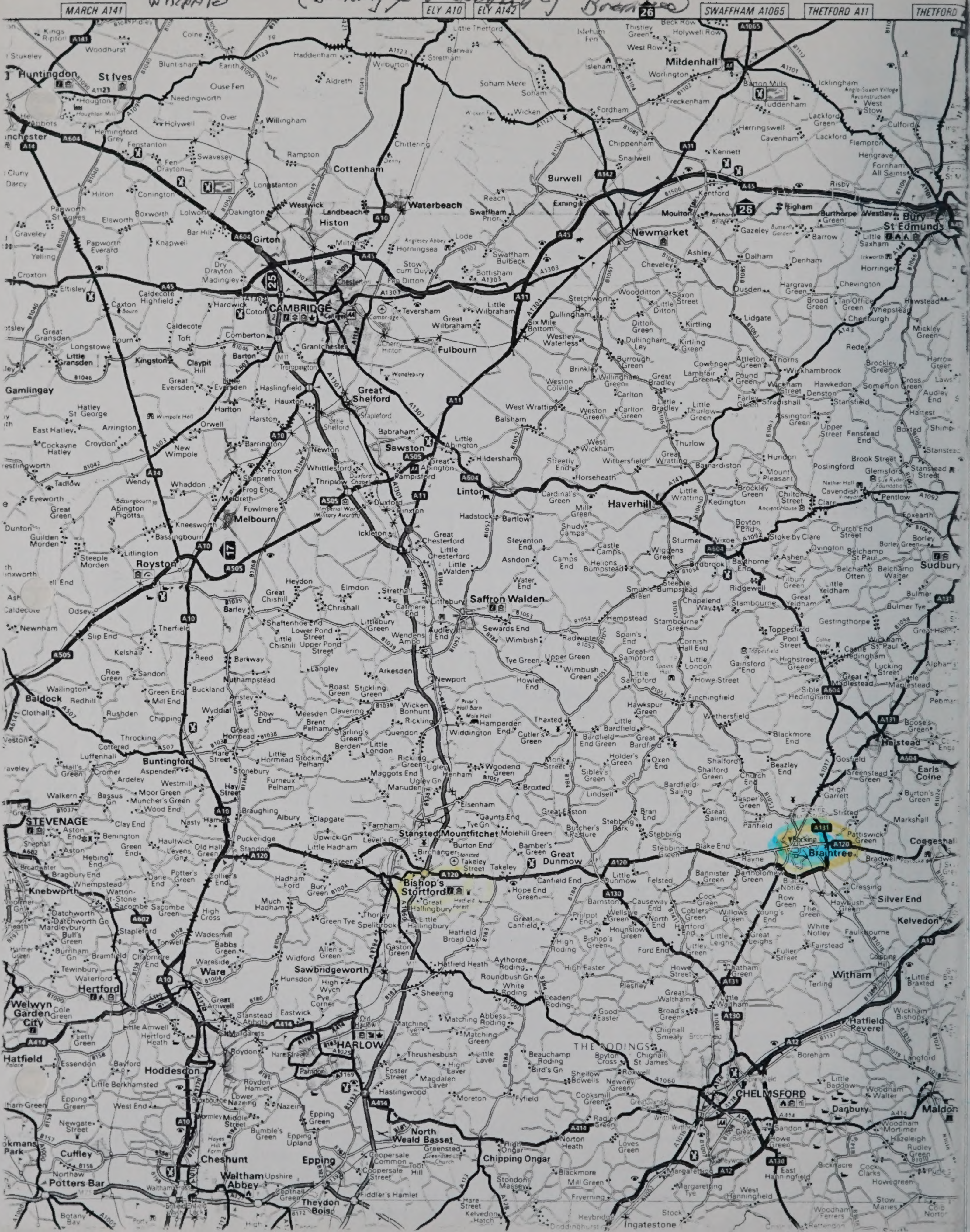
Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
	1. Matthew Whipple	Birth		ca	1623	Bocking	Essex	England	
		Death	27	Oct	1623	"			
	Spouse - baby	Married		—					
	2. Matthew Whipple	Birth		ca	1625	"			
		Death	3	Apr	1627	"			
	Spouse - toddler	Married							
	3. Mary Whipple	Birth		ca	1626	Bocking			
		Death		living	1655?	[illegible]		Mass.	
	Spouse - ? did she marry? (1636-1708)	Married		ca	1655?				
	4. Anne Whipple (had son Matthew, etc)	Birth		ca	1628				
		Death			1679+	to Dorchester/Roxbury? (She & Mr Annable bought father's home when he died)			
	Spouse - ① John Annable (a tailor -1664) ② Nicholas Clapp (1612-1679)	Married	① ②	ca ca	1647 1667				
+	5. Elizabeth Whipple	Birth		ca	1629				
		Death	17	Feb	1686				
	Spouse - Jacob Perkins (1624-1700)	Married		ca	1648				
	6. (Lt) (Capt) John Whipple (King Phillip's War)	Birth	6	Sep	1632				
		Death	10	Aug	1683				
	Spouse - Mary Reyner of Rowley (16 -1695+)	Married			165_	Rowley?			
	7. Matthew Whipple III (Son Matthew IV (posthumous) 20 Dec 1658 died ca 1663)	Birth		ca	1635				
		Death	20	Oct	1658				
	Spouse - Mary Bartholomew (dau. Wm.)	Married	10	Dec	1657	Gloucester			
	8. Joseph Whipple	Birth		ca	1640				
		Death			1707				
	Spouse - ① Sarah (Hawkins?)(-1675?) ② Sarah ____ (m/s Walter Fairfield)	Married	① ② 18	ca July	1664 1676?				
	9.	Birth							
		Death							
	Spouse -	Married							
	10.	Birth							
		Death							
	Spouse -	Married							

☐ Additional children listed on the reverse side.

In the circles, identify by number your sources of information — then list each on the reverse side.

rce
No.

Whipple (Bocking) = NW Suburbs of Braintree)



The Genealogist (Fall 2006)

(1) Thomas Whipple bca 1475 Bladesmith of
Bishops Stortford, Herts. dca 1536 m.1/____
m2 Isabel ( ) :amdpwmer. elected constable
May 1508. Made bell clapper for St. Michael Ch.
Had sons John & Thomas

(2) Thomas Whipple Jr. of Braintree & Newport Essex
bca 1519, elected constable of Br. 1431-2-3
m. by 1547 Margared ( ) buried 13 June
1577 in Bocking, Esses.
3 ch. Dau Margaret (named for mother) m.
Richard Rathbone. (See R. Genealogy--desc
in America m. our kin in IL) Matthew & Robert.

(3) Matthew Whipple bca 1550, clothier, buried in
Bocking16 Jan 1618/9. He m. Joan ( )
See Whipple Group sheet #1. This article shows
he was apprenticed in neighboring Braintree.
Among their children, Matthew Jr. and John
emigrated to Ipswich MA.

(4) Matthew Whipple Jr. m. Ann Hawkins, dau. John
in England, later settled in Ipswich MA. &
became a Deacon, etc. but died in 1647, thus
did not live to become as prominent as his bro.
John. See group sheet #2. Among their
9 children,

(5) Elizabeth Whipple m. ca 1648, Jacob Perkins.
She d. 17 Feb 1686. (See Perkins Chart.)

THE WHIPPLE FAMILY OF BISHOPS STORTFORD, HERTFORDSHIRE

Proposed Ancestral Origin of Matthew^{A} Whipple of Bocking, Essex, and a Whipple Ancestral Line for Arthur^{1} Gary of Roxbury, Massachusetts

By William Wyman Fiske

Matthew^{A} Whipple, clothier and father of Ipswich, Massachusetts, immigrants Matthew^{1} and John^{1} Whipple, was of Bocking, Essex, as early as 1583, when the baptism of his daughter Anne was recorded. His will, published elsewhere,[1] identifies eldest son Mathewe, son John, and daughters Jane, Elizabeth, Mary, Amie, and Johane. Although he does not mention his daughter Margaret (who married Lawrence Arther in 1603 as shown below) by name, he does recognize grandchildren Hercules and Margaret Arthur, as well as grandchildren Henry and Anne Caldham. His sister is identified only as "wife of Richard Rathbone." Finally, he leaves ten shillings to Hercules Stephens, to whom no relationship is stated.[2]

While Matthew^{A} Whipple's origins have remained elusive, his occupation does suggest at least one obvious possibility. Bocking occupies the northern border of the larger parish of Braintree, a center for clothiers and therefore the most likely place for him to have apprenticed. Apprenticeship binding records for this period do not survive and the Braintree parish registers do not start until 1660. However, those published records that are available notably identify only one Whipple in Braintree prior to 1580,[3] one who coincidentally is also of the right generation to have produced Matthew$^{\mathbf{A}}$: ✓Thomas Whipple, who served as constable of Braintree from 1541 through 1543.[4]

---

[1] Henry F. Waters, *Genealogical Gleanings in England*, 2 vols. (1901; repr. Baltimore: Genealogical Pub. Co., 1981), 1:465-66. The will was written 19 Dec. 1616 and proved 28 Jan. 1618.

[2] It has been suggested that Hercules Stephens may have been a brother-in-law, as all others mentioned by Matthew in his will were direct relations (Blaine Whipple, *History and Geneaglogy [sic] of "Elder" John Whipple of Ipswich, Massachusetts: His English Ancestors and American Descendants* [Victoria, B.C.: Trafford, 2003], 2). Matthew Whipple and Hercules Stevens served as witnesses together in an Inquest held at Epping on 1 April 1594 regarding the death of Margaret Moyer, aged 11, "late servant of thomas Bylling, late of Epping, labourer" [found not guilty of her death] (Mary Lovering Holman and George R. Marvin, eds. *Abstracts of English Records Gathered Principally in Devonshire and Essex in a Search for the Ancestry of Roger Dearing and Matthew Whipple* [Boston: Barbara Deering Danielson, 1929], 536-37). The unusual name Hercules was chosen by Matthew's daughter Margaret and her husband, Laurence Arthur, as the name of their eldest son (see Genealogical Summary). While it is possible that the Joan Stephens baptized 15 Nov. 1562 in Bocking, where the Stephens surname is unusual, was in fact the wife of Matthew Whipple buried 19 May 1612 (Genealogical Summary) and a sister of Hercules, there is no direct proof at present.

The first Whipple entry in the Bocking parish registers (which start in 1558)[5] is that of the burial of Margareta Whipple on 13 June 1577, followed six years later by the baptism of Matthew's firstborn, Anne, on 1 September 1583. Given that every other entry in the Bocking parish register is referable to Matthew, it is likely that the Margaret Whipple buried in 1577 was a close relative, quite probably his mother. This burial becomes of particular interest with the discovery that the aforementioned Thomas Whipple's wife was named Margaret, when in 1547 the pair quitclaimed Braintree property to Richard Newman[6] and heirs.[7] While other references to this Thomas Whipple (designated here as Thomas$^{\mathbf{B}}$) are found in Braintree during the 1540s (see below), no other Whipples left a trace so far identified in the Braintree environs prior to the burial of Margaret in Bocking in 1577. Given the proximity of Bocking to Braintree, a major clothier center, and in the absence of any other families of this unusual surname in the immediate area, it seems likely that the Margaret Whipple buried in Bocking in 1577 was both the wife of Thomas$^{\mathbf{B}}$ and the mother of Matthew$^{\mathbf{A}}$ (who named his second daughter Margaret). Furthermore, it seems likely that Matthew's sister, "wife of Richard Rathbone," was the Margaret Rathbone *vidua* buried in Bocking in January of 1627/8 (see Genealogical Summary)—a further coincidence in names lending support to the premise that these were the children of Thomas$^{\mathbf{B}}$ and Margaret of Braintree.[8]

---

[3] Although an extensive independent search of Essex, Hertfordshire, and London records was conducted by the author, virtually all of the data necessary to the central argument of this article, regarding Matthew's parentage, can be found in a single source: Holman and Marvin [*supra* note 2], 455-550.

[4] Holman and Marvin [*supra* note 2], 490.

[5] Bocking Parish Registers, held in the Essex Record Office at Chelmsford.

[6] Richard Newman of Bocking makes reference in his 12 Aug. 1547 will (PCC 7 Populwell; proved 7 May 1548) to his "messuages, lands and tenements . . . lying in Branktree, which I lately severally purchased of Thomas Burges, gentleman, Thomas Whippull and Thomas Lowe," which he devised unto Roger Newman, his son.

[7] Marc Fitch and Frederick Emmison, eds., *Feet of Fines for Essex Vol. 5 (1547–1580)* (Oxford, Leopard's Head Press, 1991), 3. Thomas Whepyll and wife Margaret quitclaimed from themselves and the heirs of Thomas to Richard Newman: one messuage, two cottages, two barnes, one toft, two gardens and one orchard in Braintree in consideration of £20.

[8] It has been suggested that this unnamed sister, "wife of Richard Rathbone" was named Marion and that the pair immigrated to New England (Walter Anson Greene and Ella Louise Geib Greene, *A Greene Family History, an Account of the Ancestors and Descendants of Nathan and Job Greene, Who Pioneered the Settlement of St. Albans, Vermont* [Schenectady: W. A. Greene, 1981], 70-71; Whipple, *"Elder" John*

Thomas$^{\mathbf{B}}$ of Braintree's own origins are equally elusive. As stated, he i the first and only Whipple identified to date in the Braintree and Bockin vicinity before 1577. It is therefore of interest that an established enclave o Whipples is to be found a mere 15 miles to the west, across a county line i Bishops Stortford, Herts. Furthermore, this kindred produced a Thoma Whipple, "Bladesmythe" (son of Thomas, also a Bladesmith), of the righ age to be the man who quitclaimed Braintree property with wife Margaret i 1547. While his brother John remained in Bishops Stortford, the younge Thomas is not included in the lay subsidy of 1545 for that or any othe Hertfordshire parish. Although he was still alive in 1555,[9] no record ha been discovered to date of his ever actually living in Hertfordshire, all o which is consistent with Thomas having removed to Braintree, Essex.

Equally coincidental, but more compelling, is a common associatio shared by the Stortford and Braintree men with Sir Giles Capell. In Apri 1519 Thomas Whipple [the elder] of Stortford was ordered to "scour hi ditches." The mandate appears to have gone unheeded such that in April o 1520 it was ruled

> that the tenants of the lands of Giles Capell and Thomas Whepyll have not yet scoured watercourse leading from the highway there to the river of the lord which is very ruinous a they were ordered at the last Court, therefore they shall forfeit the penalty imposed on them namely 10*s*. each, and they shall do the same scouring before the next Court under a penalt of 20*s*. each.

Twenty years later, in 1540, Thomas$^{\mathbf{B}}$ Whipple of Braintree acknowledged property acquired of Sir Giles Capell:[10]

> Court Rolls of Duchy of Lancaster September 1540: To this Court came Thomas Whyppyl and gave to the Lord a fine for having ingress of and in a free tenement with appurtenances in Brayntry, within the fee of the Lord, the King, which he lately acquired of Sir Giles Capell knight.

Whipple [*supra* note 2], 2). No evidence has been offered for this supposition, which appears to contradic the Jan. 1627/8 burial record of widow Margaret Rathbone.

[9] When he transferred inherited property in Stortford, consisting of a "messuage and lands in Stort ford" to "John Craythorne citizen and cutler of London" during Easter Term of 1555 ("Feet of Fines fo Hertfordshire, Tudor Period," *The Herts Genealogist and Antiquary* 1 [1895]: 245).

[10] Holman and Marvin [*supra* note 2], 489-90.

While the nature of this Whipple and Capell association is unknown,[11] it does link Thomas Whipple (*Thomas*) of Stortford and Thomas Whipple of Braintree. This, combined with the coincidence of an otherwise extremely unusual name, strongly suggests that they were the same. Meanwhile, in the absence of additional evidence, the lineage proposed herein remains a working hypothesis. Hopefully a more directed study of the Stortford kindred, and its associated families, will ultimately lead to a clearer understanding of the ancestry of Matthew^{A} Whipple of Braintree and Stortford.

WHIPPLE ANCESTRY FOR ARTHUR GARY OF ROXBURY, MASSACHUSETTS

It has long been known[12] that the English origin of Arthur^{1} Gary lies in Bishops Stortford, where he was baptized on 20 May 1599 as "the sonne of Nathaniell Garie." Details of this family are scarce. Nathaniel^{A} is assumed to be the son of William^{B} Gary, the only male of that surname having children in Stortford until 1599 (see below). Nathaniel's wife Joan is identified only by her 1615 burial record (below), and her maiden name is unknown. The origin of William^{B} Gary himself and the name of his wife have eluded discovery.

Thomas Whipple of Bishops Stortford had two sons: Thomas^{B} who is presumed to have settled in Braintree, and John who remained in Bishops Stortford and from whom the Whipples of Stortford continue. Proof of the parentage of John Whipple (*Thomas*^{C}), using land records, is presented separately in the summary below. His marriage to Winifred Pylston, daughter of John and Alice Pylston of the same parish, is manifested in the 1543 will of John Pylston, who names daughter Wenefred Whyppell and leaves John Wepell his best horses.[13] The will is witnessed by his son-in-law, who writes, "I, John Wheppell, knoulege these well to be trewe in all thinges." As shown below, John and Winifred (Pylston) Whipple had at least five children, one of whom was Joan, wife of John Jardfeld of Bishops Stortford. Joan (Whipple) Jardfeld's 1581 will identifies "Garies wife, my sister."[14] The names of her sister and brother-in-law are not otherwise specified, but William Gary's name appears amongst the witnesses to the will of Joan's husband, John Jardfeld (written five months before her own).[15] Finally, as the Bishops Stortford parish registers suggest, William^{B} Gary was the only man in Stortford of the right generation to have been the husband of Joan (Whipple) Jardfeld's sister Gary:[16]

1566/7	Feb. 15	Baptism of Luce Gary
1570	Dec. 16	Baptism of William Gary
1573	July 2	Burial of — Gary the daughter of Willm Gary
1575/6	Jan. 9	Baptism of William Gary
1578	Dec. 14	Baptism of Jonas Gary
1580/1	March 18	Baptism of Margaret Gary the doughter of William Gary
1582	July 25	Burial of Margaret Gary the daughter of Willm Gary
1582	Aug. 3	Burial of Samuel Gary son of Willm Gary
1582	Aug. 4	Burial of James Gary the son of Willm
1582	Aug. 8	Burial of Jonas Gary the son of Willm
1582	Aug. 14	Burial of John Gary
1582	Aug. 17	Burial of Luce Gary
1599	May 20	Baptism of Arthure the sonne of Nathaniell Garie

---

[11] From the Inquisition Post Mortem held on 28 Aug. 1556 following the death of Sir Giles Capell it is clear that he had extensive holdings in Bocking: "Henry VIII by letters patent 12 March 30 Henry VIII [A.D. 1538/9] granted to Sir Giles Capel, knight, a park, called Bocking Park, in the parish of Bocking, co. Essex, and 400 acres of wood and underwood, called Bocking Park . . ." (Holman and Marvin [*supra* note 2], 527-29). Additional information focusing on their holdings in Little Hadham, Hertfordshire, adjacent to Bishops Stortford, can be found in William Minet, *Hadham Hall and the Manor of Bawdes Alias Hadham Parva in the county of Hertfordshire* (Colchester: Wiles & Son, 1914).

[12] What is known of Arthur Gary's origin in Stortford is summarized by Lawrence Brainerd in *Gary Genealogy: the Descendants of Arthur Gary of Roxbury, Massachusetts, with an Account of the Posterity of Stephen Gary of Charlestown, Massachusetts, and also of a South Carolina Family of this Name* (Boston: T. R. Marvin & Son, 1918), 7-15.

[13] See Genealogical Summary. John Pylston's will is partially abstracted in Holman and Marvin [*supra* note 2], 519. John also names sons William and Richard Pillesdon, daughter Alice, and daughter Grysell Skyllyngham. A more complete account of the Pylston family of Bishops Stortford will appear separately in: William W. Fiske, "The Wylleys of Thorley and Bishops Stortford Revisited: Common Ancestry for Jacob, Abbot, and Denison Families Through Joan (—) (Wylley) Pylston of Bishops Stortford, Herts."

[14] The will of Johanne Jardfeld of Stortford, widow, was dated 11 Oct. 1581 (proved 6 Nov. 1581). She names sons John, George and Richard as well as daughters Elizabeth, Joan, and Sara Jardfeld. Also identified are "Jonas Jardfeld, my brother . . . my brother Thomas Jardfeld . . . my sister Thurgood . . . [and] Garies wife my sister." To William Gary she gives a black bullock and a "jagge of blocks." Daughter Elizabeth to act as executrix, "to be bound in £220 to Richard Pylston, my uncle, to perform my will." Witnessed by William Myller, Thomas Odall and William Barnard (Commissary Court of London, Essex and Hertfordshire Division, Essex Record Office Ref: D/ABW 21/117).

[15] The will of John Jarfeld of Stortford, Herts, was dated 13 May 1581 (proved 9 Oct. 1581). John leaves to wife Joan "a messuage in Water Lane which Toby Chaundeler now inhabits with the barn adjoining, now in the tenure of William Brett with the yard and gardens together with all the lands meadows, pastures . . . that I bought and purchased of John Whipple, my wife's brother" to hold for life. Sons John and George Jardfeld are both less than 15. Son Richard is the apparent eldest. His brother Thomas Jardfeld is to take care of the two under-aged children if Joan dies before they are of age. He names land that was his grandfather's (who he names as Richard Jardfeld). Wife Joan to act as executrix. Will witnessed by William Barnard Scrivener and William Gere (Commissary Court of London, Essex and Hertfordshire Division, ERO Ref: D/ABW 21/116).

[16] Parish Registers of St. Michael's Church, Bishops Stortford, Herts, Family History Library [FHL] microfilm 991366. The 22 Aug. 1628 baptism of "William son of Arthur and Francis Gary" in neighboring Little Hadham, Herts, has been previously recognized by Brainerd, *Gary Genealogy* [*supra* note 12], 13.

1601	Nov. 29	Baptism of John the sonne of Nathaniel Garie
1611	March 25	Marriage of William Gery & Mary Newman
1611	May 1	Burial of William Gerey the elder
1611	Oct. 6	Baptism of William the sonne of William Grey
1612	May 18	Burial of William the sonne of William Gerey
1613	June 30	Baptism of Elisabeth the daughter of William Gerey
1615	Sept. 13	Burial of Joane Gary wife of Nathaniel
1615/6	Feb. 2	Baptism of William Gary sonne of William & Mary
1615/6	Jan. 22	Burial of Helen Gary widowe
1618/9	Feb. 8	Baptism of Mary Gary daughter of Willyam & Mary
1622	Aug. 24	Baptism of Anna Gary of Willm & Mary
1624	Oct. 10	Baptism of Margaret Gary of William & Mary
1625	April 18	Marriage of Arthur Gary of Hadham & Frances Warman of Albery
1628/9	Jan. 1	Marriage of John Gary of this towne & Mary Poynings [of?] Pellam
1629	Sept. 5	Baptism of Thomas Gary sonne of William & Mary
1633/4	Feb. 25	Burial of John Gary son of William
1646	Aug. 14	Burial of Old Gery[17]

The burial of "Old Gery" in 1646 is probably that of Nathaniel^{A} Gary; the entry immediately following, on the same date, simply states "Nathanyell," without surname. Nathaniel was alive in 1642, when the Churchwarden's Book shows that he resided on Highe Street in Stortford.[18] At that time a "Wido Gary" was on Wyndhill, presumably Mary (Newman) Gary. The Joane Gary "wife of Nathaniel" buried in 1615 would be the mother of Arthur^{1} and John, who were baptized in 1599 and 1601, respectively. William^{B} Gary's wife, the unnamed daughter of John and Winifred (Pylston) Whipple, is most likely the "Helen Gary widowe" buried in 1615/6. William^{B} appears to have had only two surviving sons, William and Nathaniel^{A}, both of whom were alive at that time and neither of whose wives were named Helen (Nathaniel's wife Joan had been buried only four months earlier).

GENEALOGICAL SUMMARY OF THE WHIPPLE FAMILY[19]

1 THOMAS^{C} WHIPPLE, Bladesmith of Bishops Stortford, Herts, was born say 1475. He died between 1535 and 1537, when his name in Church Rental accounts is replaced by that of his widow, as noted below. The name of hi first wife is unknown. In 1506 the churchwardens of St. Michael's i Stortford received 4 pence "of Thomas Whepyll for the waste of torches a his wife's burieng."[20] He married, second, ISABEL —, who survived hi and is frequently called Elizabeth in the Churchwarden's Accounts. Th Court Books of Divers Manors held in Stortford on 7 April 1520 show "that the wife of Thomas Whepill is a baker of bread and a brewer of ale an broke the assize. Fined 2*d*."[21]

Records of the Court General of the Bishop of London held in Stortfor in June of 1507 noted that Thomas Whippyll "comes and does fealty to th Lord."[22] In May of 1508 Thomas Whippyll and Thomas Josselyn wer elected constables in Stortford.[23] Both men served together as churchwardens in 1509.[24] These were posts that appear to have been generally hel by established men in the community of approximately 35-45 years of age suggesting birth in the period 1465–1475.

In the Court Book of Divers Manors held at Stortford in April 1510 Richard Pety was fined 12*d*. for having "made assault upon Thoma Whepyll."[25] In October 1512 Thomas was granted

> three crofts of land lying in the parish of Stortford, whereof one croft containing about tw acres lies between the lands in the tenure of John John, on the west and the highway from Stortford to Dunmow on the south, and abutts upon the land of the said John John, on the south, another croft of three acres, called Frostes Lesse, lies between the land in the tenure o Thomas Sturdy, on the east, and the land of Thomas Clerk, on the west, and abutts upon the highway leading from Dunmow to Stortford, the other croft of land, called 'Busshe Lesse' lies between the land, late of the said Thomas Clerke, on one side and the land of William Sheppard, on the other side, and abutts upon the highway leading from Dunmow to Stortford, towards the south.
>
> To have and to hold all the said lands to the said Thomas Whepill, his executors and assigns from Michaelmas, last past, for a term of 20 years paying therefor yearly 7*s*. 8*d*. at the four usual terms.

---

[17] On the line underneath, with the same date, is written simply "Nathanyell"; it is likely that this applies to the preceding entry.

[18] J. L. Glasscock Jr., ed., *The Records of St. Michael's Parish Church, Bishop's Stortford* (London: Elliot Stock, 1882), 147.

[19] Because of Stortford's importance in having produced a number of New England immigrants, most of whom appear to have been related either directly or socially, an attempt has been made here to present as complete a record as possible for the Stortford side of this family through the Tudor period.

[20] Glasscock, *Records of St. Michael's Parish Church* [*supra* note 18], 31. Quoting directly from the same volume on p. 91, where Mr. Glasscock takes from "Gregorii Pouscula": "Funeral tapers, however thought of by some, are of harmless import. Their meaning is to show that the departed soules are not quite put out, but having walked here as the children of light, are now gone to walk before God in the light of the living." Mr. Glasscock adds "To have a great many torches was a special mark of esteem in the person who made the funeral to the deceased. The Churchwardens provided the torches and let them out at funerals, charging, as in this item, for the waste of them."

[21] Holman and Marvin [*supra* note 2], 511. This is the same date that Thomas and Giles Capell were fined 10*s*. apiece, noted above.

[22] Holman and Marvin [*supra* note 2], 508.

[23] Holman and Marvin [*supra* note 2], 509.

[24] Glasscock, *Records of St. Michael's Parish Church* [*supra* note 18], 112.

[25] Holman and Marvin [*supra* note 2], 509.

And one piece of land lying in Nefeld between the land of Thomas Sturdy, on the east, and the land of William Sheppard, on the west, one head thereof abutting on the lane leading from Nesemedes to the highway, on the south, and the other head thereof abutting upon the land of Alice Grene, widow, on the west.[26]

Six months later Thomas was fined 20*d.* for an incident in which he "made affray upon Roger Walshe and smote him on the fingers of his right hand with a wooden sword so that blood flowed."[27] The Churchwardens' Accounts for Stortford between 1529 and 1533 show that 6*s.* 8*d.* was paid "to Whepull for a newe bell clapper," 6*s.* 8*d.* paid "to Whepull for makyng the great bell clappor," 11*d.* paid to Thomas Whepill "for a boarde for the funt and for 2 stapilles for the Portall," and 2*s.* 2*d.* paid "to Whepill, for mendyng of a bell clapper."[28] Thomas regularly paid rent to St. Michaels from 1507 through 1535. This consisted of 4*d.* for "his messuage in Southstrete late John Sadds" and 10*d.* "for his howse in Southstrete late Danes."[29] The churchwarden's accounts are missing for the following year, but we see that by 1537 Thomas was deceased and that Elizabeth/Isabell Whipple was paying the same 14*d.* rent yearly from 1537 through 1557.[30] She was called "Elizabeth," "Thomas Wheppill's wife," and "Isabell Whepill wydowe" variably through this period, but the yearly rent remained unchanged.[31] In Michaelmas term of 38 Henry VIII [1546], Elizabeth Whyppylle quitclaimed property in Manuden, Essex (two messuages, twenty acres of land, four acres of meadow, twenty acres of pasture and two acres of woodland), to John Crathorne and Margaret his wife in consideration of 40*l.*[32]

Children of Thomas^{C} and — (—) Whipple:

2 i JOHN WHIPPLE, b. by 1505; m. WINIFRED PYLSTON.
3 ii THOMAS^{B} WHIPPLE, b. say 1510; m. MARGARET —.

---

[26] Holman and Marvin [*supra* note 2], 510.

[27] Holman and Marvin [*supra* note 2], 510; Court Books of Divers Manors, vol. 16, April 1513.

[28] Stephen G. Doree, ed., *The Early Churchwardens' Accounts of Bishops Stortford, 1431–1558* (Cambridge: Hertfordshire Record Society, 1994), 203, 214, 224, 229 (respectively).

[29] Glasscock, *Records of St. Michael's Parish Church* [*supra* note 18], 141.

[30] Doree, *Churchwardens' Accounts* [*supra* note 28], 243, 248, 253, 258, 264, 270, 277, 286, 298, 304, 308, 314.

[31] In Feb. 1545/6 she was referred to as "Mother Whepill" when paying rent for "a tenement that she dwelleth in on the est side of Southstreat by year . . . The same Mother Whepill, for two pastures with a mead lyeing between Wards and the highway . . ." (Holman and Marvin [*supra* note 2], 491).

[32] P. H. Reaney and Marc Fitch, eds., *Feet of Fines for Essex, Vol. 4* (Colchester: Essex Archaeological Society, 1964), 295. A more complete description of this transaction showed that Elizabeth was to receive 41*s.* sterling per annum (Holman and Marvin [*supra* note 2], 590).

2 JOHN WHIPPLE (*Thomas*^{C}) of Bishops Stortford, "Smith," was born by 1505 based on the presumption that he was 21 years of age by Hilary Term of 1525-26, when he, John Neuman, and William Sybthorp acquired land in Bishops Stortford of George Brett and wife Joan.[33] He married by 1543 (when he is named in his father-in-law's will)[34] WINIFRED PYLSTON, daughter of John and Alice Pylston of Bishops Stortford. John Whipple was deceased by 7 March 1572/3, when his son John transferred property "sometime in the occupation of John Pilestone and late in the occupation of one Wenifride Whippull, and now in the occupation of the said John Whippull and his assigns" (see no. 4 below).[35] In February 1545 John paid the following rentals:[36] 2*s.* 5*d.* for "tenement in Bashorne Lane, that he dwelleth on and the west side, called Fokynghams"; 11*s.* 4*d.* "for certain lands, called Masshis"; 6*d.* "for a garden plot, late Flemings, in Bayshorne Lane"; and 10*s.* for "three acres of land with the grain plot, in Wyndell Fyld."

John's possession of "Fokynghams" makes it possible to establish his descent from the elder Thomas. Specifically, in addition to the yearly church rentals totaling 14*d.* summarized above, in 1533/34 Thomas the elder paid 3.5*d.* for rental of unnamed property.[37] This same odd amount had previously been paid in 1531/32 and 1532/33 by Elinor Josselyn, who does not appear in the 1533/34 accounts, "for rent of Fokynghams."[38] It would appear that Thomas the elder acquired this property from Elinor Josselyn sometime before the paying of the 1533/34 accounts and that he, in turn, subsequently devised it to John, presumed therefore to be his heir, who paid the 3.5*d.* in 1534/35 and was still possessed of the tenement in 1545.[39] This piece of property figures prominently in a 1626 lawsuit initiated by Anne Whipple (*John, John, John, Thomas*^{C}), great-granddaughter to John and Winifred (see no. 4 i below).

The will of Winifred's father John Pylston, dated 26 April 1543, was partially abstracted in those portions pertinent to the identification of his daughter Winifred Whipple and son-in-law John Whipple. However,

---

[33] Brigg, *Herts Genealogist and Antiquary* [*supra* note 9], 85.

[34] A brief abstract of the will of John Pylston, focusing on those portions pertaining to John and Winifred (Pylston) Whipple, can be found in Holman and Marvin [*supra* note 2], 519.

[35] Holman and Marvin [*supra* note 2], 520-21.

[36] Holman and Marvin [*supra* note 2], 491.

[37] Doree, *Churchwardens' Accounts* [*supra* note 28], 232.

[38] Doree, *Churchwardens' Accounts* [*supra* note 28], 217, 225.

[39] Fockinghams passed from John Whipple to John Jardfeld of Bishops Stortford by an indenture dated 7 March 1572/3 (see below, p. 204).

John Whippul, of Bishops Stortford, co. Hertford, yeoman, of the one part, and John Jardfeilde, of Bishops Stortford, aforesaid, tanner, of the other part . . . the said John Whippull in consideration of . . . £420 paid by the said Jardefeilde has granted and sold to the said John Jardefeilde, his heirs and assigns for ever all that messuage with appurtenances situated in Bishops Stortford, commonly called Fockinghams, now in the tenure of one — Taylor with all appurtenances whatsoever and all those forty acres of land to the said messuage belonging [*sic*] in the occupation of John Whippull. And all that parcel of arrable land in Bishops Stortford, aforesaid, containing five acres sometime in the occupation of John Pilestone and late in the occupation of one Wenifride Whippull, and now in the occupation of the said John Whippull and his assigns and also that messuage in Bishops Stortford, in the occupation of one Thomas Golde. The said John Whippull also sells all the household goods, etc., which he happens to have left upon the premises.[74]

At the Court General held Saturday, 26 September 1579:

It is presented by the homage that John Whipple, absent from Court by the hands of Thomas Chaundeler and John Haggas, tenants of the Lord, surrendered his reversion of and in six acres of customary meadow, called Checkers alias Palmers Meade, with appurtenances which he had of the surrender of William Pilsdon as appears by the view of francpledge held 12 April 19 Elizabeth [1577], to the use and behoof of John Denyson for ever.[75]

John's children are identified in depositions made between early 1625 and 1626 by his granddaughter Anne regarding her claim to this same property Fockinghams. Her testimony (shown below) initially speaks of a property called "Chantry House, in Stanford." Subsequently, she amends this to mean Fockinghams, which she reports her grandfather was still possessed of at the time of his death. The previous indenture, however, would suggest that she was in error and she does appear to have lost her case.[76]

---

[74] Holman and Marvin [*supra* note 2], 520-21.

[75] Holman and Marvin [*supra* note 2], 496. "John Denyson" was father of New England immigrant William Denison of Roxbury.

[76] Anne appears to have lost the claim, for on 20 Dec. 1630 an indenture was entered in the Court of Common Pleas between Seth Langham of Stortford and Thomas Meade of Stansted Mountfitchet, Essex, conveying to Meade the messuage called "Fochinghams" (Holman and Marvin [*supra* note 2], 540). Fockinghams is described as abutting "The Bull" and, partly, "The Boars Head" on its south with the east side opening upon "Barbowes *alias* Barbars Lane leading from the market house . . . into a street . . . called Northgate, the west side abutts upon Hownsden *alias* Horsom Ditch." It is of interest that the Court of Common Pleas records also contain an indenture dated 20 Oct. 1597 between Nicholas Fuller of London, esq., George Birde of Writtell, Essex, yeoman, and his wife Mabel, and Mary Francke of Stortford, in which "The said Nicholas, George and Mabel for £170 sell to the said Mary a messuage or tenement, called Fockinghames, in Stortford, in or near Barber Lane, with all the barns, buildings, orchards, utensils, etc., belonging, now or late in the tenure of the said Mary Francke and George Birde . . ." (Holman and Marvin [*supra* note 2], 538).

Children of John and — (—) Whipple:

i JOHN WHIPPLE; m. — —. Probably the John Whipple, citizen and skinner o London, against whom a complaint was brought during Hilary Term, 23 Elizabeth [1580-81], by William Liver of London, gentleman, regarding an obligation for £16 made 24 Nov. 1579 "in the parish of St. Mary, of Arches in the ward of Cheape."[77] This would be the John Whipple, "sonne of John Whippull of Bishope Starforde in the countye of hartford smyth," who apprenticed himself to William Whipple (*John, Thomas*), presumably his uncle, on 31 May 1570.[78] This same John is called both yeoman and clothier by his daughter Anne in testimony relating to a dispute over ownership of property in Bishops Stortford, the details of which do vary somewhat from one deposition to another. Specifically, on 5 Feb. 1624/5, "Anne Whypple, only daughter and heir of John Whypple, late of Stanford, in the county of Hertford, yeoman" made a complaint recorded in the Chancery Proceedings in which it is documented that:[79]

"John Whypple, late of Stanford, deceased, grandfather of complainant was seized of lands as inheritance to him and his heirs for ever of the value of £400 at least, and amongst other lands of a 'fayre' Mansion House called Chantry House, in Stanford, with appurtenances to the value of £200 per annum in the tenure and occupation of Seth Langham, gentleman.

"Complainant's said grandfather had two sons, John, his elder son, and Samuel, his younger son, and by his will bequeathed the said Chantry House with all lands, etc., belonging to his eldest son, John Whipple, complainant's father, and his heirs and for want of such heirs to the said Samuel and his heirs with remainder to his right heirs for ever. He died soon after and the said house descended as of right to complainant's father, John, and afterwards should have come to complainant, but she shews that the said Langham by combination and tention of deeds, etc., tries to defraud her of the same. . . ."

Seth Langham, gentleman, responded to the bill of complaint on 9 June 1626 with the claim that he had "the lands, etc. called Fockingham and has taken the issues and profits therefrom, by reason that the freehold and inheritance of the same were purchased by his father, Tobias Langham, from one John Golesburgh for £700."

On 29 July 1626, complaint was made by "Anne Whipple, daughter and heir of John Whipple, late of Bishops Stortford, in the county of Hertford, clothier." It shows that "John Whipple, grandfather to complainant, late of Bishops Stortford, yeoman, was in his lifetime seized in his demesne as of fee of and in a certain messuage and lands to the value of £200 per annum, called Fockinghams . . . now in the occupation of Seth Langham, gentleman, and also of a certain close called, the Shipp, containing five acres or thereabouts, and another close, called Tayntercroft, containing three acres, with other lands and closes to the value of 20 marks per annum, also in Bishops Stortford, and now in the possession and occupation of Edward Morton and Margerie, his wife, in the right of the said Margerie.

---

[77] Holman and Marvin [*supra* note 2], 516, citing the Coram Rege Rolls, Roll 1276.

[78] Company of Skinners Register [*supra* note 43].

[79] Holman and Marvin [*supra* note 2], 483-87.

"Complainant's grandfather being so possessed of the premises, and desiring that the said lands should continue 'in his name and blood' did by his will bequeath the said messuage, called Fockinghams, together with all the lands and tenements thereto belonging to John Whipple, complainant's father, and his heirs lawfully begotten and other lands and closes in the possession of Edward Morton and Margery, his wife, he bequeathed, by the same will, to Samuel Whipple his younger son, and his heirs with remainder to the heirs of the body of John Whipple, the elder son.

"The said John, the grandfather, died shortly after making the said will and afterwards complainant's father took possession of the messuage, etc., called Fockinghams . . . and the said Samuel, uncle to complainant, becoming possessed of other the lands and closes as abovesaid, complainant's father mortgaged the said messuage, called Fockinghams, with the lands and tenements belonging for a certain sum of money, but never levied any fine or suffered any recovery of the same.

"Complainant's father, having paid and discharged the greatest part of the said moneys due upon the said mortgage before the said redemption of the same, died, leaving complainant his heir, after whose decease the mortgagee, did for a small sum of money, assure and convey the said mortgaged lands to some other person unknown to complainant and they are now, by some means, come into the hands and possession of the said Seth Langham who receives the rents and profits of the same, etc. . . .

"Complainant further shows that her said uncle, Samuel Whipple, being seized of the said closes and other the lands in tail as aforesaid, by his will (whereof he made Margery, his wife, now the wife of Edward Morton, sole executrix), bequeathed the same to the said Margery and to Jone, his sole daughter and heir, during their natural lives, with remainder to the right heirs of his father, John Whipple.

"Complainant shows that the said Margery (after the death of the said Samuel) first married one William Willcocks and they finding the said closes, etc., were entailed and realizing that the said Samuel had not the power to dispose of them by his said will to the said Margery, plotted how to secure to themselves the said closes and by combination with the said Seth Langham got into their hands by indirect means the original will of the said John Whipple together with the record thereof which was filed and remained in Court, and also all the true copies that were made of the same without which complainant is unable to make any title to herself either against the pretence of the said Seth Langham's right to the said messuage, called Fockinghams, nor against the pretence of the said Edward Morton and Margery, his wife, to the said closes, etc., by which complainant is in danger to be defrauded of her just inheritance.

"Complainant further shows that the said Jone Whipple, daughter and heir of the said Samuel, complainant's uncle, died about eight years since without issue, and complainant is advised by counsel that the said closes and lands, etc., now in the possession of the said Edward Morton and Margery, his wife, should come to your orator as rightful heir to the said John Whipple, her grandfather.

"About seven years since she exhibited a bill into this Court to be relieved in the premises against the said William Wilcocks and Margery, his wife, touching the premises and they contrived to make an estate to themselves during the life of the said Margery; complainant was prevented from making an answer to this by reason of a 'sudden and fearful fyer' which consumed and burnt the records of those times. . . ."

ii SAMUEL WHIPPLE, b. say 1565, bur. St. Katherine Coleman, London, 20 Feb 1605/6;[80] m. at St. Margaret Lothbury, London, 21 Sept. 1591 MARGERY PARSON.[81] She m. (2) at St. Katherine Coleman 16 Feb. 1606/7 William Willcote/Willcock.[82] Administration on the estate of William Wilcox clothworker of St. Katherine Coleman, was granted in 1622 to relict Margerie Wilcox.[83] Margery m. (3) Edward Morton.[84] Samuel Whipple paid 2*s.* 8*d.* in lay subsidies in Stortford in Jan. 1601/2, April 1602, and April 1604. Widow Whipple paid the same sum in 1607.[85] The will of Samuel Whipley, citizen and merchant taylor of London, dated 15 Feb 1605/6, proved 13 Aug. 1606, identifies son John and daughter Joan, both underage. Wife Margery was made sole executrix. "Loving friends" Hugh Hill, Pewterer, and Robert Browne, Draper, Citizens of London, were appointed overseers; the witnesses were Thomas Archer, Scrivner, George Robsond, and Robert Browne.[86]

---

[80] Parish Registers of St. Katherine Coleman, London, FHL microfilm 560022.

[81] Parish Registers of St. Margaret Lothbury, London, FHL microfilm 374471.

[82] Registers of St. Katherine Coleman [*supra* note 80].

[83] Archdeaconry Court of London, Administration Book 5, folio 144.

[84] Anne Whipple (daughter of Samuel's brother John) makes specific reference to Margery, late wife of her uncle Samuel Whipple, "now the wife of Edward Morton" (see 4-i above).

[85] Holman and Marvin [*supra* note 2], 481.

[86] Archdeaconry Court of London, Book 2, folio 310 [note that this is a correction to the printed index, which reports the will in Book 4]. "In the name of God amen the fiftenth day of february 1605[/6 . . . I Samuell Whipley Cittizen and marchant taylor of London beeing sick in body but of sound & perfect minde & memory . . . my body to be buryed in the churchyard of the parish of St Katherine Collman in London Itm I give & bequeath unto my sonne John Whipley all these my twelve acres of arrable land meadow or pasture ground bee it more or less . . . in the parish of Byshopp Starford in the County of Hartf now in the tenure or occupacon of Nathaniell Geary shomaker to have & to hold the same unto the said John Whipley my sonne and to the heires of his body lawfully begotten and for wante of such issue the remainder thereof to Margery my wife and Johan my daughter during their lives and the longer liver of them And after their decease the remainder thereof unto the heires and assignes of the said Johan my daughter for ever Itm I give and bequeath unto the said John Whipley my sonne one spoone o silver & gilt in full satisfaction of his patrimony and I will that hee shall not have any thing else of my goods creaditts or chattells. Itm It is my will & minde that the said Margery my wife shalbee gardian to the said John Whipley my sonne & shall have & receive to her owne use the rents . . . for all my said lands . . . until my said sonne John shall accomplish his full age of twenty and one yeares But if the said Margery my wife shall happen in the meanetyme either to marry or departe this mortall life that then shalbee lawfull for my said sonne to make choice of his gardian Itm I give and bequeath unto the sai Johan my daughter the some of tenn pounds to bee paid unto her at her full age of one & twenty yeares c

Children of Samuel and Margery (Parson) Whipple (all baptisms and burials at St. Katherine Coleman, London):[87]

1 *Samuel Whipple*, bur. at St. Katherine Coleman 20 Feb. 1605/6.

2 *John Whipple*, mentioned in his father's will written 15 Feb. 1605/6. Presumably deceased, without heirs, prior to the 29 July 1626 testimony of his cousin Anne Whipple (*John, John, John, Thomas*^{C}), which implies that Samuel's daughter Joan who "died about eight years since without issue" was Samuel's last surviving child.[88]

3 *Anne Whipple*, bp. at St. Katherine Coleman 23 Sept. 1593.

4 *Margaret Whipple*, bur. 25 Oct. 1596 as "Margaret Whipple a child."

5 *Joan Whipple*, who was of Christchurch, Newgate, London when her nuncupative will was proved 24 April 1615: "Jone Whipple being sicke in body, but in good & perfit memory, mayd the 25 of February 1614[/5] being demaunded of her uncle Jhon Willsonne, Draper, to whom she would give her land & all that shee had shee sayd shee would give it to her mother & to her heires for ever. . . ." The witnesses were John Wyltson, William Martell, and Water Parsons; administration was granted to Margerie Wilcocks *alias* Whipple, mother of the testator.[89]

5 HELEN WHIPPLE (*John, Thomas*^{C}), described as "Garies wife my sister" by Joan (Whipple) Jardfeld (no. 2 iii), was born say 1543 and was buried in Bishops Stortford on 22 January 1615/6 as "Helen Gary widowe."[90] She married by 1566 (baptism of first recorded child) WILLIAM^B GARY, who was buried in Bishops Stortford on 1 May 1611.[91] That the widow Helen Gary was the same sister named by Joan (Whipple) Jardfeld is based entirely on the likelihood of her having been the widow of William^B Gary and clearly should be treated with caution, as this Helen may have been a second, and later, wife. Whatever her given name, it is likely that Joan (Whipple) Jardfeld's sister, alive in 1581 at the time Joan's will was written, was the mother of William^B Gary's children. Of the nine known children of William^B Gary, only Nathaniel^A and William survived. Six of William's children perished in the summer of 1582, a plague year in Bishops Stortford.

---

in the day of her marriage . . . [makes wife Margery sole executrix] . . . and I desire my loving friends Hugh Hill Pewterer and Robert Browne Draper Cittizens of London to bee overseers of this my last will & testament . . ." [witnessed by Thomas Archer Scr[ivner], Go: Robsond, and Robert Browne].

[87] Registers of St. Katherine Coleman [*supra* note 80].

[88] Anne Whipple's testimony (see 4-i) suggests that the Stortford Whipples failed to continue a male line beyond her generation.

[89] Commissary Court of London, vol. 22, folio 415.

[90] Registers of St. Michael's Church, Bishops Stortford [*supra* note 16].

[91] Registers of St. Michael's Church, Bishops Stortford [*supra* note 16].

Children of William^B and Helen (Whipple) Gary (all baptisms and burials in Bisho
Stortford):[92]

i LUCE GARY, bp. 15 Feb. 1566/7, bur. 17 Aug. 1582.

ii WILLIAM GARY, bp. 16 Dec. 1570, d. evidently by Jan. 1575/6 when anoth son was given the name.

iii daughter, bur. 2 July 1573 as "[*blank*] Gary the daughter of Willm Gary."

iv NATHANIEL GARY, b. say 1565, bur. in Bishops Stortford 14 Aug. 1646 "Old Gery"; m. by 1598 (bp. of eldest known child) JOAN —. Joan "wife Nathaniel" was bur. in Bishops Stortford 13 Sept. 1615.[93] John Gac stepfather of New England immigrant William Denison, in his will dated Aug. 1602, proved 20 Sept. 1602, directed that "Nathaniel Gary of Stoı ford, shoemaker, shall be discharged of all such debts &c. which are dı and owing unto me, amounting to four pounds or thereabouts."[94] Nathani Gary is also called shoemaker by his cousin Samuel Whipple (no. 4 ii).

Children of Nathaniel^A and Joan (—) Gary (all baptisms and burials Bishops Stortford):[95]

1 *Arthur*^{1} *Gary*, bp. 20 May 1599, d. Roxbury, Mass., 17 Dec. 16 aged 67.[96] He was "of Hadham" on 18 April 1625, when he m. Bishops Stortford Frances Warman "of Albury, Herts."[97] This w presumably Little Hadham, Herts, where Arthur's son William w bp. 22 Aug. 1628,[98] a parish occupying the western border Bishops Stortford and the southern border of Albury. Arthur imm grated to Roxbury by 14 March 1638/9, when, as "Arthur Geeree he was admitted a Freeman.[99] His will, published elsewhere, me tions wife Frances and sons Samuel, William, and Nathaniel. Frances, widow of Arthur, was bur. in Roxbury 1 Oct. 1672.[101] Tl New England line of Arthur and Frances (Warman) Gary has be summarized elsewhere.[102]

---

[92] See discussion section above, which summarizes all Gary entries in the registers of St. Michael Church, Bishops Stortford [*supra* note 16]. It is not possible to ascertain the birth order of many of tl children, the only record of which are burial entries, and it is likely that the John buried in 158 presumably named after his maternal grandfather, was born before Nathaniel.

[93] Registers of St. Michael's Church, Bishops Stortford [*supra* note 16].

[94] Waters, *Genealogical Gleanings* [*supra* note 1], 1:655.

[95] Registers of St. Michael's Church, Bishops Stortford [*supra* note 16].

[96] *Vital Records of Roxbury, Massachusetts, to the End of the Year 1849*, 2 vols. (Salem: Essex Ins tute, 1925–26), 2:532.

[97] Registers of St. Michael's Church, Bishops Stortford [*supra* note 16].

[98] Parish Registers of Little Hadham, Herts, FHL microfilm 991375.

[99] Nathaniel B. Shurtleff, ed. *The Records of the Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Bay New England, 1628–1686*, 5 vols. in 6 (Boston: William White Press, 1853–54), 1:375.

[100] William Trask, "Abstracts from the Earliest Wills on Record in the County of Suffolk, Mass *New England Historical and Genealogical Register* [NEHGR] 15 (1861): 248.

[101] *Vital Records of Roxbury* [*supra* note 96], 2:530.

[102] Brainerd, *Gary Genealogy* [*supra* note 12].

2 *John Gary*, bp. 29 Nov. 1601; m. Bishops Stortford 1 Jan. 1628/9 Mary Poynings "of Pellam"[103] (presumably Furneux Pelham, Stocking Pelham, or Brent Pelham, a cluster of three Hertfordshire parishes directly north of Albury).

v WILLIAM GARY (again), bp. 9 Jan. 1575/6; m. Bishops Stortford 25 March 1611 MARY NEWMAN.[104]

Children of William and Mary (Newman) Gary (all baptisms and burials in Bishops Stortford):[105]

1 *William Gary*, bp. 6 Oct. 1611, bur. 18 May 1612.
2 *Elizabeth Gary*, bp. 30 June 1613.
3 *William Gary*, bp. 2 Feb. 1615/6.
4 *Mary Gary*, bp. 8 Feb. 1618/9.
5 *Anna Gary*, bp. 24 Aug. 1622.
6 *Margaret Gary*, bp. 10 Oct. 1624.
7 *Thomas Gary*, bp. 5 Sept. 1629.
8 *John Gary*, bur. 25 Feb. 1633/4.

vi JONAS GARY, bp. 14 Dec. 1578, bur. 8 Aug. 1582.
vii MARGARET GARY, bp. 18 March 1580/1, bur. 25 July 1582.
viii SAMUEL GARY, bur. 3 Aug. 1582.
ix JAMES GARY, bur. 4 Aug. 1582.
x JOHN GARY, bur. 14 Aug. 1582.

6 MATTHEW^{A} WHIPPLE (*Thomas*$^{B-C}$) "the elder" of Bocking, clothier, was born say 1550 and was buried in Bocking on 16 January 1618/9.[106] He married about 1580 JOAN —,[107] who was buried in Bocking on 19 May 1612.[108] Matthew was probably apprenticed in neighboring Braintree, Essex.

The will of "Mathewe Whipple the elder" of Bocking, Essex, written 19 December 1616, proved 28 January 1618/19, has been published elsewhere[109] and is summarized in the first paragraph of the present article.

Children of Matthew^{A} and Joan (—) Whipple:

i MATTHEW^{1} WHIPPLE, d. Ipswich, Mass., Nov. 1646, sometime between adding to his will on the 13th of Nov. and the inventory of his estate on the 24th of

---

[103] Registers of St. Michael's Church, Bishops Stortford [*supra* note 16].

[104] Registers of St. Michael's Church, Bishops Stortford [*supra* note 16].

[105] Registers of St. Michael's Church, Bishops Stortford [*supra* note 16].

[106] Bocking Parish Registers [*supra* note 5].

[107] The first child of Matthew baptized in Bocking is Anne on 1 Sept. 1583, followed by Margaret, Jane, Elizabeth, John, Mary, and Amy from early 1585 through Jan. 1604/5. The baptisms of Matthew's eldest children (Matthew and Joan) are not recorded. Allowing for the possibility that the elder two were twins, the marriage of Matthew and Joan would have taken place no later than 1581 (Bocking Parish egisters [*supra* note 5]).

[108] Bocking Parish Registers [*supra* note 5].

Waters, *Genealogical Gleanings* [*supra* note 1], 1:465-66.

---

that month.[110] He m. (1) in Bocking 7 May 1622 ANNE HAWKINS,[111] a
(2) between 7 May 1645 and 13 Nov. 1646 ROSE (—) CHUTE, widow
Lionel Chute of Ipswich.[112] Both Matthew and his brother John Whip
immigrated to New England by 1638, when they first appear in the Ipswi
Town Records.[113] Matthew first wrote out his will on 7 May 1645, "
reason of p[re]sent sicknesse much increasing upon me. . . ." He mention
sons John (eldest), Matthew, and Joseph, daughters Mary, Anne, and Eli
beth. He left "the disposing of my three sonnes to the care of my execut
. . . Mr Nathan: Rogers Mr Norton Mr Robert Payne & my brother Jo
Whipple" (witnessed by John Norton and John Whipple). Matthew surviv
that bout of his illness, writing a memorandum to his will on 13 Nov. 164
"having by the p[ro]vidence of god changed my estate by marriage since
making of the writing above I doe give unto my wife Rose the sume of
pounds. . . ." This second portion was witnessed by Theophilus Wilson a
Thomas Knowlton. The inventory of Matthew's estate was taken 24 No
1646 and valued at £287 2*s.* 1*d.* The will was finally proved on 7 Sept. 16
by Theophilus Wilson and Thomas Knowlton.[114]

Children of Matthew and Anne (Hawkins) Whipple:

1 *Matthew Whipple*, bur. in Bocking 27 Oct. 1623.[115]
2 *Matthew Whipple* (again), bur. in Bocking 5 April 1627.[116]
3 *John Whipple*, b. ca. 1632;[117] m. (1) Sarah Kent, who d. in Ipswi
14 June 1658;[118] m. (2) in Ipswich 5 May 1659 Elizabeth Woo
man;[119] m. (3) Mary Stevens.[120]

---

[110] *The Probate Records of Essex County, Massachusetts*, 3 vols. (Salem: Essex Institute, 1916–2
1:87-91.

[111] Bocking Parish Registers [*supra* note 5].

[112] William Fiske, "The Two Wives of Lionel Chute," planned for future publication.

[113] Thomas Franklin Waters, *Ipswich in the Massachusetts Bay Colony*, 2 vols. (Ipswich: Ipswi
Hist. Soc., 1905–17), 1:494.

[114] *Probate Records of Essex County* [*supra* note 110], 1:87-91.

[115] Bocking Parish Registers [*supra* note 5].

[116] Bocking Parish Registers [*supra* note 5].

[117] John has been credited with a birth date of 6 Sept. 1632 in virtually all of the Whipple genealogi
studied to date. However, I have been unable to find any source for this supposition. Bocking baptism
registers do not exist for this period.

[118] *Vital Records of Ipswich, Massachusetts, to the End of the Year 1849*, 3 vols. (Salem: Essex Ins
tute, 1910–19), 2:710. The proof of Sarah's surname was made by Mary Lovering Holman in
"Whipple Notes" held by the New England Historic Genealogical Society, Manuscript G WH1 1120,
1-3. She observes that Richard Kent, who had no children of his own, divided the bulk of his est
between his brother James' son John Kent and Henry Short, the husband of Sarah Whipple (*Joh*
Matthew^{1}), the only child of Lieut. John Whipple (*Matthew*^{1}) by his first wife, Sarah Kent. Court reco
show that in 1672 Sarah Whipple (*John*^{2}, *Matthew*^{1}), aged 15, was living with her great-uncle Rich
Kent in a case against John Hobbs. John Whipple stated that John Hobbs of Newbury "hath b
complained of by my uncle Ric[hard] Kent . . . for severall abuses to my daughter now living in
house." Sarah Whipple, aged about 15 deposed that Hobbs told her that "he charged hir uncel that
should not latt any man keep har compani for he woold be y^{e} death of him." In 1674 Richard Kent g
property to "kinsman Henry Short who married my kinswoman." Sarah Whipple m. in Newbury
March 1674 Henry Short (*Vital Records of Gloucester, Massachusetts, to the End of the Year 1849*

4 *Joseph Whipple*; m. (1) Sarah —, who d. Ipswich 16 July 1676, (2) probably another Sarah —, who was living in 1709.[121]

5 *Matthew Whipple*, d. Ipswich 20 Oct. 1658;[122] m. Gloucester, Mass., 24 Dec. 1657 Mary Bartholomew, dau. of William.[123] Administration of the estate of Matthew Whipple, intestate, was granted 30 Nov. 1658 to widow Mary. The inventory of the estate presented 29 March 1659 amounted to 194*li*. 1*s*. 9*d*.[124] The land was to pass to Matthew's child with the rest of the estate to the widow. However, on 30 4m [June] 1663, the child having since deceased, the Salem Quarterly Court appointed John Whipple (*Matthew*^{1}), brother of the deceased, administrator of the estate of the child. On 29 Sept. 1663, two parts of the 175 li. estate were granted to Matthew's brother John and one part to his brother Joseph.[125]

6 *Mary Whipple*; m. Ipswich 15 Jan. 1673 Richard Jacobs.[126]

7 *Anne Whipple*; m. (1) John Annable, tailor of Ipswich, Mass., who d. there 8 Oct. 1664.[127] Administration of the estate of John Anable intestate was granted 10 Nov. 1664 to widow Anna.[128] She m. (2) Nicholas Clapp of Dorchester, Mass. On 23 May 1672, Nicholas Clapp of Dorchester, with the consent of Anna his wife, conveyed land in Ipswich to "John Aniball of Ipswich in the county of Essex Taylour, son in law [stepson] to the said Nicholas Clapp."[129] The

---

vols. [Topsfield: Topsfield Hist. Soc., 1917–24], 2:508). While there is no record of Sarah (Kent) Whipple's birth or baptism, Holman makes a credible case for her being the daughter of James Kent, brother of Richard Kent. On 30 Oct. 1683, Richard Kent made a deed to "cousin John Kent, sen[ior] of Newbury who is my brother James Kent's only son & heire." Finally, in 1685 Richard Kent of Newbury, in consideration of a promise made to Henry Short in case he "marryed my niece Sarah Whipple y^e daughter of John Whipple of Ipswich," which marriage has long been consummated, conveyed to Henry Short property in Ipswich.

[119] *Vital Records of Ipswich* [*supra* note 118], 2:454.

[120] Roger Joslyn, ed., *Vital Records of Charlestown, Massachusetts, to the Year 1850*, 2 vols. (Boston: NEHGS, 1984), 1:44.

[121] *Vital Records of Ipswich* [*supra* note 118], 2:710 (death of first Sarah); Charles Preston, "Genealogy of the Whipples of Ipswich for Five Generations," *Putnam's Monthly Historical Magazine* 2 (Salem, 1893): 8, reports that Joseph Whipple Sr. of Ipswich sold house and land to sons James, John, and Mathew on 20 Nov. 1708 and that on 7 May 1709 his widow Sarah gave up her right of dower. I have not found this transaction in Essex Probate Records, Essex Deeds, or Old Norfolk Deeds.

[122] *Vital Records of Ipswich* [*supra* note 118], 2:710.

[123] *Vital Records of Gloucester* [*supra* note 118], 2:572.

[124] *Probate Records of Essex County* [*supra* note 110], 1:274-75.

[125] *Probate Records of Essex County* [*supra* note 110], 1:417-18. Interestingly, the death of Matthew Whipple, son of Matthew and Mary, is recorded as having occurred in Boston on 30 June 1663, the same day the Salem Quarterly Court granted administration of the child "since deceased" to his uncle John Whipple (*Boston Births, Baptisms, Marriages, and Deaths, 1630–1699: [Ninth] Report of the Record Commissioners of the City of Boston* [Boston, 1883], 90).

[126] *Vital Records of Ipswich* [*supra* note 118], 2:454.

[127] *Vital Records of Ipswich* [*supra* note 118], 2:478.

[128] *Probate Records of Essex County* [*supra* note 110], 1:454-55.

[129] Ipswich Deeds, 3:317.

deed was witnessed by Thomas Savage Senior and William Bartholomew.[130]

8 *Elizabeth Whipple*.[131]

ii JOAN WHIPPLE; m. in Bocking 6 May 1613 HENRY CALDAM.[132] She may have been Joan Caldon "vidua" who m. there 16 May 1636 NICHOLAS IVES.[133]

Children of Henry and Joan (Whipple) Caldam (all burials in Bocking, Essex):[134]

1 *Anne Caldam*, alive in Dec. 1616 (grandfather Whipple's will).

2 *Henry Caldam*, bur. in Bocking 24 Feb. 1624/5, mentioned in his grandfather Whipple's will of Dec. 1616. Another of this name, son of Henry, was bur. there 11 Jan. 1627/8.

3 *Sara Caldam*, bur. in Bocking 6 July 1620.

4 *Rebecca Caldam*, bur. in Bocking 6 June 1626.

5 *Margaret Caldam*, bur. in Bocking 17 Sept. 1627.

iii ANNE WHIPPLE, bp. Bocking 1 Sept. 1583, as "daughter of Mathew";[135] m. there 13 Jan. 1605/6 JOHN PEPPER.[136] No mention of Anne or her family is made in Matthew's will of Dec. 1616.

iv MARGARET WHIPPLE, bp. Bocking 28 March 1585 as "daughter of Matthew," bur. there 13 Feb. 1608/9;[137] m. there 5 July 1603 LAURENCE ARTHUR.[138] Laurence m. (2) Judith Hawkins, sister of New England immigrant Ann (Hawkins) Whipple.[139] Laurence Arthur, clothier of Bocking, left a will dated 1 May 1632 in which he asked to be buried "neare unto my late wife [Margaret] in the churchyard of Bocking."[140] He mentions wife Judith, eldest son Hercules, youngest son John, six daughters (by Judith: Sara, Judith, Mary Jeane, Elizabeth, and Rebeckah), "cosin Arthur Harris" and his brother George Harris, brother-in-law John Hawkins of Braintree (to be overseer),[141] and son-in-law Henry Pye. A bequest was made to "base cosin" Trotter's four daughters "in token of thankfullnes for theire late ffathers legacie unto me."[142]

---

[130] William Bartholomew presumably being Anna's brother in law by way of her brother's marriage to Mary Bartholomew.

[131] Elizabeth is shown as the first wife of Jacob Perkins of Ipswich by Clarence Almon Torrey, *New England Marriages Prior to 1700* (Baltimore, 1997), 571. However, amongst those sources listed I am unable to find confirmation of this marriage. The Perkins genealogy is summarized in "The Perkins Family," *Essex Institute Historical Collections* 19 (Salem, 1882): 254-65, with pages 262-64 devoted to Jacob Perkins. For additional details see also Robert Charles Anderson, *The Great Migration Begins: Immigrants to New England, 1620–1633*, 3 vols. (Boston: NEHGS, 1995), 3:1431-33.

[132] Bocking Parish Registers [*supra* note 5]. I believe that Joan, rather than Jane, is the daughter who married Henry Caldam in 1613. While the marriage entry in the Bocking Register [*supra* note 5] calls her Jana, it is probable that Jane was still unmarried at the time Matthew wrote his will in late 1616. He lists Jane along with his three other unmarried daughters (Elizabeth, Mary, and Amy) in their birth order, giving bequests of £30 apiece. In contrast, Joan receives only 40*s*., consistent with her having already received her due at the time of marriage in 1613.

[133] Bocking Parish Registers [*supra* note 5].

[134] Bocking Parish Registers [*supra* note 5].

[135] Bocking Parish Registers [*supra* note 5].

[136] Bocking Parish Registers [*supra* note 5].

[137] Bocking Parish Registers [*supra* note 5].

[138] Bocking Parish Registers [*supra* note 5]. Lawrence was the son of Robert Arthure of Boreham, yeoman, whose will written 19 Aug. 1587, proved 18 June 1588, leaves to wife Margaret house and land in Springfield and identifies children (all under 21): eldest son Robert, younger sons Thomas and Lawrence, and daughters Mary and Margaret (unmarried) (F. G. Emmison, *Essex Wills, Volume V: The Archdeaconry Courts 1583–1592* [Chelmsford, 1989], 106-7).

[139] In his will, below, Lawrence Arthur calls John Hawkins of Braintree "brother-in-law." Lawrence could be using the term in regards to the latter's sister Anne having married the brother (Matthew Whipple the younger) of his first wife, Margaret. However, I think it more likely that he uses the term

---

more directly, with respect to his second wife, Judith, in which case she was the sister of John Hawkins and Anne (Hawkins) Whipple. The patriarch of this family, John Hawkins the elder of Braintree, was "Disseased & weake of Boddye" when he wrote his will on 14 Feb. 1619/20 (proved 8 April 1620) in which he names wife Mary, whom he makes executrix; sons John and Francis Hawkins; John Arthur and Laurence Arthur the sons of his son-in-law Laurence Arthur; John Wright and Matthew Wright the sons of his son-in-law Matthew Wright; John Hawkins son of John Hawkins Junior; and brother Robert Hawkins. No daughters are directly named (Commissary Court of London Wills, Essex and Hertfordshire Division, Essex Record Office Reference D/ABW 43/133). The fact that the elder John Hawkins mentions grandchildren John and Laurence Arthur, but fails to recognize Hercules (eldest son of Lawrence by his first wife, Margaret Whipple), strongly suggests that the grandsons named were children by Lawrence's second wife and that Judith was John Hawkins' daughter. Hercules lived to leave a 1686 PCC will (see below). Note that this summary differs from that reported by Mary Lovering Holman, *Ancestry of Charles Stinson Pillsbury and John Sargent Pillsbury*, 2 vols. (Concord, N.H.: Rumford Press, 1938), 1:44-45, who reports Laurence Arthur's second marriage as being to Anna —. See ibid., 45, for a full history of Laurence's line.

[140] PCC 64 Audley, will dated 1 May 1632 and proved 15 June 1632 by sons Hercules and John with relict Judith.

[141] John Hawkins (*John*), Gentleman of Braintree, left 40*s*. to his sister Whipple [Ann, wife of Matthew[1] Whipple] as a remembrance in his 1633 PCC Will (Russell 87), a full transcription of which is found in Waters, *Genealogical Gleanings* [*supra* note 1], 1:466-67. An abstract of the Inquisition Post
ortem following his death on 8 Sept. 1633 is found in Holman and Marvin [*supra* note 2], 540-41. John
kins (*John*) married Sarah, daughter of George Wood of Bocking in 1612. In his 1633 will (above)
es mother Mary (widow), wife Sara, and children (John, Robert, Abraham, Sara, Margaret, Mary,
th). Other immediate family mentioned are brother-in-law John Kent, brother Francis Hawkins,
Archer [examination of the original shows the spelling Archer rather than Arthor]. George
King left a PCC will (48 Goare) dated 17 Dec. 1636, proved 2 March 1636/7, which
others) wife Margaret, daughter Sarah Hawkins the widow of John Hawkins,
He also mentions son-in-law John Kent of Bocking, clothier, along with grand-
eorge, and Thomas Kent.

omas Trotter whose 1631 will leaves a legacy to the poor of Bocking to be
vision of (amongst others) Matthew Whipple and Laurence Arthur (see 3 iii
son, daughter of Thomas Wilson, gent., and his wife Susan. See Waters,
note 1], 2:1112-13, for the PCC will of Susan Wilson. The will of
usin, as well as the wife of Robert Whaples and wife of Myles Newton.
man, in his will dated 20 March 1571/2 and proved 22 May 1572,
Anne, and Joan (all under 20 and unmarried), and father-in-law
ynner the younger and William Skynner executors and entrusted
Emmison, *Essex Wills, Volume IX: The Bishop of London's*
1989], 106-7, 205). Anne Trotter of Felsted, single woman,
ct. 1594, named her Uncle Richard Skinner, Uncle William
Skinner, the children of her aunt Bernard, Cousin John
ppointed executor (F. G. Emmison, *Essex Wills, Volume*

Children of Laurence and Margaret (Whipple) Arthur (all baptisms and burials in Bocking):[143]

1 *Hercules Arthur*, bp. Bocking 16 Aug. 1604; m. Ann Broune.[144] He left a will dated 8 Dec. 1656.[145]

2 *John Arthur*, alive in 1656 at time of his brother Hercules' will, where he identified as the "minister of Clappen."

3 *Margaret Arthur*; m. Bocking 17 May 1627 Henry Pie.[146]

4 *Laurence Arthur*, bur. Bocking 4 July 1621.

v JANE WHIPPLE, bp. Bocking 3 Sept. 1587 as "daughter of Mathew"; m. there 15 April 1619 EDWARD FEAST, who was buried there 28 July 1625.[147] "Jana Feast vidua" m. (2) in Bocking 17 April 1626 JOHN WALLYS "viduus."[148] The possibility that Robert Wallys of Ipswich, Mass., is descended from this Bocking family is currently under investigation. Specifically, it is of possible interest that Robert's daughter, Sarah Wallis, married in Ipswich 19 April 1659 Simon^2 Stacy (*Simon*^{1}, *Thomas*^{A} *John*^{B}).[149] Simon^1 was of Bocking before settling in Ipswich.[150] Jane was sister-in-law to Susanna (Clarke) Whipple and therefore likely to have been known to Simon's parents.

vi ELIZABETH WHIPPLE, bp. Bocking 14 April 1594 as "daughter of Mathew"; m. there 3 Sept. 1618 ISAAC GREEN.[151]

vii JOHN[1] Whipple, bp. Bocking 29 Aug. 1596 as "son of Mathew,"[152] d. Ipswich, Mass., 30 June 1669;[153] m. (1) at St. Andrew by the Wardrobe in London

---

VI: The Archdeaconry Courts 1591–1597 [Chelmsford, 1991], 218). Richard Ellis of Pitsea in his will proved 15 Oct.1594 named wife Margaret, daughter Judith Barnes, and other daughters Alice Ellys and Rebecca, and nephews John Skynner and William Skynner his brother, appointed son-in-law John Barnes executor, and Thomas Trotter of Pitsea as supervisor (F. G. Emmison, *Essex Wills, Volume XI: The Commissary Courts 1587–1599* [Chelmsford, 1998] 90-91). The will of William Gamlinge/Gamblinge of Rettendon dated 29 Sept. 1589 and proved 20 Feb. 1590/1 mentions wife Alice, numerous sons, daughters Margaret and Sarah Gamblinge, brother-in-law William Gardner of Gosfield, and Hercules Stevens of Bocking (Emmison, *Essex Wills, Volume V* [*supra* note 138], 141-42).

[143] Bocking Parish Registers [*supra* note 5].

[144] License of marriage between Hercules Arthur, of Bocking, bachelor, and Ann Broune, of White Notley, spinster, to be solemnized in the church of Notley (Holman and Marvin [*supra* note 2], 517).

[145] PCC (1657 65), will dated 8 Dec. 1656 and proved 17 Feb. 1656/7.

[146] Bocking Parish Registers [*supra* note 5].

[147] Bocking Parish Registers [*supra* note 5].

[148] Bocking Parish Registers [*supra* note 5]. Nicholas Wallis married Sarah Bradstreet in Ipswich on 13 April 1657 (*Vital Records of Ipswich* [*supra* note 118], 1:443).

[149] *Vital Records of Ipswich* [*supra* note 118], 1:405. Administration of the estate of Robert Wallis was given 17 March 1673/4, at which time an agreement was made between Nicholas Wallis and Simon Stace "concerning the estate of their father Robard Wallis made Apr. 2, 1674" pertaining to the maintenance of Robert's widow, mother of Nicholas (*Probate Records of Essex County* [*supra* note 110], 2:387).

[150] William Wyman Fiske, "Clarke and Stacy Origins of Three Immigrants to Ipswich, Massachusetts: Simon and Elizabeth (Clarke) Stacy and her Sister Susanna (Clarke) Whipple," NEHGR 160 (2006): 17-29, at 21-24.

[151] Bocking Parish Registers [*supra* note 5].

[152] Bocking Parish Registers [*supra* note 5].

28 Aug. 1621 SUSANNA CLARKE,[154] sister of Elizabeth (Clarke) Stacy, who immigrated to Ipswich, Mass., with husband Simon¹ Stacy.[155] John m. (2) JENNET —, widow of Thomas Dickenson.[156] John first appears in the Town Records of Ipswich in 1638.[157] The will of John Whipple Sr. of Ipswich was dated 10 May 1669 and proved 28 Sept. 1669. He mentions daughters Susanna Worth (eldest) of Newbury, Mary Stone, Sarah Goodhue, son-in-law Anthony Potter, wife Jennet, son John Whipple, and loving friends Mr. William Hubbard and Mr. John Rogers of Ipswich. The will was witnessed by Wm. Hubbard, Robert Day, and Edward Lummas. The inventory of the estate of "Mr. John Whipple deceased June 30, 1669" was taken 15 July 1669 and valued at 444 *li.* 1*s.*[158] Mrs. Jennet Whipple was bur. in Rowley, Mass., 1 Feb. 1686.[159]

This line has been described elsewhere.[160] Of interest, the English births of John's children are recorded in the printed vital records of Salem, obviously compiled from a family manuscript described as having originated in "The Wheatland Papers now in possession of Essex Institute" (presumably now held at the Peabody Essex Library in Salem, Mass.).[161] It is unclear whether these are birth or baptismal dates. Attempts are currently underway to obtain access to the Wheatland Papers.

viii MARY WHIPPLE; m. Bocking 9 May 1625 RICHARD BAKER.[162] The will of Richard Baker, wheelwright, mentions wife Mary; sons Richard (eldest), John, and Matthew; daughters Mary and Sarah. John Laplove and William Horton (husband of Mary's sister Amy, below) witnessed.[163] Mary Baker "vidua" [widow] m. (2) in Bocking 29 April 1638 RICHARD PLEDGER. The will of Mary Pledger of Bocking, widow (proved 26 Feb. 1663) identifies children Richard Baker (eldest son), John Baker, Matthew Baker, Mary (unmarried), and Sarah the wife of Moses Hurrell of "Sibble Heddingham." Thomas Mann and Robert Smith witnessed.[164]

---

[153] *Probate Records of Essex County* [*supra* note 110], 2:166-68.

[154] Parish Registers of St. Andrew by the Wardrobe, Baptisms and Marriages, FHL microfilm 374343; Fiske, "Clarke and Stacy Origins" [*supra* note 150], 29.

[155] Fiske, "Clarke and Stacy Origins" [*supra* note 150], 28-29.

[156] The will of Jennet Whipple of Ipswich, written 7 Nov. 1686 and proved 14 April 1687, has been published elsewhere (Holman, *Pillsbury Ancestry* [*supra* note 139], 1:47-48). Jennet mentions the "village land given me in my husband Thomas Dickensons will," as well as her children James Dickenso Sarah Jewett, Mercy Adams, and Mary Quarrells. She named son-in-law Jeremiah Jewett executor "son in law" [stepson] Capt. John Whiple overseer. The will was proved in Suffolk Co. 14 April 16

[157] Waters, *Ipswich in the Massachusetts Bay Colony* [*supra* note 113], 1:494.

[158] *Probate Records of Essex County* [*supra* note 110], 2:166-68.

[159] *Vital Records of Rowley, Massachusetts, to the End of the Year 1849*, 2 vols. (Sale tute, 1928–31), 2:534.

[160] Whipple, *"Elder" John Whipple of Ipswich* [*supra* note 2], G4-

[161] *Vital Records of Salem, Massachusetts, to the End of* tute, 1916–1925), 2:424.

[162] This may have been a second marriage for the burial record of "Anna Baker uxor Richard

[163] Archdeaconry Court of Essex, Essex

[164] Archdeaconry Court of Essex, Ess

ix AMY WHIPPLE, bp. Bocking 20 Jan. 1604/5 as "daughter of Mathew Whipple";[165] m. there 31 Oct. 1626 WILLIAM HORTON.[166] In 1626 William was called "weaver" when he, along with three others of that trade, all of Bocking, were listed in a Recognizance[167] to answer Richard Baker, presumably husband of Mary Whipple above.

William Wyman Fiske is a physician practicing on Cape Cod, Massachusetts, where he lives with his wife and three daughters.
Email: billfiske@comcast.net.

---

[165] Bocking Parish Registers [*supra* note 5].

[166] Bocking Parish Registers [*supra* note 5].

[167] Document held in the Essex Record Office at Chelmsford, Essex, Ref: Q/SR 253/65,66.

Essex County Quarterly Courts

Ipswich Quarterly Court Sep 1653

Wife of John Whipple, presented for wearing a silk hood, discharged, her husband being worth two hundred pounds.

Writ dated 21 Sep 1653 and signed by John Whipple for the court. Served by Edward Mitchell, Sr, Marshall of Boston, by attachment of a black mare and a bay mare colt.

Matthew's brother

Ipswich 30 Nov 1658

Mathew Whiple, dying intestate, his widow Mary Whipple was appointed administratrix, Nov. 30, 1658, by Simon Bradstreet and Major-General Denison.

Felt's History of Ipswich pg 159 - (death notices)

(Having died so early, there is less in the records about Matthew.)

1669, June 30th. John Whipple, of the Hamlet, d. He had a large grant of land 1639; freeman 1640; sustained various offices in town; was feoffee of the Grammar School; Deputy to the General Court 1640, 1641, 1642, 1646, 1650, 1651, 1652, 1653; was Deacon and Ruling Elder of the First Church. He had had a wife, Sarah, who d. June 14th, 1658, and left a widow, Jennet, and children, Susannah, relict of Lionel Worth of Newbury, Mary Stone, Sarah Goodhue, and Anthony Potter, son-in-law. His son, John, had d. 1674. His widow, Jennet, is executrix and heir of Thomas Dickenson. Johnson mentions Mr. Whipple, as "one, whose godly sincerity is much approved."

Essex Co QC 1653

Ipsw QC Sep 1653 (pg 303) Mr William Payne v Henry Way, Non-payment of fish. With [illegible]*

* Writ dated 21 Sep signed by John Whipple for the court, served by Edward Mitchell Sr, marshall of Boston by attachment of a black mare & a bay mare colt. (Was it a coincidence that Mrs Whipple was presented for wearing a silk hood at the same court? She was discharged, her husband being worth 200 pounds

WHIPPLE.

Matthew Whipple the elder, of Bocking, Co. Essex, clothier; will of 19 Dec., 1616, proved 28 Jan., 1618; messuage in Bradford Street, Bocking, to eldest son Matthew Whipple; son John Whipple; daughters Jane, Elizabeth, Mary, Anne, Johane, Amye; my sister, wife of Richard Rathbone; to Hercules Stephens; to grandchildren, viz.; Hercules and Margaret Arthur, and Henry and Anne Caldham. [*Parker*, *L. 2.*]

The two brothers, Matthew and John Whipple, who were early settlers at Ipswich in New England and who held very respectable positions there, may have been the two sons of the testator above named, mentioned in his will. The family names, John and Matthew, appear in later generations among their descendants.

The relationship of the testator to the Arthur family is worth noting. From the ANNALS OF EVANGELICAL CONFORMITY, before quoted, we learn that a Rev. John Arthur, ejected from Clapham, Surrey, was the son of Laurence Arthur, of Springfield, Co. Essex, and brother of Hercules Arthur, who purchased the manor of Fryers, Bocking, in 1632. He was of Emmanuel College, Cambridge, and was presented to the vicarage of Clapham by Charles I, in 1642. He married Anne, daughter of Miles Corbet, who was member for Yarmouth during the long Parliament. On the death of his brother Hercules, Dr. Arthur succeeded to the manor of Fryers and was himself succeeded in the ownership of the estate by his son John.

From Wright's History of Essex, we get confirmation of the above, and learn, furthermore, that the mansion of Fryers is in Bradford street, on the road to Braintree. In 1696, John, son and heir of the Rev. Dr. Arthur, sold the estate to John Maysent, of Bocking, who was son of John Maysent, of Justices, in Finchingfield, by his wife Judith, daughter of Henry Pye and Margaret, his wife, sister to Hercules Arthur.

Hercules Arthur and his sister Margaret Pye will doubtless be found to be the same as the devisees mentioned in the will of Matthew Whipple.

Above shews the reason for the
Whipple brothers moving to New England.

Whipple / Whipley Coat of Arms;
(Ess., Norfolk)

Sable, on a chevron betw.
3 swans' heads erased arg.,
as many crescents of the field.

Gen Armory pg ~ (Whipple)

Clippings

Whipple

"NEW ENGLAND MARRIAGES PRIOR TO 1700"

by Clarence Almon Torrey

WHIPPLE, Benjamin (1654-1704) & Ruth **MATHEWSON** (-1704+); 1 Apr 1686; Providence
WHIPPLE, Cyprian & Dorothy **SYMONDS**; 19 Dec 1695; Ipswich/Stonington, CT/Stow, MA
WHIPPLE, David & _?_ ; ca 1634/40?; Rehoboth
WHIPPLE, David (1656-1710) & 1/wf Sarah **HEARNDEN/HEARNDON** (-1677); 15 May 1675; Providence/Rehoboth
WHIPPLE, David (-1710) & 2/wf Hannah **TOWER/COWELL?** (1652-1722); 13 Dec 1677, 11 Nov 1677, 13? Nov; Hingham/Attleboro/Providence
WHIPPLE, Eleazer (1645-1719) & Alice **ANGELL** (1649-1743); 26 Jan 1669, 1669/70?, 1668/9; Providence

WHIPPLE, Israel (1678-1720) & Mary **WILMARTH**; m int 1697; Rehoboth/Attleboro
WHIPPLE, James & 1/wf Experience **HINCKLEY** (1664/5-); b 27 Jul 1688; Barnstable?/Boston
WHIPPLE, James & 2/wf Abigail (**HAMMON**) **GREEN**; 25 Feb 1692
WHIPPLE, Jeremiah & _?_ [**SHOPPY**]?/[**SHOPPEN**]?; b 1684?; Rehoboth?/Cumberland, RI
WHIPPLE, John (1596-1669) & Susanna [(**STACY/CLARK**)] (-aft 13 Jul 1661); in Eng, b 1622; Ipswich
WHIPPLE, John (?1617-1685) & 1/wf Sarah _?_ (?1624-1666); b 1641, 1639?; Dorchester/Providence
Son — **WHIPPLE,** John (1628-1683) & 1/wf Martha [**REYNER**] (-1679/80); ca 1653, b 1655; Ipswich
WHIPPLE, John (?1633, 1632-1695) & 1/wf Sarah [**KENT**] (-1658); ca 1656; Rowley
WHIPPLE, John (?1633-1695) & 2/wf Elizabeth **WOODMAN** (-ca 1662); 5 May 1659, 6 May; Ipswich
WHIPPLE, John (?1633-1695) & 3/wf Mary **STEVENS** (1640?-); 21 Jul 1663; Charlestown
WHIPPLE, John (1640±-1700) & 1/wf Mary **OLNEY** (-1676±); 4 Dec 1663; Providence
WHIPPLE, John (-1669) & 2/wf Jennet (_?_) [**DICKINSON**] (-1687), w Thomas; aft Apr 1662, ca 1667; Rowley/Ipswich
WHIPPLE, John (1640-1700) & 2/wf Rebecca (?**BROWN**) **SCOTT** (-1701), w John?; 15 Apr 1678; Providence
WHIPPLE, John (-1683) & 2/wf Elizabeth (**BURR**) **PAINE**, w John; 28 Jun 1680; Ipswich
WHIPPLE, John (1657-1722?) & Catharine **LAYTON/LEIGHTON** (-1721); 16 Jun 1681; Ipswich
WHIPPLE, John (?1660-1722?) & 1/wf Hannah [**ROLFE**] (1664?-1701); b 1687; Ipswich
WHIPPLE, John (1640, 1664?-1700) & Lydia **HOAR**; 9 Nov 1688, 16 Nov 1688; Providence/Bristol, RI/Taunton
WHIPPLE, Jonathan (1664-1721) & 1/wf Margaret [**ANGELL**]; b 1692, b 1691(2?); Providence
WHIPPLE, Jonathan (1664-1721) & 2/wf Anna/Hannah [**DARLING**]?; b 1701?; Providence
Son — **WHIPPLE,** Joseph (1640-1707) & 1/wf Sarah _?_ (-1676); b 1665; Ipswich
WHIPPLE, Joseph & 2/wf Sarah _?_, m/2 Walter **FAIRFIELD**?; ca 18 Jul 1676, ca 1678; Ipswich
WHIPPLE, Joseph (1662-1746) & Alice **SMITH** (1664-1739); 20 May 1684; Providence, RI
WHIPPLE, Joseph (1666-1734+) & Sarah [**HUTCHINSON**] (-1734+); b 1692, b 1691?; Ipswich/Salem
WHIPPLE, Joseph & Mary [**ADAMS**] (1670-1734); b 1692, ca 4 Aug 1688; Ipswich
WHIPPLE, Joseph (1666-) & Mary **SYMONDS** (1674-1703); 10 Dec 1697; Ipswich
✓ **WHIPPLE,** Matthew^1 (-1647) & 1/wf Anna **HAWKINS** (ca 1600-1643); Bucking, Eng, 7 May 1622; Ipswich
WHIPPLE, Mathew^1 (-1647) & 2/wf Rose [(?**BARKER**/?**BAKER**)] **CHUTE**, w Lionel; bef 13 Nov 1646, aft 7 May 1645; Ipswich
Son — **WHIPPLE,** Matthew (1635-1658) & Mary **BARTHOULMUE**, m/2 Jacob **GREEN** 1660?; 24 Dec 1657; Gloucester
WHIPPLE, Matthew (1663?-) & 1/wf Jemima [**LANE**] (1666-); b 1685; Ipswich
WHIPPLE, Matthew (1663?-) & 2/wf Joanna [**APPLETON**?]/[**COGSWELL**?] (ca 1670-); ca 1688, b 1685, b 1696; Ipswich
WHIPPLE, Matthew (1664-1736) & Dorcas [**PAINE**] (?1666-1735); ?Ipswich
WHIPPLE, Matthew (?1663-) & 3/wf Martha (**DENISON**) (**WIGGIN/WIGGEN**) [**THING**] (1668-), w Thomas, w Jonathan; 11 Jun 1697, 11 Jan; Ipswich/Stonington, CT
WHIPPLE, Matthew (-1742) & Bethia _?_ ; b 1701; Ipswich
WHIPPLE, Noah (-1703) & 1/wf Susannah _?_ ; ca 1680/90?, b 1696, b 1697; Providence
WHIPPLE, Noah (-1703) & 2/wf Anphillis [**SMITH**] (-1703+); b 1701?; Providence
WHIPPLE, Samuel (1644-1711) & Mary [**HARRIS**] (?1639-1722); b 1669; Providence
WHIPPLE, Samuel (1669-1728) & Elizabeth **EDDY** (1670-); 26 Feb 1690, 1690/1; Providence/Groton, CT
WHIPPLE, Thomas & Abigail **JENKS**, b 1701?; Providence
WHIPPLE, William (1652-1712) & Mary _?_ (-1712+); b 1685; Providence

History of Ipswich, Essex & Hamilton Massachusetts
— by Joseph B. Felt (1834)
Obituary & Biographical Notices

Pg 157

1647, Sept. 28th. Matthew Whipple d. l. He left a wife, ✓ Rose, whom he had m. Nov. 13th, 1646, and children by a former wife, deceased, John, Matthew, Joseph, Mary, Ann, and Elizabeth, and a brother, John. Land was granted him, 1638, in the Hamlet, where he resided. His house was sold July 10th, 1647, to John Annable, tailor. He held the chief offices in town, and was on some of its most important committees.

Pg 159

bro.

1669, June 30th. John Whipple, of the Hamlet, d. He had a large grant of land 1639; freeman 1640; sustained various offices in town; was feoffee of the Grammar School; Deputy to the General Court 1640, 1641, 1642, 1646, 1650, 1651, 1652, 1653; was Deacon and Ruling Elder of the First Church. He had had a wife, Sarah, who d. June 14th, 1658, and left a widow, Jennet, and children, Susannah, relict of Lionel Worth of Newbury, Mary Stone, Sarah Goodhue, and Anthony Potter, son-in-law. His son, John, had d. 1674. His widow, Jennet, is executrix and heir of Thomas Dickerson. Johnson mentions Mr. Whipple, as "one, whose godly sincerity is much approved."

Pg 167

1683, Aug. 10th. John, son of Matthew Whipple, d. at the Hamlet. He m. Elizabeth Woodman, May 5th, 1659, who survived him. He left children, Susan Lane, Sarah, John, Matthew, and Joseph. His estate was £3,000. He held principal offices of the town, was feoffee of the Grammar School, and Representative to the General Court in 1674, 1679, 1682, 1683. —— 1676, Feb. 21st. He is appointed by the Legislature, as Captain of a troop, to march for Marlborough against the enemy. —— 1677, July 8th. He had been lately with a troop to fight Indians at Salisbury. —— 1683, April 10th. He was County Treasurer. His fair and expanding prospect of usefulness and honor could not delay his exit.

Pg 170

1695, Nov. 22d. John Whipple, sen., of the Hamlet, d. He was son of Matthew, baptized in Essex, England, Sept. 6th, 1632. He was Lieutenant of a troop, held town offices, was Deputy to the General Court in 1674, 1679, 1682, 1683. He m. a daughter (Mary) of Humphrey Reyner of Rowley. She survived him. He left children, John, Matthew, Joseph, Cyprian, Mary, Anna, Sarah, Elizabeth, and Hannah. Estate £1639 16*s*.

Clippings

(Whipple)

Founders of American Families - by Meredith Colket

WHIPPLE

JOHN Dorchester (Mass.) 1632, Providence 1659, d there 16 May 1685. Agent for Mr. Saltonstall. Captain. Tavern keeper. Deputy. ner 32:403 (desc); *Captain John Whipple and descendants* 1946; *Whipple, Paddock Bull families* 1970; *Noah Whipple* 1971. #723.†

JOHN Ipswich (Mass.) 1638, d there 30 June 1669. Deacon. Brother of Matthew, Pillsbury, v 1; *Descendants of Matthew Whipple of England* 1965, 1969, 2 v. His home, still standing, is illustrated here. (See the picture on another page)

MATTHEW Ipswich (Mass.) 1638, d there 28 Sept 1647. Deputy. Deacon. Brother of John of Ipswich. *Descendants of Matthew Whipple of England* 1965, 1969, 2 v. #335.

Directory of Ancestral Heads 1620-1700 by Frank R Holmes - page cclx

WHIPPLE

JOHN, b. Eng., 1617, freeman Ipswich, Mass., 1640, died 1669.

JOHN, carpenter at Dorchester, Mass., 1632, removed Providence, R. I., 1659, died 1685.

✓ MATTHEW, brother of first John, b. Bocking, county of Essex, Eng., 1605, granted land Ipswich, Mass., 1638, died 1647.

Pioneers of Massachusetts by Charles Pope page 491

WHIPPLE,

John, carpenter, Dorchester, in employ of Mr. Stoughton in 1632; rem. to Ipswich; propr. 1638; ret. to Dorch.; frm. and deputy May 13, 1640. One of the Court's com. of valuation in 1640. Engaged in trade with William Paine and others in 1647. Cornet, town officer. [Suff. De. III, 357.] Sold land and buildings at Dorch. and rem. to Providence in 1658. Ret. to Ipswich. Sold land May 31, 1673. Wife Sarah adm. chh. 29 (8) 1641; ch. John bapt. 1 (9) 1641, Sarah bapt. 6 (12) 1641, Samuel bapt. 17 (1) 1644, Eliezer bapt. 8 (1) 1646, Mary bapt. 9 (2) 1648, William bapt. 16 (3) 1652, Benjamin bapt. 4 (4) 1654, David bapt. 28 (7) 1656, Joseph, Jonathan and Abigail b. at Providence.

He d. 16 May, 1685, ae. about 68 years. [Gr. St.] Genealogy, [Reg. XXXII, 403.]

✓ Matthew, bro. of John, Ipswich, propr. 1638. See Nevill. *

Will dated 7 (3) 1645, altered after marriage 13 (9) 1646, was prob. 28 (7) 1647. Beq. to ch. John, Matthew, Joseph, Mary, Anna and Elizabeth; to wife Rose the est. she had before marriage to him, and £10; to the elders Nathaniel Rogers and John Norton; bro. John Whipple to be one of the overseers. A large estate.

Virkus Compendium of American Genealogy vol 6 page 816

WHIPPLE, Dea. John (*d* 1669), from Eng., settled at Ipswich, Mass., 1638; freeman, 1640; dep. Gen. Ct., 1640-42, 46, 50, 54; deacon, ruling elder, 1658; agent for "The Worshipful Mr. Saltonstall" in his business affairs; selectman; the "Whipple House" is now the home of the Ipswich Hist. Soc.; *m* Sarah Hawkins; *m* 2d. Jennett –. ?

No known relation to the men following, though it seems there should be

(Records confuse this man with Matthew's brother.)

WHIPPLE

* See note

JOHN WHIPPLE, died May 16, 1685. He was of Dorchester, Mass., and Providence, R. I., and received as a purchaser at Providence, July 27, 1659, where he was Deputy for eight years, between 1666 and 1677. "He was one of those who 'staid and went not away' in King Philip's War." His will was proved May 27, 1685, and he was buried on his own land, with his wife, Sarah —— (1624-1666), whom he married in 1639. Subsequently, their bodies were removed to the north burial-ground. Their son:

JOHN WHIPPLE, JR., was born 1640, and died December 15, 1700. *Mary*, daughter of Thomas and Mary (Small) Olney, was his first wife, and their marriage occurred December 4, 1663. He was Town Treasurer of Providence, 1668; Town Clerk, 1670 to 1672, 1678 and 1681; Deputy six years, between 1670 and 1690, and one of the Town Council four years, between 1674 and 1687. His will being declared void by the Town Council, the estate was divided among the heirs in 1701.

His daughter *Mary* married JAMES CARDER, and their daughter, *Sarah Carder*, married GOVERNOR GEORGE HAZARD.

The brother again - the beautiful house is shown in a photograph on another page. Our Matthew Whipple died only 9 years after he got to America - not enough time to develop such a home - but this shows the level of culture of the family at such a date - that they were able and sophisticated enough to accomplish this in an early primitive environment. John lived 22 years longer - Matthew may have been ailing. John's [illegible] enlarged the home. Genealogies seem to mix up the two Johns - e.g., which was Saltonstall's agent?
I have not found literature about the derivation of the Whipple name, but see over.

* Nevill, a single man (d 1649) was Matthew's servant.

* Could this have been a cousin of some sort from England? The immigrant Richard Rathbone, our Matthew Whipple's uncle (m. his aunt Marian Whipple) followed a similar pattern of quickly leaving MA for RI.

~~Abigail, born April 13, 1693~~
~~Mary, born May 7, 1697~~
~~Capt. Nathaniel, born April 24, 1699 d. May 27, 1790~~

~~Here lyes buried ye body of Mr Nathaniel Wells who died October ye 13 1717 aged 48 years~~

~~Here lies Mrs. Mary Wells wife of Mr. Nathaniel Wells died August ye 19, 1721, aged 52 years~~

~~**WEDGEWOOD**, John, was a soldier in the Pequot war in which he was wounded. He is referred to in Mr. Hubbard's Indian Wars.~~

~~He had a grant of seven acres of land, which he sold to William Symonds, who sold the same to William Story, January 11, 1655.~~

~~In 1639, he had a planting lot at Rabbit Hill.~~

~~**WEST**, John: was one of Maj. Denison's subscribers, 1648. He sold his house and land to John Woodam, June 28, 1649. He sells lands to William Story, Jan. 4, 1655, adjoining the common. He is called "yeoman."~~

~~Twiford West, 1667, payd for his daughter, the wife of Abra: Perkins, upon her pr'st'ment (for wearing silk,) three shillings, and fees, 2s 6d.~~

~~He had a share and a half in Plum Island, 1664.~~

~~He purchased commonage of Henry Pindar, Jan 20, 1657~~

~~He was complained of for felling walnut trees, 1666.~~

~~His will is dated Dec. 5, proved Jan. 11, 1685. He appointed his wife Mary, ex'r.~~

~~Mary West: will dated June 22, proved Sept. 27, 1697. She confirms to her son John several parcels of land given to him June 1, 1687.~~

~~To her son Nathaniel she bequeaths lands bounded by Bull Brook.~~

~~Children of Twiford and Mary:~~
~~John, born October 20, 1661~~
~~Nathaniel, born January 1, 1666~~
~~Elisabeth, Hannah~~

~~John West, son of Twiford, with wife Sarah, had Elizabeth, born July 31, 1688. Sarah died, and he m. (2) Elizabeth, widow of Thomas Atwood. She died Aug. 20, 1720. He was Constable in 1698, and later.~~

The Hammatt Papers - by Abraham Hammatt
(1880 Reprint by Genealogical Publ. Co.)

the brother →

WHIPPLE, John, took the freeman's oath at Boston, May 13, 1640.

1641. He was a commoner.

1648. Subscriber to Major Denison's allowance.

1640-1653. He was Representative to General Court, eight years.

1646, February 1. He was one of such as promise carting voluntary toward the Cart Bridge, besides the rate, a day work a piece.

1651-2, January 26. He was appointed together with Mr. Hubbard, Mr. Rogers, Mr. Norton, Mr. Denison, the two Mr. Paynes, and Mr. Bartholomew, to

ORGANIZE THE GRAMMAR SCHOOL

and afterwards, on the removal of Mr. Bartholomew to Boston, 1665, he was chosen a Feoffee of that Institution.

1664. Had two shares in Plum Island, &c., at which date he has the title "Elder." He was Deacon and Ruling Elder of the First Church.

He died June 30, 1669. Sarah, his wife, died June 14, 1658; and he left a widow, Janet. In his will he mentions his children:

John, whom he appoints ex'r
Susanna, widow of Lionel Worth
Mary Stone
Sarah Goodhue
Son-in-law Anthony Potter

John Whipple 2, son of John 1, had one and an half shares in Plum Island, 1664.

1664. Selectman. 1665. One to lay out Castle Neck.

1668, April 29. Freeman.

1668. Cornet of the Troop.

1673, Feb. 22. Came into full communion with Church

1674-1683. Representative to General Court four years.

1679. Voter in Town affairs.

He was born in Essex, Eng., and was bap. Sept 6, 1632.

He married Mary Reynor, daughter of Humphrey Reynor, of Rowley.

He died November 22, 1695, and left his wife Mary, and children:

John, born March 36, 1660
Elizabeth, born January 12, 1661
Joseph, died August, 1665
Matthew, born May 29, 1664
Joseph, born Sept. 17, 1665, died June 8, 1666
Hannah
Joseph, married Mary Symonds, died 1699
Cyprian, born January 17, 1670
Sarah, born September 2, 1671
Anna, born October 25, 1675
Mary. born May 11, 1677

John Whipple 3, (John 2,) was one of the eighteen of the members of the young generation who joined the Church by taking the covenant, January 18, and 25, 1673.

He subscribed £2 towards the bell of 1699.

With his wife, Katharine Leighton, (married June 26, 1681,) he had:

Katherine, born August 15, 1685
Elisabeth, born April 9, 1688, d. e.
Sarah, born December 16, 1692
Elisabeth, born June 2, 1695
Susanna, born April 3, 1696
Mary, born February, 1697

Here lyes buried ye body of Major John Whipple who
Decd June ye 12th, 1722, in ye 65th year of his age

Here lyes ye body of Mrs. Ketherine Whipple, late wife
of Majr John Whipple, who Died January ye 15,
1720-21, aged 63.

Matthew Whipple 3, son of John 2, married Martha Thing, January 11, 1697. She died August 7, 1774. He died February 17, 1764.

Joseph Whipple 3, son of John 2, married, Dec. 10, 1697, Mary, daughter of William Symonds. They had:

Archelaus, born March 26, 1692
Sarah, born May 14, 1693, died May 14, 1695
Elisabeth, born December 9, 1696
Mary, born February 15, 1698

Joseph was dead in October, 1699. Mary (Symonds) his wife, died June 20, June 20, 1703.

Cyprian Whipple 3, son of John 2, married December 19, 1695, Dorothy Symonds, daughter of William Symonds.

1699, October 2. Cyprian Whipple and Dorothy his wife, Mary Whipple, widow, and Elisabeth Symonds apply for letters of administration on the estate of William Symonds, their father deceased.

Matthew Whipple, 1, was commoner in 1641.

He was twice married. His second wife, Rose, he married November 13, 1646. His children were:

John, born July 15, 1657
Matthew, born December 20, 1658
Joseph,
Mary, Ann, Elisabeth

He had together with his brother John, 200 acres of land granted February 19, 1637, at the Hamlet, where he resided. He died October 20, 1658.

Capt. John 2, son of Matthew 1, was one of Major Denison's subscribers, 1648.

Had a share and a half in Plum Island, 1664.

Voter in Town affairs, 1679.

He was appointed Captain of the Troop, February 2, 1676; and in 1677 he went out against the Indians at Salisbury.

He was appointed County Treasurer, April 10, 1683.
He married (1) Elisabeth Woodman, May 5, 1659.
He married (2) Martha ——— she died Feb. 24, 1679.
He married (3) Elisabeth Payne, June 28, 1680.
His children: John, Matthew, Joseph,
Susan Lane, Sarah.

He died August 10, 1683, and left an estate of £3314. His will is dated August 2, 1683. Inventory Septem'r 10. Among the items were: Farm occupied by Arthur Abbott; Farm occupied by Fennel Ross; John's house and barn and kiln; Matthew's house and barn; Joseph when he comes of age shall enjoy the houses, buildings, Malting Office, wth ye others. Witnesses William Hubbard, Samuel Phillips, Daniell Epps.

John Whipple 3, son of John 2, was born March 30, 1660 with Hannah his wife, he had:

Martha, married Rev. Richard Brown, Newbury
Susannah, wife of Rev. John Rogers of Eliot
Mary, wife of Benjamin Crocker, Gram. Sch. Master
Hannah, born June 30, 1692
John, born December 16, 1695

His wife, Hannah, died October 20, 1701. He died June 11, 1722.

In 1695, he was Representative and Justice of Sessions.

January 29, 1701-2. Liberty granted to Cornet Matthew Whipple, Mr. John and Joseph Whipple, and Mr. Isaac Rindge, to build a shed for their horses forty feet in length and not exceeding ten foot wide, about twenty feet from ye watch-house, southerly towards ye old meeting house.

To John Whipple with title of Lieut. was assigned in the new Meeting-house, 1700, "that pew next Mr. Rogers at ye end of ye men's short seats for his wife and family. To himself was appointed a place on seat Number 1.

To Lieut. Whipple was granted March 23, 1692-3, the thirteenth lot of 22 feet front, lying by ye River side, between Samuel Ordway's shop and ye Town Bridge.

1699. He subscribed £2 toward the bell.

1708. He was commoner and had the title Capt.

Matthew 3, (John 2,) married the eldest daughter of William Cogswell. To him was assigned ye 2d pew on ye so-east side of ye great door for his wife and family. To himself was appointed a place on seat No. 2.

1699. He subscribed £2 toward the bell.

1709, May 15. He was appointed guardian of Dorothy and Emerson Cogwell, minor children of William Cogswell deceased.

1697-8. He was chosen Selectman. He is at this date designated as "Malster."

Matthew 3, and Joanna his wife, had:

Matthew, born Oct. 20, 1686, died Feb. 17, 1764
John, born July 2, 1689
Joanna, born July 22, 1692, died August 31
Appleton, born October 19, 1693
Elisabeth, born March 1, 1694-5
William, born Feb. 28, 1695-6, of Kittery, Maine
Joseph, H. C. 1720, minister of Hampton Falls

William Whipple 4, was of Kittery, Maine, in 1730, and married Mary, daughter of Robert Cutt. They were the parents of Brigadier General William Whipple, who was a signer of the Declaration of Independence. Gen. Whipple resided in Portsmouth, N. H. His grave is in the North Cemetery, and designated by an altar stone. In an old-time burying gronnd at Kittery are the graves of Capt. William and Mary (Cutt) Whipple:

In Memory of Capt.
William Whipple
Departed this Life
Aug'st 7th 1751
In the 56 year
of his age.

Here lies interred the Remains
of Mrs. Mary Whipple, Relict
of Capt. William Whipple
late of Kittery deceased
She departed this Life
the 24th day of February, 1783
aged 84 Years
Her religion was without ostentation
And her charity unlimited.

Here Lies interred ye Remains of Mr. Robert Cutt
Whipple, who Departed this Life May ye 4th,
A. D. 1761, aged 25 years.

Joseph 2, son of Matthew 1, wife Sarah;

1664. Had a share in Plum Island.

1697. Horses on the common. He is then styled, joiner.

1673. Joseph Whipple, ex Uxor, came into full communion with the Church, February 23.

Joseph and Sarah had:

Joseph, born November 1, 1665, d. e.
Joseph, born October 31, 1666
Ruth
Margery, born August 28, 1668
Sarah, born March 29, 1670
Matthew, born November 25, 1673
Mary, born December 25, 1674

Sarah Whipple, wife of Joseph, died July 16, 1676.

Q 906 E78 V.104; 326 (1968)

TABLE IV

LIST OF COMMONERS, 1641, IPSWICH MASSACHUSETTS*

William Adams
John Annable
Samuel Appleton
✓ William Averill
Henry Bachellor
Robert Beacham
Thomas Beery
Jeremy Belcher
Richard Bisgood
Thomas Bishop
✓ Thomas Boarman, Sr.
Thomas Bracey
Humphrey Bradstreet
Simon Bradstreet
Thomas Brewer
John Brown
Mathias Button
Lionel Chute
John Clark, Jr.
John Clark, Sr.
Thomas Clark
Isaac Comings
John Cowley
Robert Cross
Francis Dane
John Dane, Jr.
John Dane, Sr.
John Davis
Robert Day
Thomas Dorman
William Duglas
✓ Thomas Emerson
William Fellows
Giles Firmin
Thomas Firmin
Reginald Foster
Thomas French
John Gage
Edmund Gardner
George Giddings
William Goodhue
Henry Greene
Thomas Hart
Richard Hatley
Andrew Hodges
William Knight
John Knowlton
Thomas Knowlton
William Knowlton
William Lampson
Roger Lancton
John Lee
Thomas Lee
Edward Lumas
Richard Lumkin
Thomas Manning
Joseph Medcalfe
Joseph Morse
Robert Muzzey
Thomas Newman
John Norton
Christopher Osgood
William Paine
Moses Pengry
✓ John Perkins
John Perkins, Jr.
John Perkins, Sr.
Allen Perley
John Pettis
Henry Pindarr
Samuel Podd
John Proctor
Mark Quilter
Thomas Rawlinsome, Sr.
Joseph Redding
Nathaniel Rogers
Thomas Safford
Richard Saltonstall
Richard Schofield
Thomas Scott
John Shatswell
Theophilus Shatswell
Richard Smith
Thomas Smith
Simon Stace
Mark Symonds
✓ Samuel Symonds
✓ John Tuttle
Jonathan Wade
Daniel Warner

James Howe
Thomas Howlett
William Hubbard
✓ John Jackson
Richard Jacob
Francis Jordan
Richard Kimball
Henry Kingsbury
✓ Robert Kinsman
Alexander Knight
Richard Wattles
Thomas Wells
John Whipple
✓ Matthew Whipple
William White
Robert Whitman
John Whittingham
Theophilus Wilson
Robert Woodmansee
John Wyatt
Samuel Younglove

*Ipswich Grants, p. 84.

Within five years need arose for more commonage. The commoners voted in 1665 to divide 800 acres which included Plum Island, Hogg Island, and Castle Neck. It was to be divided among those with common rights according to the proportion of 4, 6, and 8 based on the amount of taxes paid as follows:[76]

4 - those not exceeding 6s. 8d. in a county rate
6 - those not exceeding 16s.
8 - those exceeding 16s. together with magistrates, and elders

It was decided that a single share would be 3 acres—that is to say that those under the "4" proportion would receive 3 acres; under the "6" proportion 4½ acres; under the "8" proportion 6 acres.[77] This manner of dividing resulted in the creation of 28 double shares, 70 divisions of 1½ shares, and 105 single-share lots. That meant a total of 203 commoners in the town in 1665, although some of the commoners were not persons. For example, the meetinghouse was given a double share.

The most significant thing about the dividing of the commons in 1665 was the manner in which it was done. By basing it on taxation these records fill the gap caused by the lack of early tax lists. The list of commoners made in 1665 also served as a ranking of material wealth and to some extent social standing. It might be said that the double shareholders were the wealthy and leading citizens. The next group, those receiving 1½ shares, could be considered to be those of upper or middle status. Listed in the first group were the Symonds, the Hubbards, the Appletons, the Paines, the Cogswells, and most of the other names which constantly occur in any discussion of public life in the town.

---

[76] Town Records, p. 16.
[77] *Ibid.*, p. 17.

Whipple

Felt's History of Ipswich – 1834

——1690, Nov. 4th. He was designated with others to revise the laws about public charges.

1693, Dec. Robert, son of Elder Robert Paine, d. Æ. 59. He m. Elizabeth Reiner, July 11th, 1666. He had a son John, b. Oct. 24th, 1684, and left a daughter Elizabeth, who m. Daniel Smith, and d. 1717. He graduated at Harvard College in 1656, and was a preacher.

✓ ersham

[redacted]

✓ ✓ 1695, Nov. 22d. John Whipple, sen., of the Hamlet, d. He was son of Matthew, baptized in Essex, England, Sept. 6th, 1632. He was Lieutenant of a troop, held town offices, was Deputy to the General Court in 1674, 1679, 1682, 1683. He m. a daughter (Mary) of Humphrey Reyner of Rowley. She survived him. He left children, John, Matthew, Joseph, Cyprian, Mary, Anna, Sarah, Elizabeth, and Hannah. Estate £1639 16*s*.

1696, Jan. 2d. Moses Pengry d. Æ. 86. His wife, Lydia, d. Jan. 16th, 1676. He was of Ipswich in 1642, set up salt-works here in 1652, was Selectman and often on town business, was Deputy to the General Court in 1665, and was Deacon of the First Church. He lived long and usefully on earth, as one preparing for a heritage in heaven.

1696, Oct. 4th. Thomas, son of Jonathan Wade, d. Æ. 46. He m. Elizabeth Cogswell, Feb. 22d, 1670, who d. Dec. 28th, 1726. He had children, Jonathan, Thomas, John, William, Nathaniel, Elizabeth, Edward, Samuel, and Susannah. He was often engaged in town business, was long Town Clerk, and Justice of the General Sessions Court. —— 1691. He was Captain of a troop. —— 1692, May 4th. He is appointed by the General Court on a committee to consider the petition of West Newbury, for settling a minister. —— 1696, April 5th. As Colonel of Middle Essex Regiment, he receives orders from Lieutenant-Governor Stoughton, to call out his men against French and Indians, as occasion may require, and to order military watches, wards, and scouts, as be needful. —— When he fell, death had "a shining mark."

46!

1696, Nov. 11th. Robert, son of Robert Lord, d. He m. Hannah Day, who survived him. He had sons, Robert, John, Thomas, James, Joseph, who removed to Cohanzey, N. J., and Nathaniel, who removed to the Isle of Shoals. He was Selectman, and often chosen for town affairs, and was Marshal of the Court ten years.

1697, Sept. 2d. Joseph, son of Deacon Wm. Goodhue, d. Æ. 56. He became freeman in 1674, was frequently Selectman, and was Deacon of the First Church. He m. Sarah Whipple, July 3d, 1661, whose dying advice was published, as previously related. He m. widow Rachel Todd, Oct. 15th, 1685, and left a wife, Mary, and children, William, Mary Norton, Margery Knowlton, Sarah Kimball, Susannah Kimball, Joseph, and Anna Todd, daughter-in-law.

1699, Oct. 27th. Simon Stacey d. He was Selectman, often entrusted with town affairs, Captain of a company, and Representative to the General Court in 1685, 1686, 1689. He left a wife, Sarah, who d. Nov. 29th, 1711. Estate £660 8*s*. 1*d*.

1700. William Goodhue d. l. Æ. 85. He became freeman in 1636, sustained the chief trusts of the town, was Representative to the Legislature in 1666, 1667, 1673, 1676, 1677, 1680, 1681, 1683. He was imprisoned and fined under the administration of Andros, for resisting illegal taxation. His first wife was Margery Watson, by whom he had children, Joseph, William, and Mary. He m. Mary Webb, Sept. 7th, 1664. He lived long, but his life was filled with usefulness, and gave honor to his name.

1700, March 27th. John, son of Samuel Appleton, d. l.; b. at Little Waldingham in 1622. He m., in 1651, Priscilla, daughter of the Rev. Jesse Glover, who d. on his passage from England to this country in 1639. She survived him with her children, John, Samuel, Jesse; Elizabeth, wife of Richard Dummer, of Newbury; Priscilla, wife of the Rev. Joseph Capen, of Topsfield; Sarah Rogers, and Mary Thomas. He was Representative to the General Court in 1656, 1657, 1658, 1659, 1660, 1662, 1663, 1664, 1665, 1666, 1667, 1669, 1670, 1671, 1674, 1678; was Clerk of the Courts, and County Treasurer. As Captain of a troop, he went to pursue Indians near Salisbury in 1677. For opposing the Province Treasurer's illegal order to assess taxes here, he was imprisoned, fined, and disfranchised. He left a large estate, and, what is far better, an estimable character.

Whipple

[redacted]

> The New England town system, under which land was granted to the town as a corporation, and by it conveyed to members for personal improvement, took that commodity largely out of the domain of speculation and prevented, at least during the seventeenth century, the building up of large land fortunes such as characterized New York.[66]

Ipswich does lack, at least until 1660, the building up of large land fortunes. But this does not mean that large holdings were non existent. It has already been pointed out that a few prominent citizens amassed sizeable real estate holdings. However, they did not use these lands for speculative purposes or, if they did, they did so in a manner which is not revealed in the records.

Ipswich Landholders

The inhabitants of Ipswich can be divided into definite groups on the basis of landholding. These divisions were: the larger landholders, defined as those men who held 100 or more acres; the small landholders, defined as those holding less than 100 acres; the commoners which included most men in both of the above groups and others not within those two groups; the house lot owners, defined as those who owned only a house lot but no additional acreage; and finally, the non-landowners which consisted mainly of servants and were easily the smallest group.

The large landholders were the most important group in the town. They were the leading politicians and business men of the community. There was definitely some connection between landholding and political, economic, and social status in the town. These men clearly dominated town affairs. There were 71 men who qualified, on the basis of owning 100 or more acres, as large landholders. Out of these 71, 15 owned 400 or more acres. They were:[67]

Richard Saltonstall	2100 acres
Samuel Symonds	1700 acres
William Hubbard	1600 acres
Daniel Denison	1200 acres

---

[66] Thomas Jefferson Wertenbaker, *The First Americans* 1607-1690 (New York, 1929), p. 59.

[67] This list and the ones to follow were compiled from a study of deeds and land grant records. Acreage is based upon the maximum amount of land held at any one time (n. 21).

Jonathan Wade	1000 acres — real estate valued £6000
Jeremy Belcher	900 acres
William Symonds	700 acres
Daniel Epps	700 acres
John Winthrop, Jr.	600 acres
William Paine	600 acres
Samuel Appleton	500 acres
John Whipple	460 acres
William Goodhue	425 acres
Thomas Kimball	422 acres
John Perkins, Jr.	400 acres

All but two of these men (Thomas Kimball and William Symonds) held a major political position in the town at one time or another before 1660. Six of them ranked among the top 11 officeholders in the town.[68]

The remaining large landholders and the acreage they owned were:

John Shatswell	330	William White	240
Nicholas Easton	320	Humphrey Bradstreet	230
John Cogswell	320	James Howe	225
John Spencer	320	Matthew Whipple	225
John Whittingham	300	William Knight	200
Thomas Whittingham	300	William Fellows	200
John Symonds	300	Thomas Emerson	200
John Tuttle	300	Robert Coles	200
William Whitred	260	Simon Bradstreet	200
Thomas Dudley	250	John Norton	180
Thomas Knowlton	170	John Emerson	120
Robert Paine	170	Edward Bragg	120
John Perkins, Sr.	160	Henry Archer	120
George Giddings	160	William Bartholomew	120
Robert Lord	150	William Warner	120
Philip Fowler	150	Robert Muzzey	116
Richard Brabrooke	150	Thomas Scott	110
Thomas Bishop	150	Richard Kimball	110
Corp. John Andrews	150	Samuel Dudley	110
Edward Harinden	150	Thomas Howlett	100
Daniel Ringe	150	Thomas Howlett, Jr.	100
Thomas Firmin	140	Reginald Foster	100
Thomas Boarman, Sr.	140	John Andrews, Sr.	100
John Cross	130	John Dillingham	100
Robert Andrews	130	Robert Cross	100

---

[68] The six men were: Symonds, Hubbard, Denison, Wade, Whipple, and Perkins.

Whipple

Vol. 104

Features of Land Granting and Distribution

An interesting aspect of land granting and distribution related to the order issued by the General Court giving power to John Winthrop, Jr., John Humphrey, and John Endecott to grant land "in equity they shall thinke meete."[22] What criteria were the three proprietors supposed to use in determining the size of the grant? The social status of the prospective grantee was a deciding factor; thus the original landholdings portray to some extent the structure of society.

The individuals who arrived in Ipswich carrying their reputations with them acquired above average-size grants. These larger grants carried the designation "farm" and were usually located in one large block of land. The following list of men received grants from the town which were called or could be described as "farms."

Samuel Appleton
Simon Bradstreet
John Cogswell
Daniel Denison
Thomas Dudley
George Giddings
Richard Haffield
John Hassalle
John Norton
William Paine
John Shatswell
Samuel Symonds
John Tuttle
John Whipple
Matthew Whipple
William White
John Whittingham
Thomas Whittingham

The town expected these men to be leaders in the community. They were not typical settlers. Most of them rated the title of "Mister." A majority of them held the more important elected offices of the town. Indeed two of them served as Governor of the colony,[23] one was the head of the colony's military affairs,[24] and another, John Whittingham, was related to John Calvin.[25] All in all, the town's expectations in regard to these 18 farm-grantees was met by their subsequent achievements. Twelve of them (Appleton, Bradstreet, Cogswell, Paine, Symonds, Denison, Dudley, Giddings, Norton, John Whipple, and the two Whittinghams) became leading men of the first-generation society and the remaining six (Shatswell, Haffield, Hassalle, Tuttle, Matthew Whipple, and White) gained upper-level social status.

An excellent example of the type of individual given special consideration concerning land grants because of his wealth and stature acquired in England was Samuel Symonds. Symonds was descended from an ancient family of Yieldham, Essex, England.[26] He was granted by the town of Ipswich in 1637 the following land:[27]

500	acre farm
6	acre planting lot
40	acres marsh and upland
320	acres called Argilla Farm
6	acre lot
1½	acres
3	acres upon Meeting House Green

Samuel Symonds was one of the leading figures in the community. He held the highest public offices in both the town and the colony.

The holdings granted to John Perkins, Jr., were typical for the average settler arriving in Ipswich who was neither extremely wealthy nor poor. Perkins eventually became a leader in the town, but this had little bearing on the land originally granted to him. He received 6 acres of planting ground, 6 acres of marsh, and a 1-acre house lot in town.[28] This was the average amount and type of land granted to most of the new settlers. Such a grant allowed a man to grow his grain crops, have a small garden and orchard by his house, and have access to a supply of the marsh hay for his livestock. Most settlers did, however, expand their holdings beyond this original average of 13 acres if they had any initiative. Thomas Howlett received an original grant of a 6-acre planting lot, 2 acres of meadow, and 2½ acres of marsh.[29] Within the next two years Howlett received another 70-odd acres in land grants. Perhaps he showed his potential as a leader which raised his stature in the eyes of the land grantors. The fact that he served

---

[22] *Mass. Records,* I, 136.
[23] Simon Bradstreet and Thomas Dudley.
[24] Daniel Denison.
[25] James Savage, *A Genealogical Dictionary* (Boston, 1860), IV, 536. His grandfather was William Whittingham who married John Calvin's daughter and became a leading Calvinist. He was exiled under Queen Mary.

[26] *Ibid.,* p. 246.
[27] Records of the Court Holden at Ipswich 1639 (manuscript located in office of Registry of Deeds, Essex County Court House, Salem, Mass.), I, 45-49.
[28] Ipswich Grants, entry 63.
[29] Town Records, p. 246.

Whipple

E706 E18 v.104:324 (1968)

TABLE IV

LIST OF COMMONERS, 1641, IPSWICH MASSACHUSETTS*

William Adams
John Annable
Samuel Appleton
✓ William Averill
Henry Bachellor
Robert Beacham
Thomas Beery
Jeremy Belcher
Richard Bisgood
Thomas Bishop
✓ Thomas Boarman, Sr.
Thomas Bracey
Humphrey Bradstreet
Simon Bradstreet
Thomas Brewer
John Brown
Mathias Button
Lionel Chute
John Clark, Jr.
John Clark, Sr.
Thomas Clark
Isaac Comings
John Cowley
Robert Cross
Francis Dane
John Dane, Jr.
John Dane, Sr.
John Davis
Robert Day
Thomas Dorman
William Duglas
✓ Thomas Emerson
William Fellows
Giles Firmin
Thomas Firmin
Reginald Foster
Thomas French
John Gage
Edmund Gardner
- George Giddings
William Goodhue
Henry Greene
Thomas Hart
Richard Hatley
Andrew Hodges
William Knight
John Knowlton
Thomas Knowlton
William Knowlton
William Lampson
Roger Lancton
John Lee
Thomas Lee
Edward Lumas
Richard Lumkin
- Thomas Manning
Joseph Medcalfe
Joseph Morse
Robert Muzzey
Thomas Newman
John Norton
Christopher Osgood
William Paine
Moses Pengry
✓ John Perkins
John Perkins, Jr.
John Perkins, Sr.
Allen Perley
John Pettis
Henry Pindarr
Samuel Podd
John Proctor
Mark Quilter
Thomas Rawlinsome, Sr.
Joseph Redding
Nathaniel Rogers
Thomas Safford
Richard Saltonstall
Richard Schofield
Thomas Scott
John Shatswell
Theophilus Shatswell
Richard Smith
Thomas Smith
Simon Stace
Mark Symonds
✓ Samuel Symonds
✓ John Tuttle
Jonathan Wade
Daniel Warner

James Howe
Thomas Howlett
William Hubbard
✓ John Jackson
Richard Jacob
Francis Jordan
Richard Kimball
Henry Kingsbury
✓ Robert Kinsman
Alexander Knight
Richard Wattles
Thomas Wells
John Whipple
✓ Matthew Whipple
William White
Robert Whitman
John Whittingham
Theophilus Wilson
Robert Woodmansee
John Wyatt
Samuel Younglove

*Ipswich Grants, p. 84.

Within five years need arose for more commonage. The commoners voted in 1665 to divide 800 acres which included Plum Island, Hogg Island, and Castle Neck. It was to be divided among those with common rights according to the proportion of 4, 6, and 8 based on the amount of taxes paid as follows:[76]

4 - those not exceeding 6s. 8d. in a county rate
6 - those not exceeding 16s.
8 - those exceeding 16s. together with magistrates, and elders

It was decided that a single share would be 3 acres—that is to say that those under the "4" proportion would receive 3 acres; under the "6" proportion 4½ acres; under the "8" proportion 6 acres.[77] This manner of dividing resulted in the creation of 28 double shares, 70 divisions of 1½ shares, and 105 single-share lots. That meant a total of 203 commoners in the town in 1665, although some of the commoners were not persons. For example, the meetinghouse was given a double share.

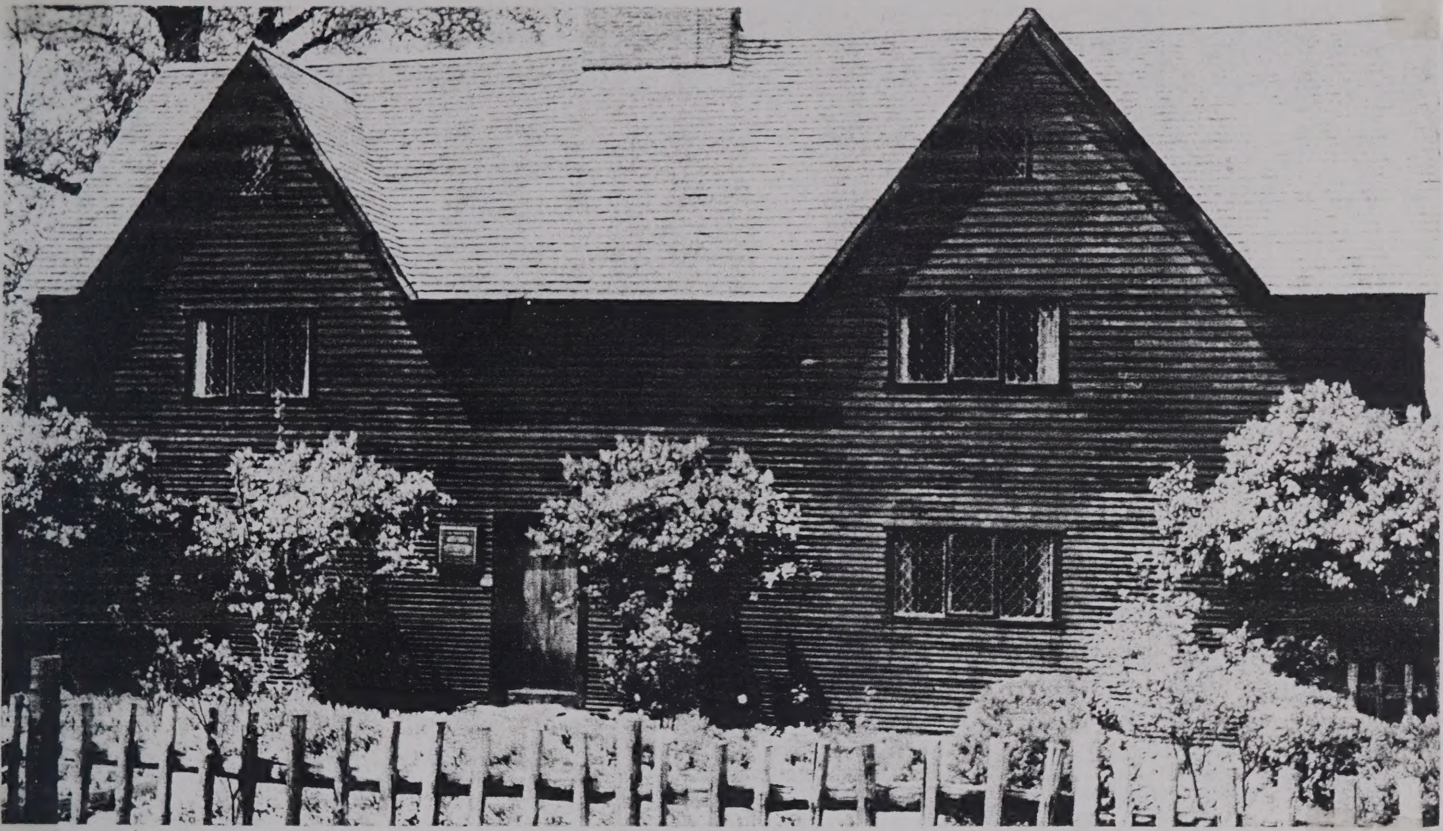
The most significant thing about the dividing of the commons in 1665 was the manner in which it was done. By basing it on taxation these records fill the gap caused by the lack of early tax lists. The list of commoners made in 1665 also served as a ranking of material wealth and to some extent social standing. It might be said that the double shareholders were the wealthy and leading citizens. The next group, those receiving 1½ shares, could be considered to be those of upper or middle status. Listed in the first group were the Symonds, the Hubbards, the Appletons, the Paines, the Cogswells, and most of the other names which constantly occur in any discussion of public life in the town.

---

[76] Town Records, p. 16.
[77] *Ibid.*, p. 17.

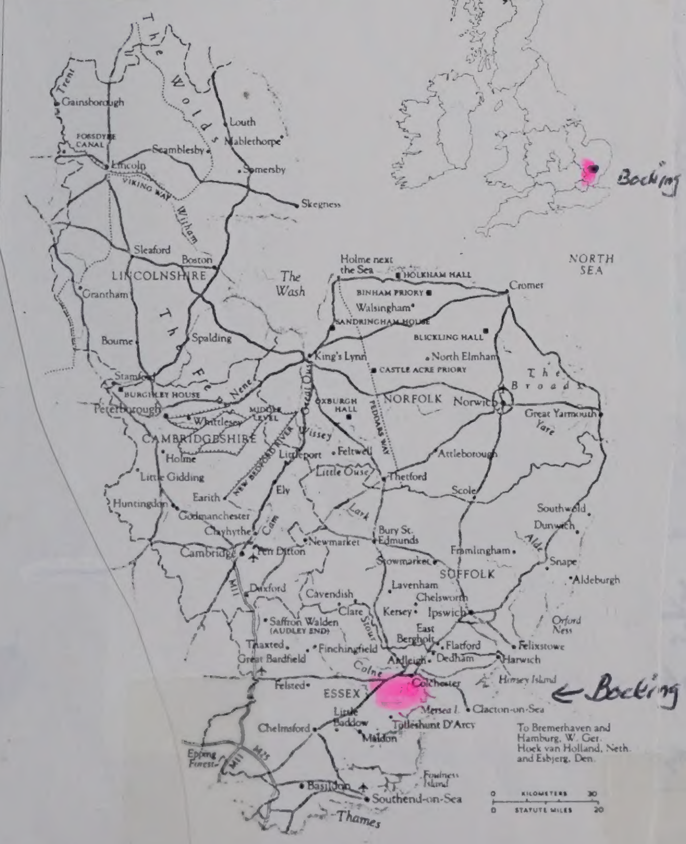
Perkins

The brother's home – still being used!

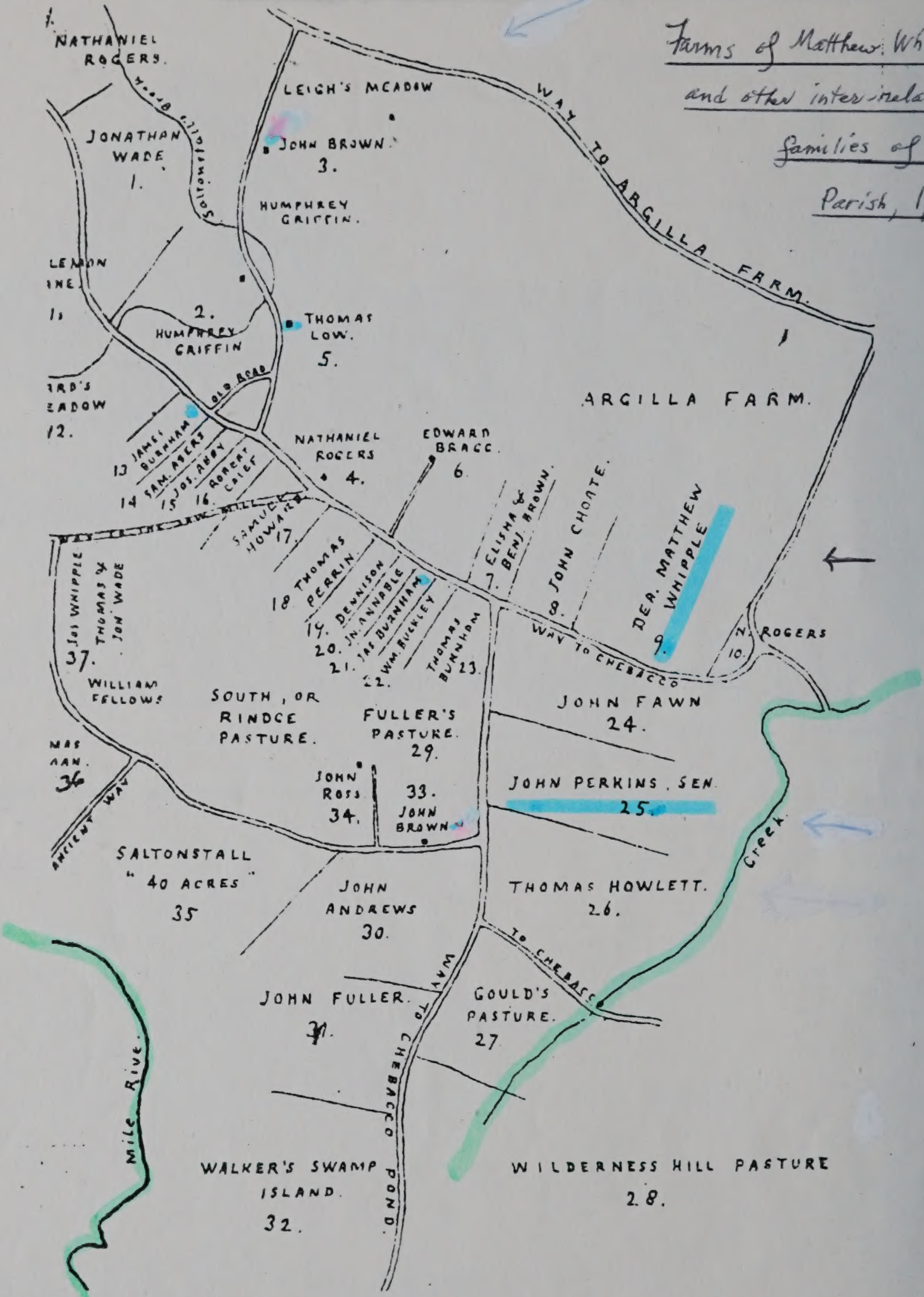


Residence of John Whipple of Ipswich, Massachusetts (Courtesy Historic American Buildings Survey).

Bocking/Braintree, west of Colchester, is in the area covered by the pink dot.



Farms of Matthew Whipple and other inter-related families of Chebacco Parish, Ipswich



Teen aged Elizabeth Whipple, married Jacob Perkins. As you can see from the above section map of Chebacco Parish, their fathers John Perkins and Deacon Whipple, had large neighboring farms.

MATTHEW WHIPPLE

Ipswich, Mass.

MATTHEW[1] WHIPPLE, born about 1590, died at Ipswich, Mass., 28 Sept. 1647; married first, at Bocking, Essex, England, 7 May 1622, ANNE HAWKINS, born about 1600, died, probably at Ipswich, Mass., about 1643, daughter of John Hawkins; married second, in 1645,* Rose, widow of Lionel Chute.

He was eldest son of Matthew Whipple who was buried at Bocking, Essex, 16 Jan. 1618/19, by his wife Joan, who was buried there 19 May 1612.

He came to Ipswich, Mass., about 1637, evidently with his younger brother, John Whipple, who became Ruling Elder of the church there in 1658.

References

M. L. Holman: Ancestry of Charles Stinson Pillsbury and John Sargent Pillsbury (1938), pp. 43-46.

ELIZABETH[2] WHIPPLE, born probably at Bocking, Essex, England, about 1629, died at Ipswich, Mass., 12 Feb. 1685/6; married about 1648, JACOB[2] ✓ PERKINS, baptized at Hilmorton, co. Warwick, England, 12 Sept. 1624, died at Ipswich, 27 Jan. 1699/1700.

References

M. L. Holman: Ancestry of Charles Stinson Pillsbury and John Sargent Pillsbury (1938), p. 45.
Ipswich, Mass., Vital Records (printed), 2-647.

(Chart I, Line 7)

Clippings + Miscellania

Our Matthew Whipple married Ann Hawkins (Hawkins)
dau. John

No claim is made as to whether the following actually applies to our particular Hawkins ancestors but it sounds like it *might*, particularly when one remembers that under the ancient laws of primogeniture only the youngest son inherited the title. Ours may have been from younger son branches.

According to book, THE NORMAN PEOPLE, published in London - 1874, reprint GPC 1989, the origin of the Hawkins Family was:
(three choices - all Norman)

Hawkins, from the manor of Hawkinge, Kent, held by Walter Hawkin, 1326 (PPW). The family had previously borne the name of Flegg, for William de Flegg, 13th cent., held a fief in Hawking, (Testa) The family had been seated in Flegg, Norfolk, and t. Henry II. Ralph Curzon of Flegg occurs (Blomefield v. 194). Arthur, Roger and William de Flegg occur 1121-1145 (Ib. xi. 194); and thelatter may be William de Curzon, mentioned 1165 (Lib. Nig.) Hence the Baronets Hawkins.

The following two are actually the same.

Hawkins, Alocal name as above ; 2, for DAWKINS, DAKEYN, DEACON, or De Akeny, armorially identified. When looking at those names, one is referred to Dakin.

Dakin, Dakeyne, or De Acquigny, from A., near Louviers, Normandy. Herveius de Acquigny occurs 1058 (Morice, Hist. Bret. Preuves, i. 430). Roger de Akeny, 13th Cent., held fiefs from the honour of Peveril of London (Testa). This family was numerous, and of great importance in England, as the records show.

Book, Feudal Coats of Arms by Joseph Foster (Senate - 1995 Reprint of 1902 edition) page 69:

Dakenege, Sir Baldwin of Cambridge (Edward II Roll) and John + Henry (Henry III Roll) bore, azure a cross between four lyonceaux or. [F] Parliamentary, St George + Glover Rolls.

Dakeney, Sir Thomas, of Norfolk - (Edward II Roll) bore, argent, a cross between four lyonceaux rampant gules; Parliamentary Roll.

(Translation!)
It is obvious the above were different branches of the same family - only the colors were different.
Sir Baldwin had a blue shield. On it was a golden (yellow) cross with a small lion (yellow) on each of the 4 sections. Sir Thomas had a silver (white) shield. The cross and the little lions (standing on their hind feet) were red. They sound pretty - imagine the arms printed on little flags blowing in the breeze.
Edward II reigned 1307-1327. Henry III reigned 1216-1276, (He was a young child when King John died.) - Under regency of William Marshall who died 1619 then Hubert de Burgh until 1232. So John + Henry Dakenege were very early.
The first part "de" means "from." People - though rich Normans - were illiterate as a rule - accents varied + words evolved - de Acquigny to Dawkin to Awkin to Hawkins in our case.

Founders of American Families - by Meredith Colket

HAWKINS

RICHARD Boston (Mass.) 1638, Portsmouth (R.I.) 1639, d there 25 Aug 1656. Freeman. Austin, *Rhode Island*; ner 114:207 (wife).

ROBERT Came on "Elizabeth and Ann" 1635, Charlestown (Mass.) 1636, Fairfield 1650, d Charlestown 7 July 1704. *Descendants of Robert Hawkins* 1939* (in LC); tag 39:244 (son Joseph); Jacobus, *Fairfield*. #1209, 1342, 1401, 1402, 1625.

WILLIAM Providence (R.I.) 1638, d there after 17 June 1699. Freeman. Austin, *Rhode Island*. #2037.

The people at left were none of them brothers of Ann (Hawkins) Whipple - whose father had no sons. But it is quite possible other relatives emigrated.

clippings.

New England H + G Record Vol 28:210 (Apr 1874)
A Necrology

OLIVER MAYHEW WHIPPLE, of Lowell, Mass., was born in Weathersfield, Vt., May 4, 1794; and died in Lowell, April 26, 1872, aged 77 years. He was the son of Oliver Whipple, of Grafton, Mass., who was born Nov. 25, 1759. He was the son of James Whipple, who was born Nov. 23, 1737, in Grafton, Mass. The latter was the son of James Whipple, of Ipswich, born there in April, 1705, who was the son of James Whipple, also of Ipswich, and was born in 1681. The last named James Whipple was the son of Joseph, who died in 1708, and Joseph was the son ✓ of Matthew Whipple, who died in 1647.

Oliver M. Whipple was thrice married. His first wife was Sophronia Hale, daughter of Moses Hale, of Chelmsford, Mass. They were married April 3, 1821, and she died Nov. 30, 1836. His second wife was Julia Ann Wentworth, of Ashby, Mass. They were married May 9, 1837, and she died Aug. 11, 1843. His third wife was Sarah Kinsman, daughter of William Kinsman, of Ipswich, Mass. They were married May 15, 1844.

Mr. Whipple had ten children, only three of whom survived him.

At the age of 21 years, Mr. Whipple left his native place, with a cash capital of $15 in his pocket, and a bundle of clothing in his hand, and walked to Boston, to seek his fortune. But fortune did not smile on him here, and he went to Southwick, Mass., and learned the art and mystery of powder making. After three years he removed to Chelmsford, now Lowell, and went into the manufacture of powder to such an extent that, it is said, he ultimately controlled the trade in that article, both in this country and in Europe. He lost several mills by explosion, and several of his workmen were killed, but he always made generous provision for their families.

He was largely identified with the business interests of Lowell. He filled various municipal offices in that city, and was elected four times a member of the legislature of the state.

Mr. Whipple possessed strong powers of mind, good judgment, great decision of character, and an uncommon spirit of benevolence. He caused to be prepared *A Brief Genealogy of the Whipple Family*, a copy of which may be found in the library of this society.

He was admitted a corresponding member, May 8, 1852, and his membership was changed to resident, May 4, 1870. (LDS Film 144 594)

Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England – by James Savage
Vol 4 – pages 505-7

WHIPPLE.

Whipple, Benjamin, Providence, s. of John of the same, own. alleg. to Charles II. 29 May 1671, when under 17 yrs. of age, m. 1 Apr. 1686, Ruth Matthewson, prob. d. of James, had Benjamin, b. 11 Nov. 1688; Ruth, 12 May 1691; Mary, 8 May 1694; Jonah, 29 July 1697; John, 26 Feb. 1700; and Abigail, 12 June 1703. David, Providence, br. of the preced. m. at Hingham, 11 Nov. 1676, Hannah Tower of H. had Israel, b. 16 Aug. 1678; Deborah, 12 Sept. 1681; Jeremiah, 26 June 1683; William, 27 May 1685; Sarah, 18 Nov. 1687; Hannah, 9 Jan. 1691; and Abigail, 20 Oct. 1692. Eleazer, Providence, br. of the preced. own. alleg. to the k. 1 June 1667, as did his elder br. Samuel, m. 26 Jan. 1670, Alice, d. of Thomas Angell of the same, had Alice, b. 3 June 1675; and Margaret, perhaps more. James, Barnstable, m. Experience, d. of Gov. Hinckley, but I kn. no more, exc. that he may be found in Boston under the name of Whippo, and no doubt his w. d. early. *John, Ipswich, an early sett. freem. 13 May 1640, was rep. that yr. and 41, 2, 6, 50–3, clk. of the writs 1642, in place of Giles Firmin, was deac. or rul. Elder, perhaps both, had John, prob. b. in Eng. and Sarah, beside other elder ds. Susanna, Mary, and Eliz. His first w. Sarah d. 14 June 1658; but he left wid. Jennet, and d. 30 June 1669, says respectab. authty. in Geneal. Reg. VI. 66, tho. two pages aft. he makes it 1670. His d. Susanna m. Lionel Worth; Mary m. a Stone; Eliz. m. perhaps, Anthony Potter; and Sarah m. Joseph Goodhue of I. and her pious adv. to her childr. has been preserv. in print. John, Providence, was first at Dorchester, as early as 1632, in the serv. of Israel Stoughton, was a carpenter, join. with the ch. in 1641, had John, bapt. 7 Mar. 1641; Sarah, 6 Feb. 1642; Samuel, 17 Mar. 1644; Eleazer, 8 Mar. 1646; Mary, 9 Apr. 1648; William, 16 May 1652; Benjamin, 4 June 1654; and David, 28 Sept. 1656; sold his ho. and 40 or 50 acres to George Minot, 1658, and rem. soon aft. to P. and in the summer of 1659 was adm. there as inhab. own. alleg. to the k. 31 May 1666, with his eldest s. had Joseph; Jonathan; and Abigail there; prob. d. soon aft. 16 May 1685, the date of his will. Sarah m. a Smith; Mary m. 9 Mar. 1666, Epenetus Olney; and Abigail m. William Hopkins. *John, Ipswich, s. of John of the same, b. in Eng. freem. 1668, was capt. rep. 1674, 9–83 on 10 Aug. in wh. yr. he d. His est. was ample, will of 2 Aug. pro. 25 Sept. next; had for first w. Martha, d. of Humphrey Reyner; and for sec. Eliz. Paine; and ch. John, and Susanna, wh. m. 20 Mar. 1680, John Lane; Joseph, b. a. 1666; Sarah; and Matthew; all outliv. him. Yet the childr. of two Johns seem inextric. confus. A large est. was inherit. by them. John, Providence, eldest s. of John of the same, m. 4 Dec. 1663, Mary, d. of the first Thomas Olney, had John, b. 2 Oct. 1664; beside Mary, absurd. mark. as b. the same yr.; and a d. strangely call. Elnathan, 2 Jan. 1676; and by sec. w. Rebecca Scott, d. perhaps of

Henry Burdette Whipple

John of the same, m. 15 Apr. 1678, had Deliverance, 11 Feb. 1679, and Dorothy, and he d. 10 Dec. 1700. John, Ipswich, s. of Matthew, b. in Eng. perhaps, m. 5 May 1677, Eliz. Woodman. John, Ipswich, s. perhaps of the sec. John of the same, is call. cornet Apr. 1695, when he succeed. his f. capt. W. as trustee of the gram. sch. as the capt. had succeed. his f. or uncle. Jonathan, Providence, s. of the first John of the same, own. alleg. to Charles II. in May 1682, with his br. Joseph; by w. Margery, had Jonathan, b. 22 Feb. 1692; and Thomas, 26 Feb. 1695. Joseph, Ipswich, s. of the first Matthew, freem. 1674, had by w. Sarah, wh. d. 16 July 1676, Joseph, b. 1 Nov. 1665, d. in few days; Joseph, again, 31 Oct. 1666; Margery, 28 Aug. 1668; Sarah, 29 Mar. 1670; Matthew, 25 Nov. 1672; and Mary, 25 Dec. 1674; and d. 11 May 1699. Joseph, Salem vill. s. of the sec. John of Ipswich, was deac. and d. 19 Sept. 1740. Joseph, Providence, br. of Benjamin, m. 20 May 1684, Alice Smith, had John, b. 18 May 1685; Jeremiah, 3 Sept. 1686, Joseph, 30 Dec. 1687; Amphillis, 8 Oct. 1689, but my informat. does not disting. the sex; Sarah, 29 Mar. 1691; Susanna, 14 Apr. 1693; Freelove, 18 Mar. 1695; Alice, 6 Feb. 1697; Ann, 16 June 1699; Christopher, 14 Apr. 1701, d. soon; Mary, 9 Apr. 1704; and Christopher, again, 6 Mar. 1706. ✓ Matthew, Ipswich, br. of the first John of the same, had gr. of ld. 1638, and d. 1647, leav. eldest s. John, b. no doubt in Eng. wid. Rose, wh. was his sec. w. and ch. Mary, Matthew, Ann, Eliz. and Joseph, b. a. 1646, whose order of success. is not kn. Matthew, Ipswich, s. of the preced. b. in Eng. m. 24 Dec. 1657, Mary, d. of William Bartholomew, at Gloucester, had Matthew, posthum. 20 Dec. foll. and d. 20 Oct. Matthew, Ipswich, s. perhaps of the preced. or of the sec. John of the same, by w. Jemima, d. of Job Lane of Malden, had Matthew, b. 20 Oct. 1685. Samuel, Providence, s. of the first John of the same, m. 26 Feb. 1691, Eliz. Eddy, only d. of Zechariah of Swanzey, had Alice, and Samuel, tw. b. 10 Apr. 1693; Samuel, again, 8 Nov. 1695; Daniel, 27 Oct. 1698; Hope, 12 Aug. 1701; Nathan, 5 Apr. 1704; and Zechariah, 2 Feb. 1707. William, Providence, s. of the first John of the same, own. alleg. to the k. May 1671. Farmer notes, MS. that in 1834, there had been of this name, six gr. at Harv. and seven at other N. E. coll.

CS 71 W574(1965)

A Partial List of the Descendents

of

MATTHEW WHIPPLE, THE ELDER,
OF BOCKING, ESSEX COUNTY, ENGLAND

Compiled from Divers Sources

by

Henry Burdette Whipple

High Point, North Carolina

October 1965

PREFACE

Here assembled are records of several branches of the Whipple Family which descended from Matthew Whipple, the Elder, of Bocking, Essex, England. They come from a variety of sources.

The detailed list of the children of Matthew, the Elder, was compiled by the late Mrs. Mary Lovering Holman, and is reprinted with the consent of her daughter, Mrs. Winifred Lovering Dodge.

One of the largest sections, that relating to the descendents of Deacon James Whipple, comes from the volume, Brief Genealogy of the Whipple Family, compiled by John H. Boutelle for Oliver Mayhew Whipple of Lowell, Massachusetts. This important document was printed in 1857 and has long since been unavailable except in those libraries containing the larger genealogical departments.

The record of Francis Whipple and one line of his descendents is on file at the Library of the Daughters of the American Revolution in Washington, D. C., and is the result of the joint effort of two people, Anne W. Foster and Cora Whipple Kellogg, and has not been found by this searcher in any other major library in the eastern United States.

The items of personal interest pertaining to Jonathan Whipple of Westborough, Massachusetts, and Marlboro, New Hampshire, and to his son, Joel, are from a manuscript in the possession of Mr. Bartlett Mayo of Lyme, New Hampshire, and were compiled by Miss Lois Whipple.

The history of the descendents of John Whipple of Westborough, Massachusetts and Townshend, Vermont, comes from records in this compiler's own family, and from the descendents of Fanny Whipple and Reuben Chandler living in Vermont, notably from Mrs. John W. Simons of St. Johnsbury.

These facts here correlated include but a very small portion of the full record of the descendents of Matthew Whipple, the Elder of Bocking. Such a broad work was not contemplated, for it would require many years of untiring work. If it is ever attempted it will of necessity command the combined efforts of many people. The desire motivating this compiler was only to assemble what material is already available and to place it under one cover for handy reference for those who might be interested.

Settlement in 1836 of the family of Deacon Samuel Whipple in Jackson County, Michigan, resulted in a close association with several other New England families recently moved to the same vicinity. For this reason mention is made of the families of Scofield, Johnson, and Lockwood, all of whom lived in the southern counties of Michigan.

Some readers may have a question concerning the Whipple coat of arms. Two different coats are known to exist. A request sent to the New England Historic Genealogical Society which maintains a list of all settlers in the United States who were privileged to claim a coat of arms brought the following reply:

> "....we have checked the Society's Rolls of Arms, but do not find that Matthew and John Whipple of Ipswich were entitled to a coat of arms."

Since there is much loose thinking and lack of discipline in the practice of the display of family coats of arms in this country, we mention the above fact as a matter of intellectual honesty.

These introductory notes would not be complete without mention of the careful cross checking of dates and proofreading by Mildred Diser Whipple who has spent several hundred hours in a painstaking and diligent examination of the manuscript in an effort to insure a maximum of accuracy in the facts here presented. Without her aid in preparing the manuscript and cutting the stencils this task would never have been completed.

Henry Burdette Whipple

EARLY RECORDS OF WHIPPLE FAMILIES

Earliest mention of the name of Whipple is found in C. W. Bardsley's A Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames (London, 1901) which contains the following three notations:

RICHARD WIPHULL, Wiltshire, listed in the Hundred Rolls, 1273 during the reign of Edward I.

WILLIAM DE WHIPHULLE, Somersetshire, listed in Kirby's Quest (page 192) in which is contained the Exchequer Lay Subsidy for Edward III (1327-1377).

RICHARD DE WHYPHULL, also of Somersetshire, from the same document, page 172.

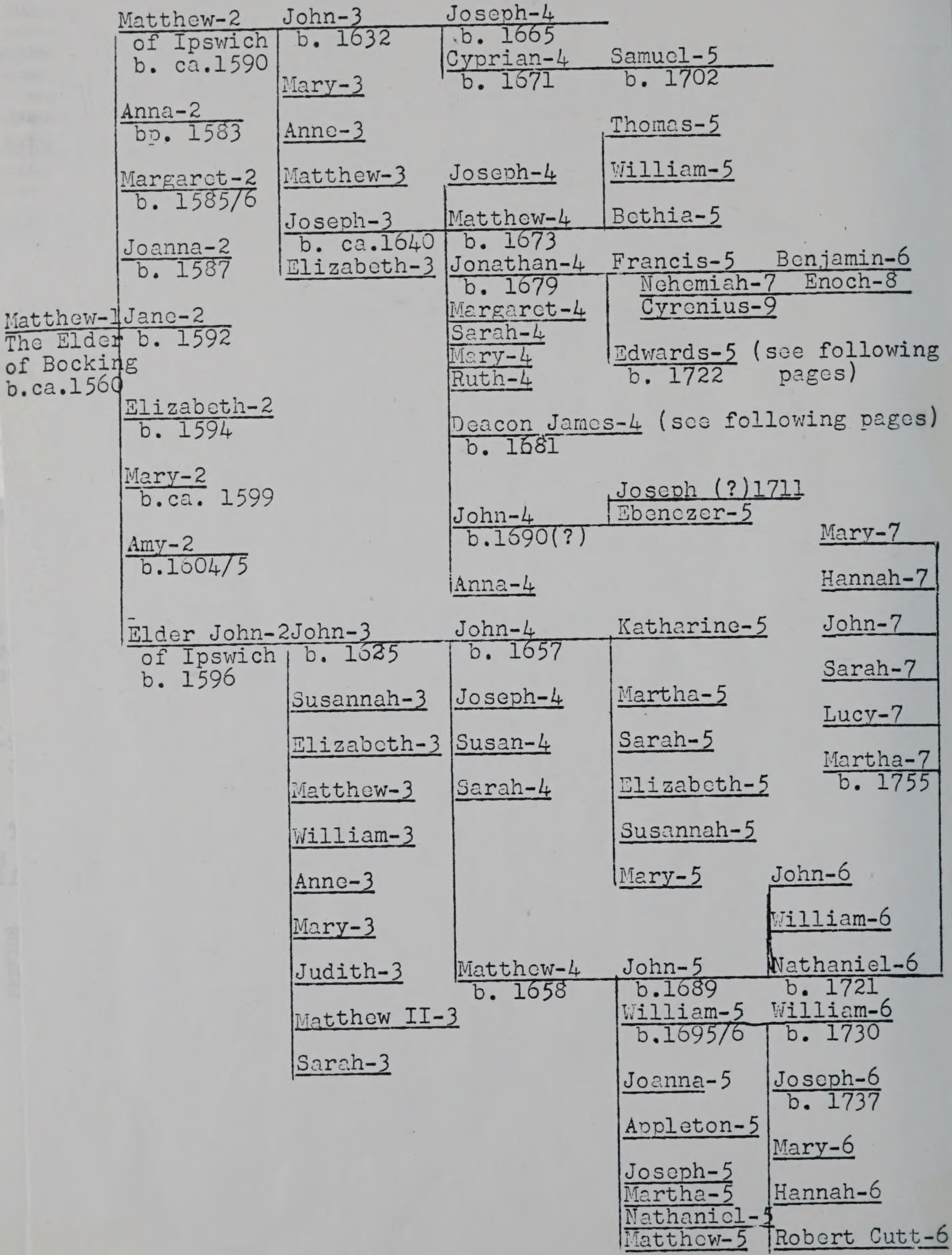
A detailed collection of many early listings of the name in various public records is found in Abstracts of English Records Gathered Principally in Devonshire and Essex in Search of the Ancestors of Roger Dearing and Matthew Whipple, edited by Mary Lovering Holman and G. R. Marvin, 1929. This extensive work was an attempt to identify the ancestors of the above mentioned gentlemen. Although Matthew Whipple's progenitors were not found, a voluminous coverage of the name Whipple was documented.

Earliest finding was the Court of Hustings, London, February 20, 1385, will of WILLIAM WHELPLE, cordwainer (a worker in cordován leather), who requested that he be buried in the church of St. Alban in Wodstrete near Isabella, his wife, etc. The will was proved February 2,1397/98.

Under Early Chancery Proceedings, undated, but probably 1502-04, was a bill addressed to William, Bishop of London, complaint of JOHN WYPPYLL, parson of Rotherfeld, Sussex.

First entry in Essex was found in the Lay Subsidies, date of February 12, 1545/46, Branktre (Braintree), THOMAS WHIPPLE, goods, 10 shillings. This would also seem to be the earliest spelling of the name which remained unchanged to the present day.

DESCENDENTS OF MATTHEW WHIPPLE OF BOCKING



1. MATTHEW WHIPPLE, the Elder, a clothier of Bocking, Essex, England, was born about 1560; his will was dated December 19, 1616, and was proved January 28, 1618. According to the parish register of St. Mary's Church, Bocking, he was buried January 16, 1618/19. He married JOAN ______, in 1582. She was buried May 19, 1612. Matthew's will is printed elsewhere in this genealogy.

Children, born in Bocking, Essex, England:

Anna, baptized, September 1, 1583; married January 13, 1605/06, in Bocking, John Pepper.

Margaret, baptized Margh 28, 1585/86; buried February 13, 1608, in Bocking; married July 5, 1603, in Bocking, Lawrence Arthur who died between 1634 and 1636.

Children, born in Bocking, surname Arthur:

Hercules, baptized August 26, 1604; licensed to marry October 7, 1632, Anne Brown of White Notley Parish.

Margaret, born about 1606; married May 17, 1627, in Bocking, Henry Pye.

Joanna (Johane), baptized September 3, 1587; died after 1636; married 1st May 6, 1613, in Bocking, Henry Caldman who died before May, 1636, married 2nd May 16, 1636, Nicholas Ives, a widower and shoemaker of Bocking.

Children, surname Caldman:

Henry, born about 1614; buried February 24, 1624/25.

Anne, born about 1616.

Sarah, buried July 6, 1620.

Margaret, buried September 17, 1627.

Henry, born after 1624; buried January 11, 1627/28.

2. Matthew, born about 1590.

Jane, born about 1592; died after 1638; married 1st April 15, 1619, in Bocking, Edward Feast; married 2nd April 17, 1626, in Bocking, John Wallys, a widower.

Elizabeth, baptized April 14, 1594, in Bocking; married September 3, 1618, Isaac Green.

Children of Matthew Whipple, the Elder, cont'd:

2. John, baptized August 29, 1596.

Mary, born about 1599; married May 9, 1625, in Bocking Richard Baker.

Amy, baptized January 20, 1604/05, in Bocking; married William Horton, October 31, 1626.

WILL OF MATTHEW WHIPPLE, THE ELDER

P.
rinted from the New England Historical and Genealogical Register October, 1890, Volume 44, page 389.
Original variations in spelling have been retained.

MATHEWE WHIPPLE ~~the Elder~~ of Bocking, Essex, Clothier, 19 September, 1616, proved 28, January, 1618.

My capital messuage or tenement, with the yards, gardens, orchards, members and appurtenances, situate in Bradford Street in Bocking, now in the occupation of me the said MATHEWE, from and after my decease shall remain

to MATHEWE WHIPPELL, mine eldest son, upon condition that he shall pay or cause to be paid

to my son JOHN WHIPPELL fourscore pounds within three months next after my decease, and

to my daughter JANE thirty pounds within six months, and

to my daughter ELIZABETH thirty pounds within twelve months, and

to my daughter MARY thirty pounds at one and twenty or day of her marriage, and

to my daughter AMIE thirty pounds at one and twenty or day of her marriage,

upon reasonable demand made by the said JANE, ELIZABETH, MARY, and AMYE.

To my daughter Anne Letten six silver spoons of the better sort, two high candlesticks, my biggest pot and three pounds six shillings and eight pence.

To my daughter JOHANE forty shillings.

To my daughter JANE two silver spoons, two pewter platters of the greater sort, one pewter candlestick, one half headed bedstedle, my best flock bed, a flock bolster, a coverlet and a pair of blankets.

To my daughter ELIZABETH two silver spoons, one pewter candlestick, two pewter platters of the greater sort, a half headed bedstedle, next the best, a flock bed, a flock bolster, a coverlet, a pair of blankets and a chest which was her mothers.

To my daughter MARY two silver spoons, two pewter platters and a pewter salt, a trundle bedsteadle, a flock bed, a flock bolster, a coverlet, a pair of blankets.

To my daughter AMYE two silver spoons, two pewter platters, a pewter salt, a trundle bedsteadle, a flock bed, a flock bolster and a pair of blankets.

To my son JOHN a joyned table and frame standing in my old parlor (and other movables).

✓ To my sister, wife of RICHARD RATHBONE, twenty shillings. (See note at end of will).

To HERCULES STEPHENS ten shillings.

To my grandchildren HERCULES ARTHUR, MARGARET ARTHUR, HENRY CALDHAM, and ANNE CALDHAM six shillings eight pence apiece.

To the poor of Bocking twenty shillings.

All the rest to my sone MATTHEW, sole executor. ✓

✓ Note by H. W.: The claim is made by the descendents of Richard Rathbone (born about 1574), who was the progenitor of the early Rathbones in New England, that his wife's name was Marian Whipple.

Mrs. Mary Winifred Holman in the Pillsbury Genealogy, 1938, Vol. I, page 43, says that it is "probable" that another sister of Matthew married Hercules Stephens.

See my book, Averill family - page 173

MATTHEW AND JOHN WHIPPLE IN IPSWICH, MASSACHUSETTS

Following the founding in England of "The Company of the Massachusetts Bay in New England," and the arrival in Massachusetts in 1630 of Governor John Winthrop and a thousand settlers, steady immigration continued. By 1640 the population had grown to some 16,000, but of this large number only 4,000 were members of The Puritan sect which constituted membership in the local Congregational Churches.

It has been pointed out before that the majority of the early settlers came to these shores for economic rather than for religious reasons. However, we may assume that the brothers Matthew and John Whipple who left their home in Bocking, Essex sometime between 1636 and 1638 to start a new life in a new country were motivated by both economic and religious factors.

Matthew and John were members of the Congregational Church of Ipswich, Massachusetts, and were thus part of that ecclesiastical establishment which made up the civil government of Puritan towns. Matthew was a Deacon while John rose to the higher position of Ruling Elder and was thus in the local social and governmental structure second only to the church Pastor.

Social position was carefully observed in Puritan communities. Both brothers were "freemen," and thus accorded a vote in local and colonial affairs, but John was known as "Mr. John Whipple, Gentleman," while Matthew's position was somewhat lower as he was designated as "Goodman Matthew."

Both brothers had extensive land holdings. They received a joint ✓ grant of "200 acres of land and meadow to it, not to exceed 45 acres. If there be not 35 acres in that place, the meadow shall be made up 40 acres elsewhere, to be divided as they shall agree." This was in 1639. At the time of his death John's acreage had increased to 460. In this property was later incorporated the town of Hamilton

John and Matthew each had a house in Ipswich, John's being of particular prominence. His dwelling has survived, but Matthew's which was located in block No.2 close to the Meeting House Green on the corner of Sumner and County Streets has disappeared. Judging from the property inventory of November 24, 1646, it must have been one of the comfortable but unpretentious homes of the town. Dwelling, barn, and four acres of land were valued at only 36 pounds.

Frontier settlements were always on the alert for possible attack and every home contained some kind of firing piece. Matthew Whipple seems to have had a full complement of weapons "in the Hall." Original spelling retained:

3 musketts, 3 pr bandaleers
3 swords, 2 rests
one fowling piece
a costlett, pike, and sword
1 rapier
1 halberd, 1 bill.

A reading of the extensive kitchen equipment would indicate that Matthew's household enjoyed a varied fare which was quite sumptious when compared with the dreary pea and bean porridge which, we are told, constituted the common diet of many of the settlers. We note many brass "potts" and kettles,

85 pes. of pewter, 147 lb. valued at 9 pounds, 16 shillings
30 spoons of various kinds
5 chafing dishes and a skimmer
4 spitts weighing 20 lb, 2 iron dripping pans
1 silver bowl and 2 silver spoons valued at 3 pounds, 3 shillings
3 cheese mootes and 2 cheese breads
2 ferkins, 1 chirne
2 frying pans and a trevitt.

Luxury articles mentioned include:

29 books valued at 4 pounds, 8 shillings, 6 pence
1 clock at 1 pound
2 clocks at 3 pounds.

"In the Parlor" was 1 feather bed, 1 bolster, and 9 pillows waying 106 lb. priced at 5 pounds, 6 shillings.

"In the Chamber over the Parlor" was probably the children's sleeping quarters with:

3 flock beds and 3 bolsters
1 rugg
1 pr of curtains and vallences with cushions, blankets, and pillow cloth all valued at over 7 pounds.

Strangely enough in the same room were stashed:

3 old axes, 6 pitch forks, 1 iron peele (shovel), with other implements appraised at one pound.

John Whipple's house which is one of the most famous homes of its Period and locale was built on a lot formerly belonging to Mr. John Fawn who received a grant of a house lot recorded January 13, 1637. He had previously received a grant of a six acre tillage lot in December, 1634, and since tillage lots were granted only to house owners we may infer that he acquired both at the earlier

.

Mr Fawn built a house on the lot which he sold in December, 1638. Franklin Waters in Puritan Homes says that the present John Whipple house cannot possibly be the same structure erected by Mr. Fawn, for Elder John left "an humble estate." The estate of his son, Captain John Whipple, was inventoried at 3314 pounds, and therefor the present house must have been built between 1669 and 1683.

At what exact date John Whipple took possession of the Fawn House is not certain, but town records state that he was living there in 1642.

John had been admitted as a freeman in 1640, was sent as a deputy to the General Court for the term ending 1642, was returned in 1646, and had a final term from 1650 to 1654. Appointment was made in 1641 of a committee to further trade, and the men comprising this group were those of recognizable prominence: Simon Bradstreet, Captain Daniel Denison, Robert Payne, Richard Saltonstall, Mr. Tuttle, and Matthew and John Whipple. The duties of this committee included the maintenance of the buoys and beacons, the securing of salt and cotton, and the overseeing of the sewing of hemp and flax and "cards wyer canes." John Whipple was also on the committee for the promoting of the fishing industry.

.

John, who was obviously a man of considerable local standing and influence, not only commanded the respect of the folk of the town, but he was, perhaps of more importance, genuinely loved. Town orders speak of "our Deacon Jo. Whipple."

The grammar school teacher, Ezekiel Chever, had come to Ipswich in 1650. In January, 1652, the following notice appeared in the town minutes:

> "for the better aiding of the schoole and the affaires thereof, Mr. Samuel Symonds, Mr. Nathaniel Rogers, Mr. Jonathan Norton, Major Daniel Denison, Mr. Robert Paine, Mr. William Paine, Mr. William Hubbard, Dea. John Whipple and Mr. Wm Bartholomew were chosen a Committee to receive all such sums of money as have and shall be given toward the building or maintaining of a Grammar schoole and schoole master..."

John together with Ezekiel Chever was called to the bedside of the Pastor of the Ipswich church, the Reverend Nathaniel Rogers, to take his last will and testament which contained this provision:

> "I ordain my trusty and well beloved friends, Mr. Robert Payne and John Whipple, to be the executors of my will."

His circle of friends included the Reverend Ezekiel Rogers of Rowley, John Norton, teacher of the Ipswich church for twenty years, William Hubbard, preacher and historian, and President John Rogers of Harvard.

Probably the honor which best denoted the high esteem in which he was held by the local congregation was his elevation to Ruling Elder in 1658. This was a position second only in importance to that of the Pastor.

Elder John died June 30, 1669, and his house passed to his son, Captain John who also was a man of considerable ability and leadership, but who lacked his father's concern for the welfare of the church.

Captain John received a license in 1662 "to still strong water for a year and retail not less than a quart at a time and none to be drunk in his house." Two years previous to Elder John's death a malt house had been built on the homestead. In 1668 young John had been made Coronet of the Ipswich Troop.

That he was a man of affairs and influence is shown by the fact that he was a representative to the General Court from 1674 to 1680, in 1682, and in 1683. In February 1675/76, he was appointed Captain to take an active part in the King Philip War as the Indians were practically at the gates of the town. However, his command in the field did not escape charges of ineptness, but considering his trials from the long view of time it would appear that his men were ill equipped to carry out the task assigned to them.

It is probable that Captain John considerably enlarged the house of his father, and, whether or not any of the present structure was ever built by Mr. Fawn is difficult to say. At his death August 10, 1683, his estate was inventoried at 3314 pounds.

Anyone interested in a full account of the activities of Deacon Matthew and Elder John Whipple and the latter's descendents in Ipswich should consult The John Whipple House in Ipswich, Mass., and the People Who Have Owned and Lived in It by Thomas Franklin Waters, and published by the Ipswich Historical Society, 1915. Unfortunately this newsworthy little volume so rich in Colonial history of the early Whipples is now out of print, but a copy can be found in most major libraries in the east.

ELDER JOHN WHIPPLE OF IPSWICH, MASSACHUSETTS

2. JOHN WHIPPLE (Matthew-1), known as "Elder John Whipple," baptized August 29, 1596, in Bocking, England; died June 30, 1669, in Ipswich, Massachusetts.

Married first, 1620, **SUSANNA (STACY or CLARK)** who was living July 13, 1661. Married second, after 1662, **JANET ( )DICKINSON**, who died in Ipswich January 30, 1686/7, widow of Thomas Dickinson of Rowley.

Children born in Bocking, England, and Ipswich, Mass.:

Susannah, born July 1, 1622; married Lionel Worth.

John, born January 11, 1623/4; buried August 4, 1624.

3. Captain John, born December 21, baptized December 25, 1625; died August 10, 1683.

Elizabeth, born November 1, 1627; married Anthony Potter about 1647; died December 15, 1648, without issue. Potter married in 1652, Elizabeth Stone, daughter of Deacon Gregory Stone, by whom he had seven children.

Matthew, born October 7, 1628; died October 12, 1634.

William, born October, 1631; died June 4, 1641.

Anne, born June 2, 1633; died May 4, 1634.

Mary, born February 20, 1634; died June 2, 1720, Watertown, Massachusetts, age 86 years; married about 1656, Simon Stone, born about 1630, died February 27, 1707/08, age 77 years, son of Deacon Simon and Joane (Clark) Stone. Simon Stone came from London in April, 1635.

Judith, born August, 1636; died June 27, 1637.

Matthew, born February 17, 1637/8, died March 30, 1637/8.

Sarah, born November 3, 1641, Ipswich; died July 23, 1681, of childbirth; married July 13, 1661, Deacon Joseph Goodhue, born 1639, Ipswich, died September 2, 1697, Ipswich. Was the son of William and Margaret (Watson) Goodhue. Sarah had eleven children.

MATTHEW WHIPPLE OF IPSWICH, MASSACHUSETTS

2. MATTHEW WHIPPLE (Matthew-1), born about 1590, in Bocking; died September 28, 1647, in Ipswich Hamlet, Massachusetts; married 1st, May 7, 1622, in Bocking, ANN HAWKINS who died about 1643. She was the daughter of John Hawkins, and was the mother of all of Matthew's children.

Identification of the family of Ann Hawkins was made by the compilers of the book, Abstracts of English Records, etc., mentioned above. In the Bodleian Library, Mss. Rawlinson, Essex 5, page 32, History of Bocking, is the ✓ statement that John Hawkins, eldest son and heir of John Hawkins of Braintree, was a chief inhabitant of the town and a trustee for the poor. He had two wives, the first not mentioned, and the second Mary Levitt. John was buried 1619, and Mary, May 3, 1635.

Children of John and Mary Hawkins included:

Eleanor, baptized March 6, 1594/95; buried 1609.

Mary, married Matthew Wright, November 8, 1616.

Sarah, married William Coppin, September 26, 1622.

✓ Ann, married Matthew Whipple at Bocking, May 7, 1622.

Matthew Whipple married second ROSE (-) CHUTE who died after November 13, 1646; she was the widow of Lionel Chute who came from Dedham, Essex, England, and died in 1645 in Ipswich, Massachusetts.

Matthew's will was dated 3m. 7d. 1645, and is on record at the Register of Deeds, Essex County, Massachusetts. In it he mentions his eldest son, John, sons Matthew and Joseph, ✓ and daughters Anne and Elizabeth.✓ He left to his eldest son, John, one-half of his estate, and the other half to the two younger sons, Matthew and Joseph.

✓ He held the chief offices of Ipswich and was on most of its important committees. A sincere churchman, he was for many years a deacon of the Congregational Church. In 1638 he and his brother, John, received a grant of land of more than 200 acres.

An inventory of his household property is included in another part of this genealogy. Matthew's house was sold to John Annable, his son-in-law.

Children of Matthew and Ann Whipple; probably all born in Bocking:

Matthew, born about 1623; buried October 27, 1623.

Matthew, born about 1624; buried April 3, 1627.

Mary, born about 1626; living in 1645.

Anne, born about 1628; married 1st about 1647, John Annable; married 2nd, before 1667, Nicholas Clapp.

+ Elizabeth, born about 1629; married Jacob Perkins. ✓

3. John (Lieutenant), born September 6, 1632.

Matthew, born about 1635; died October 20, 1658; married Mary Bartholomew, daughter of William Bartholomew, December 10, 1657. She later married Jacob Green.

Children:

Matthew, born December 20, 1658; died around 1663, according to Boutelle.

3. Joseph, born about 1640, possibly in Ipswich.